THE GREAT RULER

BOOK 07

Heavenly Silkworm Potato

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Great Ruler

(大主宰)

by

Heavenly Silkworm Potato

Tian Can Tu Dou

(天蚕土豆)

Synopsis

The Great Thousand World. It is a place where numerous planes intersect, a place where many clans live and a place where a group of lords assemble. The Heavenly Sovereigns appear one by one from the Lower Planes and they will all display a legend that others would desire as they pursue the road of being a ruler in this boundless world.

In the Endless Fire Territory that the Flame Emperor controls, thousands of fire blazes through the heavens.

Inside the Martial Realm, the power of the Martial Ancestor frightens the heaven and the earth.

At the West Heaven Temple, the might of the Emperor of a Hundred Battles is absolute.

In the Northern Desolate Hill, a place filled with thousands of graves, the Immortal Owner rules the world.

A boy from the Northern Spiritual Realm comes out, riding on a Nine Netherworld Bird, as he charges into the brilliant and diverse world. Just who can rule over their destiny of their path on becoming a Great Ruler? In the Great Thousand World, many strive to become a Great Ruler.

Acknowledgement

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Thyaeria @ WuxiaWorld

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 601 - The Best 3

The brilliant Golden Battle Stairs stood towering on the Golden Battle Stage. At this instant, the best 3 teams were thoroughly revealed under all the gazes on the top three platforms of the Golden Battle Stairs.

However, when those gazes were shot over, the heavens and earth went into silence as numerous people couldn't help widening their eyes.

On the third level of the Golden Battle Stairs were five charming girls, especially the one that stood at the front, who had instantly attracted the attention of everyone present.

The girl held onto a golden long spear with her hair draped down. Golden battle armor wrapped around her slender and flexible figure, possessing picturesque looks. Her phoenix-like eyes made her look arrogant, her fair neck made her look like a swan, a voluptuous chest with an heart-shaking arc, a slim and tight waist with a snow-white patch beneath her skirt was so beautiful that nothing more could be imagined.

Although the four other girls beside her were appealing, they were a little dull standing beside her as she was simply too dazzling.

Countless gazes were revolving around her body, with many of those gazes radiating with light and blazing with flames.

"Woah!"

When that team appeared, an alarming burst of cheers exploded from the direction of the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy. That was basically the most glamorous region as countless girls were cheering with excited expressions since the team that had just appeared represented their academy.

When the students from the other Spiritual Academies heard the

cheers, they involuntarily directed their sights over as their eyes became filled with longing. After all, amongst the Five Great Academies, the male students liked the Myriad Spiritual Academy the most, since no guys could resist the wonderful feeling of being surrounded by tens of thousands of flowers.

“Senior Sister Qingxuan made it to the best 3!”

“Hehe, she’s truly worthy of being someone I worship.”

“But I imagined Big Sister Qingxuan taking 1st. From the looks of it, there are truly hidden dragons and crouching tigers in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.”

Under the soft and delicate voices that filled the air, someone finally directed their gazes at the second level as another team was revealed.

That team was dressed in white and every single one their momentum was out of the ordinary. But their facial expressions at this instant weren’t as excited as they had imagined as they had gloom all over their faces, especially the one leading whose face was ashen.

“Rank 2 is the team from the Saint Spiritual Academy!”

“Their Captain is that Ji Xuan, right? I have long heard of his name. Reportedly, he was the most popular predicted champion, how did he end up in 2nd place?”

“Not sure about that, either…”

“Even Ji Xuan only took 2nd, who’s in 1st?”

An uproar filled the sky as they abruptly shifted their gazes upwards and stopped at the peak of the Golden Battle Stairs. That area was the most eye-catching at this instant.

The light that filled the heavens and earth gathered as the golden light dissipated, revealing five silhouettes in the eyes of everyone.

The one standing at the front was a youth dressed in navy

clothes. His figure was tall, like a spear, with outstanding looks. His black pupils were as abstruse as a starry sky and the outline of his face didn't make him look young and inexperienced. On the contrary, there was a smear of decisiveness and self-confidence that was rarely seen for those at his age.

However, be it his appearance or temperament, he wasn't in any way inferior to Ji Xuan.

Standing beside this youth, was a graceful figure. She wore a navy dress and beneath that dress of hers, was an impressive figure that outlined her curves, instilling a rush of excitement for those that were looking at her.

The fact that made countless others gasp in surprise was that she wasn't in any way inferior to Wen Qingxuan. Her skin was as white as the snow with moon-curved brows. Especially her crystal-clear pupils, which seemed to possess magic power, intoxicating others. Looking at her, no matter what troubles they had, all seemed to disappear by looking into her clear pupils.

Her silvery river long hair fluttered in the wind and in the next moment, two words rose in everyone's heart.

Absolutely breathtaking.

Facing such an outstanding girl, even those girls from the Myriad Spiritual Academy who had extremely high judgment fell into silence as they did not dare to make a comparison between her and Wen Qingxuan.

Standing beside that girl, was another beauty. Her hair draped down that made her look exceptionally gentle. Although she wasn't as breathtaking as the former, her gentle temperament was still charming.

Standing beside her, were two towering youths, one with handsome features, while the other was emitting a disdainful temperament. With a glance, anyone could tell that they weren't

any ordinary goons. Regardless of temperament or appearance, this team made others gasp in surprise.

The heavens and earth seemed to have fallen into silence for a brief instant as if they were intimidated by this team that stood at the top.

“It’s the team from our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!”

Suddenly, a voice filled with excitement broke the silence. Countless students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy direction had their faces glow red from excitement as they yelled.

Astonishment and joy surged from everyone’s eyes as the shock brought by the scene before them was simply too strong. They never, in their wildest imagination, imagined that Mu Chen and his team would make it to 1st place!

They actually managed to surpass Ji Xuan, Wen Qingxuan, Wu Ling and Liu Qingyun from the remaining four of the Five Great Academies!

“Big Brother Mu is mighty!”

Innumerable students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy yelled with their faces flushed red as the eyes of everyone were filled with excitement and deafening cheers thundered. Aside from the time when they managed to squeeze into the Five Great Academies, they never had such similar achievements.

Amidst the thunderous roars, Ye Qingling, Su Ling’er, and Yu Xi couldn’t control their widening mouths as their eyes were filled with shock.

“Big Brother Mu Chen is simply far too formidable!”

Yu Xi was so excited that her face flushed red, even her speech stuttered. Her eyes were filled with admiration as the achievement by Mu Chen and his team far surpassed the expectations of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

“What a monster.” Ye Qingling also couldn’t help herself as she muttered.

Su Ling’er had stars flashing in her eyes as well that even as someone with her barbaric personality had troubles controlling her emotions from the over-excitement.

“Wa, Big Brother Mu Chen is too great!” Sun’er cheered along.

Ling Xi felt relieved in her heart. Half a year of separation, that youth had been growing up at a rapid speed as he seemed more mature as well.

The excitement from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy pulled back the students of the other academies from their astonishment. Every single one of them had a complicated gaze, especially the students of the Saint Spiritual Academy. The whole time, they believed that the Numero Uno belonged to Ji Xuan, thus the current situation had caught them unprepared.

“What is there to be proud of, it’s just the elimination round. The Finals have yet to begin.” Criticism spoke from some students of the Saint Spiritual Academy since they couldn’t bear how cheerful the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy group was.

The Myriad Spiritual Academy also had countless delicate gazes shoot over at the top of the Golden Battle Stairs.

“I never imagined that the Numero Uno of the elimination round would go to the team from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.”

“Their Captain is quite handsome, but why haven’t I heard of such a powerful person of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in the past?”

“…”

Whispers resounded from the Myriad Spiritual Academy as many girls were a little curious since they were unfamiliar with Mu Chen.

“His name is Mu Chen, a Freshman from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.”

Amongst all the curious whispers, a voice suddenly rang out. All the girls were looking at the direction of the voice in astonishment and saw a green-dressed girl, who was looking at the dazzling figure on the Golden Battle Stage with a complicated gaze.

The appearance of the girl was also extremely gorgeous. Even amongst the flowers, she was still rather eye-catching. Her black hair was tied into a ponytail, with her ponytail curving in at her waist area, which made her look more lively.

“Mhm? Qian’er, you know him?” a voice of exclamation sounded out from a girl.

“Qian’er and he grew up together as childhood sweethearts.” A red-dressed girl smiled as she covered her mouth. She was Hong Ling, originated from the Northern Spiritual Academy as well.

The Qian’er that they were referring to was Tang Qian’er, who grew up together with Mu Chen and went to the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy later.

In just two years, the young girl from before had become increasingly more slender and elegant and became even more charming. Her eyes were fixed onto that figure, whom she had not seen for a long time. Although back in the Northern Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen was already very outstanding, she never imagined that he would be able to achieve such a feat two years later.

“Haha, so it turns out that Qian’er and he had that relationship. Why don’t you secretly tell him to lose to Big Sister Qingxuan in the Finals, maybe our Dean will make an exception for him to join our academy.” The girls that stood by the side laughed.

Tang Qian’er’s face flushed red as she shot them an annoyed gaze. Shortly after, her gaze was focused on that figure again as a

hint of sentiment that was hard to defect flashed across her eyes When she saw the girl standing beside him, who was comparable to Wen Qingxuan, she couldn't stop herself from biting her rosy lips.

Not knowing why she felt a little regret in her decision to enter the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy.

Despite so, she still felt happy in her heart to see how outstanding he was.

Tang Qian'er pursed her lips as they slid down an unset arc. However, it was only a brief moment, before she firmly lifted them up as she clenched her small fist and spoke in her heart. Mu Chen, you can do it.

If Uncle Mu saw how outstanding you were right now, he would definitely be very happy.

Chapter 602 - The Finals

When the eight teams made their appearance on the Golden Battle Stairs, deafening cheers resounded in this region. Whether or not it be the teams that represented their Spiritual Academy who made it into the Finals, they all held great expectations for the Final Battle that was about to begin.

All in all, these eight teams before their eyes had risen above the countless Spiritual Academies. Thus, speaking from a certain degree, their strength represented the stronger fighting power amongst the academies.

The Five Great Deans who were seated on the sky overlooked the Golden Battle Stairs, with the exception that every single one of them wore a different expression.

A dense smile had long replaced the indifferent expression on Dean Tai Cang's face as his heart was similarly engulfed in astonishment and surprise.

He wasn't surprised by the fact that Mu Chen's team could make it to the Finals; he just never expected Mu Chen to achieve such a feat in the elimination round.

"Haha, looks like there is a fresh talent emerging from your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in this tournament as well, Dean Tai Cang." Dean Wu of the Martial Spiritual Academy shot a glance at Mu Chen as he spoke with an eye-narrowing smile.

"They are just lucky. That Wu Ling of your school doesn't look simple, either. I'm guessing that they are trying to hide their strength and, thus, did not compete for the best 3. Am I right?" Dean Tai Cang responded with a smile as the joy between his brows leaked out. After all, it was years since their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy achieved such results.

"From the looks of it, Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy

seems to have improved." Dean Tian Sheng, who was quiet this whole time, let out a faint smile at this moment as he continued, "Dean Tai Cang, I bid my congratulations to you."

The smile on Dean Tian Sheng's face was indifferent with abstruse eyes; no one could tell what he was thinking. From the looks of it, he didn't seem too affected by the fact that Ji Xuan wasn't able to obtain the first place.

"Dean Tian Sheng must be joking, it doesn't mean anything since it was only the elimination round." Although Dean Tian Sheng was an old fox, Dean Tai Cang wasn't someone that's easy to mess with as well as he spoke with a smile. "But no matter how powerful the opponents are, my Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will spare no effort."

"How expecting."

Dean Tian Sheng responded with a smile as he nodded his head. He shifted his gaze onto the three remaining Deans and spoke, "Since the best 8 are already here, shall we proceed to the Finals?"

The three Deans nodded upon hearing his words.

Looking at their response, Dean Tian Sheng stood up from his throne, which was made from light. In comparison to the vast heavens and earth, his silhouette was especially small. But not knowing why the instant he stood up, it felt like he was overlooking the heavens and earth, unleashing might which was beyond any ability to describe. Under that terrifying might, the cheers that were resounding in this region fell into silence in an instant as countless revered gazes were looking at him.

Mu Chen, who stood at the top of the Golden Battle Stairs, was also looking at the white-robed figure with his head raised. The might that was emitted from him made his heart jolt and felt his mind sway. That's the true power of experts, compared to that level, there was a huge gap between them. However, he wasn't dismayed by that, because he knew that it was just a matter of time

to temper himself to that level.

“Firstly, I would like to congratulate those who managed to get into the Best 8. No matter what the outcome will be, you are already outstanding amongst all the Spiritual Academies.” Dean Tian Sheng’s voice was faint as it contained sound waves that caused a fine trembling between the heavens and earth; even the Spiritual Energy in everyone’s bodies was trembling along with it.

“The elimination round has already come to an end, and now, we will soon start our Final Battle.”

“Only the person who rises amongst the others in the Final Battle can be the strongest amongst the innumerable Spiritual Academies, he will represent the apex of all academies.”

A multitude had their blood boiled as they heard his speech. The apex was a spot that held unreachable glory for them and right now, there were only eight teams that could fight it out for that glory.

“Every single one in the Champion team will receive a thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid and a Sovereign Elixir.”

Whooooooosh.

His words caused an uproar as many people had their eyes reddened. They were well aware what the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid represented. It was something that was indispensable to ascend the Sovereign Realm.

Even for some Clans, a thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was not a small amount.

Moreover, the Sovereign Elixirs were extremely rare, since it was reported that only Sovereign Spiritual Liquid that had been refined to the limits could be formed into elixirs, having a price tag comparable to a Low Rank Divine Artifact

Everyone was well aware that even if they did manage to get through the Third Grade Spirit Disaster, they still required the

support of a huge amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. Not to mention that it wasn't a hundred percent success rate. The moment they failed, the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid that they had stockpiled would all be for naught. Although a Sovereign Elixir still couldn't guarantee an absolute success, it increased the success rate by several folds.

The miracle effect was even more precious compared to a Divine Artifact for them who had not reached the Sovereign Realm.

"Sovereign Elixir... what generosity."

Even Mu Chen exclaimed in admiration. Due to the fact that he had the Spiritual Condensing Bowl, although a thousand Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was still very attractive for him, it still was insufficient to leave him stunned to this level. But his heart was jolting when he heard the Sovereign Elixir.

"It should be a reward pooled by the Five Great Spiritual Academies, making this tournament worthy of participating." Luo Li smiled as she stood by his side. Although the Sovereign Elixir was extremely precious, it wasn't to an extent to make her moved.

"You're the future Empress of the Luo God Clan. A fulfilled Empress has no idea how starved her husband is." Mu Chen teased.

Luo Li helplessly shot an enraged look at him, the flirtatious expression what was unintentionally revealed by her made the minds of others shake. Even those gazes gathered on her from outside the Golden Battle Stage lit up.

When Mu Chen's heart was also shaken by her expression, he sensed a cold gaze staring at him. Turning his head over, he saw Ji Xuan staring in his direction.

At this moment, Ji Xuan's face was covered with a layer of chill, no longer having the gentle expression he had in the past. Clearly, he had fallen into a pit this time. Originally, he thought that he already had Mu Chen stomped beneath him with that surge of

50,000 points at the last minute, but his contentment didn't last long as he saw Mu Chen's points soaring at a terrifying speed, surpassing him before he could firmly sit on the Numero Uno ranking.

Within his raging and shaken heart, Ji Xuan's pride was clearly broken. If it wasn't for the strand of rationale that he held, he might have lost control and attacked one of the best 8 to seize their points...

However, Mu Chen did not give him much time to plan as eight Academy Plaques amongst the Top 16 were already ignited when he surpassed Ji Xuan.

Who would have thought that when Ji Xuan attempted to use his schemes on Mu Chen, he'd smash his own feet instead of with a rock when he chose to end the elimination round and determined his points.

Although the ranking in the elimination round was completely unrelated from the contest over the Championship title, in the end, the feeling of being stepped on still filled Ji Xuan's heart with rage.

He had never suffered such a huge loss in his life, even his confrontation with Mu Chen in the Spiritual Road ended with him as the winner.

Mu Chen looked at Ji Xuan's cold gaze as he replied with a smile and cupped his hands, "Thanks for that."

Hearing Mu Chen's words, Ji Xuan felt suffocation in his heart as his breathing became heavy, even the movements on his face lessened with his gaze turning colder.

"It's still a little early for you to be complacent."

Ji Xuan sneered, "Just hope you don't encounter me in the first round. Otherwise, you might not even get into the Best 4."

"I'll return your words unchanged." Mu Chen smiled as an eerie

light spun in his black pupils, “But rest assured, I will have a good fight with you this time.”

“It seems like our previous fight gave you a little too much confidence.” The corner of Ji Xuan’s lips rose as he continued, “You have to be more careful. Otherwise, it will be painful when you fall with such high confidence.”

“Don’t fall to your death.” Mu Chen shrugged.

The exchange between the two was filled with chill, making the confrontation in their words obvious.

Luo Li quietly stood beside Mu Chen as she shot an indifferent glance to Ji Xuan with her clear eyes. Although she did not speak, the supportive attitude she had of Mu Chen made the veins on Ji Xuan’s arm throb.

“And now, we will draw lots to determine your opponent!”

Dean Tian Sheng’s voice in the sky resonated once again. He waved his sleeve as eight light balls flew from his palm and hovered above the battle stage.

“Pick for yourself. Inside the eight light balls, there are colors classified in pairs. Those who obtained the same color will be your opponent.”

Hearing his voice, all those below raised their heads as the Captains of the eight teams made a suction gesture, pulling a light ball into their palms.

The light ball hovered above Mu Chen’s hand, he gave Luo Li, Shen Cangsheng and the rest a glance as all of them lightly nodded their heads at him.

Haaaaaaah.

Mu Chen lightly breathed out a mouthful of white mist as his eyes turned sharp, he clenched his fist and caused the light ball to explode.

As the light ball exploded, a pillar dyed in a scarlet red that looked like flames soared into the sky from his palm.

At the same time, the remaining seven teams crushed their light balls and along with that, seven light pillars soared.

All the gazes in this region were nervously directed at them.

Chapter 603 - Battle of the Best 8

Eight dazzling pillars of light soared into the horizon that looked to have even pierced through the layers of clouds, clearly seen within a radius of a hundred miles.

Eight pillars colored in red, green, black and yellow. The sight of the eight pillars intertwining was extremely spectacular.

Everyone's eyes were fixed to the eight pillars of light as waves of uproars burst out with dense expectation contained in their voices.

Mu Chen had also directed his gaze at the sky following the uproar. His eyes were fixed onto the other red light and slowly moved his gaze along it and stopped at a team donned in green robes.

The Captain of that particular team, Liu Qingyun stood with his hand behind his back as his gaze was also staring at Mu Chen and his team.

Their opponent was the team from the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy.

Haaaaaah.

Shen Cangsheng and the rest of the team inwardly felt relieved. It was a miracle that they did not encounter Wen Qingxuan, Wu Ling and the rest. After all, they had a decent relationship with them, thus meeting them and having any one of them eliminated wasn't something that they wanted to see.

Speaking from a certain angle, the team from the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy was part of Ji Xuan's alliance and could be considered as their enemy. Now that they were facing off, it was a good time to teach them a lesson.

They were well-aware that Liu Qingyun helped Ji Xuan threaten Mu Chen. If it wasn't for the fact that the latter possessed a similar means, they might've been in a bad situation.

Mu Chen shifted his gaze from Liu Qingyun's team as he looked at the battle allocation and was slightly stunned when he discovered that the opponent of Ji Xuan's team was the Undefeated Spiritual Academy, represented by Wen Busheng.

Amongst the Best 8, the Undefeated Spiritual Academy's strength was probably the weakest. Generally speaking, it was impossible for a Spiritual Academy of such strength to get into the Best 8. However, Wen Busheng achieved this feat and no matter what the results might be, he would still be the glory of their Undefeated Spiritual Academy.

Mu Chen looked towards Wen Busheng. The latter's expression was, as usual, he wasn't in dismay from the fact that he had such a thorny opponent like Ji Xuan as his first opponent.

At this time, there was no way Mu Chen could help him, except to cheer for him in his heart.

Wen Qingxuan's opponent was the Nine Cauldrons Spiritual Academy led by Fang Yun, who was once defeated by Luo Li.

The last group made Mu Chen feel a little surprised since it was between Wu Ling of the Martial Spiritual Academy and Xue Tianhe of the Blood God Academy.

Mu Chen did not have any favorable feelings for Xue Tianhe and he even had a hint of killing intent for the latter, since the latter was clearly aiming for Luo Li.

As a person, Xue Tianhe was rather crafty, since he had never revealed his true strength in the elimination round. But, even so, his strength was well-proven by the fact that he could still make it into the Best 8.

Likewise, Wu Ling wasn't someone to mess with. Similar to Xue Tianhe, he had also concealed his strength in the elimination round, since he had never thoroughly displayed his strength.

Right now, the two fellows who had deeply concealed their

strengths were allocated to face off against each other. Just thinking about it, the outcome of that battle must be a little confusing.

…

“What luck… meeting Ji Xuan in the first round.” The teammate standing at the rear of Wen Busheng spoke with a bitter expression.

“We have already profited from the fact that we made it to the best 8.” Wen Busheng smiled as he fixed his gaze on Ji Xuan. There wasn’t a hint of fear in his eyes; on the contrary, there was a blazing fighting intent surging within.

“We just need to do our best. It wasn’t easy for us to make it this far. So, at the very least, we should fight for the honor for our Undefeated Spiritual Academy.”

Seeing how unperturbed Wen Busheng was, the emotions of his teammates calmed down as they grinned. Indeed, it was already out of everyone’s expectations with the fact that they could make it to the Best 8. So it didn’t matter if they win or lose, they just needed to give their best, since there was nothing to lose.

“Good, let us experience how powerful the team representing the Saint Spiritual Academy is!”

…

“An opponent defeated by Luo Li.”

Wen Qingxuan leisurely shot a glance at Fang Yun’s team as she lightly flung her mouth aside as she spoke to the four flowers standing behind her, “Don’t lose my face. If you guys lose, hmph, don’t blame me for being ruthless when we return to the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy!”

She clenched her fists, but when she made the malicious expression with her charming face, it was exceptionally lovable and gorgeous instead; there wasn’t any threat coming from her at

all.

“Hehe, we got it.” Hearing her words, Le’er, Pin’er and the rest showed lovely smiles. Their smiles were like flowers as they shook the hearts of others.

But when Fang Yun’s team saw their response to the results, they bitterly smiled inwardly. Even Fang Yun’s face wasn’t too good as he had also felt the pressure of facing Wen Qingxuan as an opponent.

…

“The Blood God Academy…”

Mu Ling narrowed his eyes as he looked at the team dressed in blood-red long robes and at the face that was as delicate as a girl as he muttered. Not knowing why he felt a faint danger from Xue Tianhe.

“Those fellows don’t seem that simple.” Wu Yingying said with a heavy expression behind Wu Ling. At this time, their team had been reorganized at the last moment and thus, this was the reason why Wu Yingying was here together with them.

Wu Ling nodded his head as he lightly flicked his ten fingers and replied with a calm expression on his face, “Leave Xue Tianhe to me, you guys steadily bring out your abilities and try not to make any mistakes.”

Wu Yingying and the other three nodded their heads at his words.

…

While the eight teams were secretly examining their opponents on the Golden Battle Stairs, all sorts of whispers came from the students of the various academies outside the Golden Battle Stage. However, none of them could easily come to a conclusion.

Although the Best 8 were ranked, everyone was clear that it was

just the elimination round. Thus, it was impossible for every single team to display all of their powers in that round, which simply meant that the Numero Uno of the elimination round might not end up as the Champion.

It wasn't a rare scene that the Rank 8 of the elimination round would end up flipping the situation around and seized the Championship.

But, regardless, this Final Battle would definitely be absolutely interesting. Nearly everyone was curious which of the eight teams would end up in the Best 4.

When the Five Great Deans saw the allocation in the sky, they each had a different expression on their faces; but there wasn't any worry written on their faces since they were clearly confident in the teams that represented their academies.

"Since the allocation is done, the eight teams can respectively stand on their stage."

Dean Tian Sheng's faint voice rang out as he waved his hand, splitting the colossal Golden Battle Stage beneath him into four smaller Golden Battle Stages.

Every single stage was further separated into five pieces as the stage became covered in golden light, making it look like it was made from gold; looking extremely tough.

"The battle for the Best 4 will be regulated in points of seven. Every team member that loses will lose a point and three for the Captains, a total of seven points. The team with the most points between the two will have the qualifications to ascend to the Best 4."

"Seven points... the Captains are actually worth three points."

Mu Chen was a little startled. A total of seven points and the Captains alone would hold nearly half of them. Thus, the importance of the Captain could be seen. Technically, as long as a

team managed to defeat the Captain, their victory would be nearly secured, unless the four other team members were defeated.

“Are you all clear?” Dean Tian Sheng overlooked from the sky as he spoke in a slow manner.

The eight teams nodded their heads in acknowledgment.

“Since that’s the case, then go up to the stage.” Dean Tian Sheng waved his hand.

Rustle!

The eight teams flew out at the same time and with several flickers, they landed on one of the four respective colossal Golden Battle Stages under the countless excited gazes.

Mu Chen’s group of five appeared on the utmost left Golden Battle Stage.

“Leave Liu Qingyun to me.” Mu Chen said as he looked at the rest.

Their team was reorganized and, thus, the formation of their team wasn’t any weaker than any of the other teams. In fact, with Luo Li, they were a little stronger. However, due to the seven points rule, especially since the Captains were worth more points, there was an element of uncertainness in this. The moment the Captains were defeated, it was basically a loss for that team.

Thus, Mu Chen had to deal with the strongest of the opposing team, Liu Qingyun, by himself. Despite understanding that Liu Qingyun wasn’t an easy opponent, he still wouldn’t fear any opponent at this point in time.

“Be careful.” Luo Li nodded her head as she warned. Liu Qingyun wasn’t an easy opponent and was a genius from the Wind Spirit Clan. It was definitely not easy to deal with a race that had such a long history.

Mu Chen nodded his head in response.

When Luo Li and the other three saw his reaction, they no longer spoke as they moved to the four other battle stages.

Mu Chen stood on the colossal Golden Battle Stage, alone, with a multitude of sky-shattering cheers bellowing in waves outside the stage.

Whoooooosh!

Screeches of wind rang out as an azure figure mysteriously appeared on this vast Golden Battle Stage. Liu Qingyun stood with his hands behind his back as he shot an indifferent expression over as a faint smile was shown on his face.

“Mu Chen, I am here to halt your steps.”

Chapter 604 - Fighting Liu Qingyun

“Mu Chen, I have come to halt your steps.” When Liu Qingyun spoke, an apathetic light shot from his eyes as he maintained an indifferent expression on his face.

Perhaps no one would find it inappropriate for Liu Qingyun to speak of such words since he did have the capability to back those words up. Although Mu Chen was the Numero Uno for the Elimination Round, everyone knew that the Final Battle and the Elimination Round were entirely different. All eight teams possessed peak-leveled strengths and every single one of the eight Captains wasn’t people to be trifled with.

No one could be guaranteed a hundred percent victory in this kind of battle since the slightest mistake they made would have them ended up as a stepping stone for their opponent.

Mu Chen smiled as he heard Liu Qingyun’s words and clenched his fist, following with the appearance of his Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear. A surge of Baleful Aura was unleashed from him as he slowly lifted his spear, pointing the tip of it towards Liu Qingyun.

“Then, we’ll have to see if Captain Liu is capable to achieve that.” Mu Chen lightly smiled. There weren’t any ripples in his voice and showed no signs of being enraged by Liu Qingyun’s words. His heart was as calm as an abyssal pool.

Liu Qingyun narrowed his eyes as the indifference on his face faded a little. He wasn’t stupid and he had witnessed the fight between Mu Chen and Ji Xuan. Thus, he had a little fear towards Mu Chen, since the latter’s strength could be seen as evenly matched to his.

The reason why he provoked Mu Chen was to attempt to break his calm since the slightest mistake made in this battle could make an entirely different result.

However, it was a pity that his small tactics weren't useful.

"What a difficult opponent."

Liu Qingyun smiled indifferently as his heart gradually calmed down. Whirling wind blew with the clench of his fist as the appearance of an azure light was rapidly gathering in his palm.

Rustle!

The azure light condensed into a halberd that was flickering in a similar azure luster in the hands of Liu Qingyun. As the halberd appeared, visible wind could be seen gathering around him.

The tip of the halberd was constantly devouring the violent wind, sweeping up a gale at the tip of his halberd. Even the surrounding space had fine trembles to it.

The might emitted from the halberd of azure light was even more ferocious compared to the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear in Mu Chen's hand.

Mu Chen's gaze flickered when he saw that the astonishing fluctuations emitting from Liu Qingyun's halberd weren't something a Spiritual Artifact could possess.

Mu Chen slowly inhaled a mouthful of air as a sharpened luster rose in his black pupils.

Longspear versus halberd.

The confrontation between those two was equal in comparison!

As the atmosphere between Mu Chen and Liu Qingyun seemed like daggers being drawn, ripples of Spiritual Energy were being unleashed from the other battle stages as mighty Spiritual Energy pressures were starting to spread out.

Outside the battle stage, students from the various Spiritual Academies held their breaths as they watched the battles. Unconcealable excitement rose in their hearts as the battle of the Best 8 would soon begin.

No one could be certain which team would emerge into the Best 4.

Dong!

A clear and sharp bell rang out as it resonated between the heavens and earth.

The instant the bell rang, the gaze of Mu Chen and Liu Qingyun grew sharp and, along with it, gales of powerful Spiritual Energy swept out from the two of them.

Rustle!

The two silhouettes stomped on the ground as their figures flew out like specters. Everyone could only see their blurry figures and, in the next instant, the two figures clashed in the colossal Golden Battle Stage.

Tsssssssshiii!

The Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear furiously stabbed forth, enveloped in a Baleful Aura. It was like a ferocious beast pouncing on its prey. Under the powerful Spiritual Energy, the gale pierced through the atmosphere.

On the opposite, the halberd lit in the azure light carried along the wind, and the tip of the halberd was flickering with ancient runes, giving a tint of mystery to it.

Ding!

The tips of the long spear and halberd clashed with great precision, creating sparks and visible ripples of Spiritual Energy that swept out. In an instant, they caused explosions in the surroundings.

“Pretty good spear you have there.”

Looking at the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear held in Mu Chen’s hand, Liu Qingyun lightly smiled as the corner of his lips rose. “But, it’s a pity. You shouldn’t have clashed with me.”

“Divine Wind Halberd - Howling Winds!”

A deep roar thundered from Liu Qingyun as the runes on the tip of his Divine Wind Halberd flickered, creating a substantial gale as it swept out. The great power behind it forced Mu Chen to take a dozen steps back.

“Wind Thrust!”

As Mu Chen moved back, Liu Qingyun looked as if he was one with the wind as he pounced at rapid speed. The illusions of the halberd that filled the sky integrated into the wind and soundlessly aimed for all the vital points on Mu Chen.

Liu Qingyun’s attacks were sharp and ferocious, without the slightest bit of sloppiness.

Mu Chen’s gaze grew heavy as he rapidly vibrated his arm, causing the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear to sharply whistle as it turned into countless illusions of spears and shot forward, spreading throughout the space before him.

Ding ding dang dang!

Countless illusions of spears and halberds furiously clashed and each time they clashed, an ear-piercing noise rang out along with it as sparks blossomed. Although the sight of it was beautiful, the danger held in it was fatal.

Anyone could tell that neither Mu Chen nor Liu Qingyun held back in their attacks. Even if a Spirit Disaster expert were to be trapped in their attacks, that expert would probably be instantly pierced by them.

In that short instant, the illusions of spears and halberds had already undergone thousands of clashes, the speed of them simply made everyone else dumbfound.

However, those with exceptionally keen eyes had their brows furrowed together as they realized that with each clash, Mu Chen’s attacks were progressively being suppressed.

Accurately speaking, it could be perhaps the Spiritual Aura that was emitting the Baleful Aura in Mu Chen's hand being suppressed by Liu Qingyun's halberd.

Dang!

Radiant azure light burst forth from the halberd illusions that abruptly filled the sky and a thirty meter-sized storm shot forth. It was like a hurricane as it sped towards Mu Chen.

The gaze of Mu Chen flickered as the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear in his hands exploded in a scarlet blood-like luster. That surge of Baleful Aura was strengthened to the limits as a blood river swept out.

Boom!

The two attacks ferociously clashed, but at the moment of contact, the blood river collapsed as it was torn apart by the hurricane. Along with that, Mu Chen was also pushed back over a hundred meters.

Rustle!

It was a scene of a complete uproar outside the stage. No one imagined that the Numero Uno of the rankings, Mu Chen, would be suppressed by Liu Qingyun in the first round of their confrontation.

"How is Liu Qingyun so powerful?" Countless students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were exchanging looks, even the faces of Ye Qingling, Su Ling'er, and Yu Xi were filled with astonishment.

"Mu Chen's weapon was too weak." Ling Xi spoke with an indifferent voice.

With her keen eyes, she could naturally tell that the halberd in Liu Qingyun's hands that could beckon winds was a Quasi-Divine Artifact, whereas Mu Chen's Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear was only a Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact.

In the confrontation of such a level, the perks from a Quasi-Divine Artifact weren't insignificant enough to neglect.

"What's there that can be done?" Sun'er spoke with a worried tone.

"What are you being anxious for? The show has just started." Ling Xi lightly smiled as she patted Sun'er's tiny head. Her gaze, however, was directed at the slender silhouette on the stage.

Standing on the Golden Battle Stage, Mu Chen gave a glance at the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear. It had been dulled and the Baleful Aura on it had also weakened. Evidently, it was damaged from their earlier confrontation.

Liu Qingyun lightly readjusted his halberd as he gave Mu Chen a smile. "Looks like I have the advantage this time."

Finishing his speech, he flew up into the air as boundless Spiritual Energy swept forth from his body as he poured an earth-shattering amount of Spiritual Energy into his Divine Wind Halberd.

Buzzzz buzzzzzzz.

Hundreds of storms were seen forming behind Liu Qingyun, it was like a wind dragon issuing its roar, displaying its desire to rip the heavens and earth apart.

"Divine Wind Halberd - Sky Devouring Wind Dragon!"

Liu Qingyun's gaze was cold as the halberd flew out of his hand, engulfed in azure light as it absorbed the storms and shaped them into a colossal wind dragon of about three hundred meters.

The wind dragon looked extremely realistic, with detailed scales that covered its colossal body and whirling hurricanes from its roar. Its savage appearance made the color of countless others change.

What was most shocking was the fact that there was a Dragon

Aura being emitted from the Wind Dragon. Clearly, the reason behind it should be the Divine Wind Halberd, since the Blood Essence of the Dragon Clan must have been added during its forging.

“Go!”

Liu Qingyun stood midair as he pointed his finger down with a gaze covered in chill.

ROAAAAAAAAAAAAAR!

The azure Wind Dragon roared as its body flashed, the speed of it was unfathomable as a huge shadow had already descended upon Mu Chen.

A violent hurricane that looked as if it could tear apart the heavens and earth caused a distortion in the space around the stage.

Everyone’s hearts trembled from the sight of Liu Qingyun’s absolutely shocking attack. Is this the Finals? It is truly a tournament that only those extraordinary people could participate...

Would Mu Chen be able to hang on?

Every single gaze was looking at the tiny figure that was shrouded by the huge shadow of the Wind Dragon.

Under the countless gazes, Mu Chen raised his head as he looked at the incoming Wind Dragon. He deeply inhaled a mouthful of air as his gaze gradually turned cold.

“Quasi-Divine Artifact?”

He muttered as he formed seals with his hands in the next instant. A scarlet light swept out from the depths of his black pupils.

Buzzzz!

A sound like a roar of a detestable demon from the primordial

resounded between the heavens and earth, everyone could see a black ray of light soaring into the skies from Mu Chen's head.

In the black pillar of light, an enormous demonic pillar soared. Mu Chen took a step forth as he hugged the air, looking as if he was embracing the heavens and earth. Lightning flickered on his arms and his veins were wiggling like earthworms.

"Since the demonic spear doesn't work, let's try and see if my demonic pillar can suppress you!"

The demonic pillar, which was emitting an abyss amount of Baleful Aura, swept down at this instant. The Baleful Aura from the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear paled in comparison to this pillar.

At this instant, everyone had widened their eyes bit by bit.

The black-colored demonic pillar fell as it heavily struck against the Wind Dragon that was whistling over in its direction!

Chapter 605 - Divine Wind Image

The black demonic pillar brandished down, issuing a sound that sounded like a Demon Dragon's roar. Along with a terrifying power that even the heavens and earth could not withstand, it heavily struck against the body of the incoming Wind Dragon.

Dong!

In that instant of collision, a deep ear-piercing sound rang across the horizon. Thereafter, it carried along a violent wind as it wreaked havoc. Fine cracks began to appear on the Golden Battle Stage that seemed to be forged from gold.

Clearly, the Battle Stage was forged with a special material that made it extremely firm. Even if a Spirit Disaster expert were to attack the stage with their full power, it would still be tough to damage it. But right now, the confrontation between Mu Chen and Liu Qingyun created cracks on that very same stage. Thus, one could infer how powerful the impact was.

ROAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAR!

A dreadful gale wreaked havoc as the azure Wind Dragon issued a mournful roar, it's radiant azure eyes were being suppressed by the black light at this instant.

Faint changes occurred on Liu Qingyun's face as well.

Bang!

Mu Chen maintained a calm expression with his gesture of embracing the air as if he was hugging the colossal Great Meru Demonic Pillar as it swung it down once again. As the demonic pillar was brandished down, it caused explosions in the space.

Boom!

The azure Wind Dragon finally could not withstand the dreadful power of the demonic pillar as it was sent flying away, the azure

light flickered as the dragon exploded. An azure light shot back as it fell into Liu Qingyun's hands, returning back to the form of a halberd.

Liu Qingyun firmly grasps onto the Divine Wind Halberd, but the power behind it had made him take several steps back before he could suppress the impact with his Spiritual Energy.

Lowering his head, he saw the Divine Wind Halberd shrouded in traces of a Baleful Aura. The Baleful Aura was exceptionally violent as if it was eroding the halberd in his hands.

"Hmph."

Liu Qingyun made a cold snort as he poured the Spiritual Energy in his body into it in waves. The body of the halberd trembled as it dissipated the eroding Baleful Aura. Liu Qingyun raised his head and saw Mu Chen standing still on his original spot with the colossal demonic pillar hovering above his head as the Baleful Aura was endlessly emitting from the demonic pillar, almost like a pillar of the demonic gods.

"What a good Ominous Artifact." The Deans of various Spiritual Academies in midair were startled in their hearts. They could naturally sense the astonishing Baleful Aura coming from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Clearly, it had a history behind it. The ancient boundless feeling that it was giving off was definitely not something that an ordinary Divine Artifact could rival against.

However, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar seemed to be in a sealed state at the moment. Otherwise, the Quasi-Divine Artifact of Liu Qingyun, the Divine Wind Halberd would definitely be gravely corroded by it.

Outside the Battle Stage, countless students were filled with astonishment. No wonder Mu Chen could rise above others amongst the countless Spiritual Academies and stand in the Best 8, he truly was terrifying. Such a confrontation could already be considered as the peak amongst those in their age.

“No wonder even Ji Xuan has fears against you…”

On the Battle Stage, Liu Qingyun looked at Mu Chen with a cold piercing gaze. He tightened his grip on the Divine Wind Halberd as his expression turned grave, he knew that if he wanted to defeat Mu Chen, he could no longer hold back any of his strength.

Haaaaaah.

Liu Qingyun inhaled a deep mouthful of chilled air as his eyes gradually turned jade-green as an azure-colored Spiritual Energy swept out in waves, engulfing the heavens and earth in an instant.

Azure Spiritual Energy covered the skies, along with faint ripples that looked like steam that was quietly residing in midair. But, despite how quiet it was, those students with keen eyes had their faces changed.

They sensed a skin-chilling fluctuation spreading out in the sky.

Everyone felt the Spiritual Energy pressure as they lightly smacked their lips, the power of his Spiritual Energy had already gone through Third Grade Spirit Disaster. Liu Qingyun was indeed powerful.

“Mu Chen, you’re truly not bad.”

Liu Qingyun’s figure slowly rose into the sky as he became shrouded within the boundless azure Spiritual Energy. His jade-green pupils looked as if there were tornadoes forming in them as he stared at Mu Chen.

“Thus, to show that I am taking you seriously, I will use the strength of our Wind Spirit Clan to defeat you.”

Mu Chen’s black pupils were staring at Liu Qingyun as well. He naturally sensed the piercing ripples fluctuating behind the latter as his Spiritual Energy felt as sharp as a blade, spreading to every corner of this space.

The Spiritual Energy that Liu Qingyun obtained from his

cultivation was different, to some extent, when compared to ordinary Spiritual Energy. The power behind his Spiritual Energy was stronger, which showed that the Spiritual Art that he had cultivated it wasn't a simple one.

"This must be the Wind Spiritual Energy of the Wind Spirit Clan... rumor has it that only those who belong to the Wind Spirit Clan can cultivate it. The attacking power of it is extremely powerful and it isn't something ordinary Spiritual Energy can resist." A few Deans slightly nodded their heads in the air. Generally speaking, only after stepping into the Sovereign Realm, would one experience changes in Spiritual Energy. Prior to that, the majority of the Spiritual Energy was similar, unless they had cultivated a special cultivating technique, but those were secrets that belonged to those mighty clans that ordinary people wouldn't know about.

Thus, if ordinary people were to confront those belonging to those clans, they would definitely be at a disadvantage in terms of Spiritual Energy confrontation.

For ordinary Spiritual Energy, in order to hold the advantage, they would have to fork out Spiritual Energy that was several times more in order to achieve such an unusual Spiritual Energy suppression.

"The special Spiritual Energy of the Wind Spirit Clan..."

Mu Chen muttered to himself as he narrowed his eyes. His hands started to form peculiar seals, the seals of the Great Pagoda Art.

The Great Pagoda Art was a mysterious cultivating technique left behind by his mother. It was extremely profound to the point that Mu Chen still couldn't completely comprehend it. However, the Spiritual Energy produced from the Great Pagoda Art was remarkable.

Since Liu Qingyun intended to compete with Spiritual Energy, then Mu Chen wouldn't mind giving it a try and compare, the

Wind Spirit Clan's Wind Spiritual Energy and his Great Pagoda Art, which was more superior.

Boom!

A black and white mix of Spiritual Energy swept out from Mu Chen's body as he finished his hand seals. The black and white Spiritual Energy whistled through the heavens and earth as they mixed together, similar to the fusion of Yin and Yang.

Compared to Liu Qingyun's piercing Wind Spiritual Energy, the Great Pagoda Spiritual Energy didn't show too many offensive characteristics. However, as it whistled, a surge of profundity started to spread out.

"He's going to use the Great Pagoda Art?" When Ling Xi saw that scene, her eyes lit up. Ever since she passed the Yin Scroll of the Great Pagoda Art to Mu Chen, she had never seen him execute the completed Great Pagoda Art.

Although she knew that the Wind Spirit Clan was a considerable clan, even amongst those in the Great Thousand World, compared to the primordial clan behind Aunt Jing, it paled into insignificance in comparison.

In midair, when Liu Qingyun saw the majestic black and white Spiritual Energy behind Mu Chen, he slightly narrowed his eyes. Although the latter's Spiritual Energy didn't seem too special, he vaguely felt an abnormal fluctuation coming from it.

"The Spiritual Energy cultivated by Mu Chen doesn't seem like the ordinary ones?"

When that thought flashed through Liu Qingyun's mind, he quickly suppressed that thought. He couldn't afford to have his mind wandering around at this moment as he refused the believe that Mu Chen could resist the Wind Spiritual Energy of their Wind Spirit Clan!

"No matter what other means you have, I will definitely emerge

victorious in this battle!”

Liu Qingyun spoke in a deep voice. In the battle between their two teams, his match here was the crucial one as Mu Chen’s team still had Luo Li and she would definitely win her match. Perhaps the others might not be able to achieve results like her, there wasn’t a high chance in their victory. The ones called Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were very powerful as well. Thus, unless he was capable of defeating Mu Chen, it was basically impossible for their team to get into the Best 4.

He definitely had to win this battle!

Liu Qingyun’s gaze grew heavy as he spat a mouthful of white mist from his mouth, and formed seals with both of his hands. He couldn’t afford to hold himself back, even in the slightest!

“Mu Chen, if you are truly capable, then try to receive this attack of mine!”

Liu Qingyun rapidly formed his seals and at this instant, the torrential azure Spiritual Energy swept out, turning into countless rays of light as it turned into a colossi-complicated rune with the size of a few thousand meters up in the sky. From the looks of it, those runes appeared to be a Spiritual Array, but at the same time, there weren’t any ripples of a Spiritual Array.

Hooooooooof Phooooooooof.

A mouthful of Blood Essence was spewed from Liu Qingyun’s mouth as it went into the colossal light array.

“Divine Wind Art - Requesting Image of the Wind Ancestor!”

Liu Qingyun’s expression was grave as he kowtowed towards the light array.

Buzzzzz Buzzzzzzzz

As Liu Qingyun kowtowed, violent winds started to sweep between the heavens and earth as everyone was startled to see

gigantic tornadoes forming, they were wreaking havoc between the heavens and earth, emitting fearsome destructive powers at the same time.

Mu Chen's gaze was fixed onto the colossal light array as an azure light suddenly soared into the skies. Within the azure light, a huge azure light image slowly took form.

The instant that azure light image appeared, an indescribable pressure started to spread throughout the heavens and earth.

Some Deans in midair had their faces uncontrollably changed as they nervously stared at the azure light figure as their gazes fluctuated, along with mutters from their mouths. "To actually be able to summon the Ancestor of the Wind Spirit Clan, the Wind Ancestor's Spiritual Image, out... that kid from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is in trouble."

Chapter 606 - Battle of the Captains

The vast space was radiating with golden light as terrifying Spiritual Energy ripples swept out in waves from the colossal Golden Battle Stage.

Silhouettes flickered on the Golden Stage as fearsome impacts exploded from every confrontation.

The eight teams were undergoing intense battles.

Only by giving their all, would they rise above the Best 8.

Amongst the eight teams, the most attractive battles were the battles between the Captains as everyone knew that in the seven points battle, the victory of the match would be more or less decided with the results of the Captains' battle.

The results of their Captains was the crucial turning point for every team.

Thus, the one that attracted the most attention was the battle between the Captains, even the Deans of the various Spiritual Academies were nodding their heads as they watched the battles.

Violent Spiritual Energy impacts were constantly exploding from the battle between the Captains. Aside from the battle between Mu Chen and Liu Qingyun, Ji Xuan and Wen Busheng, as well as the battle between Wu Ling and Xue Tianhe, attracted the most attention.

As for the battle between Wen Qingxuan and Fang Yun, it was rather easy, generally speaking. Fang Yun could be considered the weakest amongst the eight Captains. After all, he relied on a Low-Rank Divine Artifact to boost his fighting power. But what a pity, the opponent he encountered wasn't any weaker than Luo Li.

Thus, despite Fang Yun utilizing his Dragon-Tiger Cauldron, he was still thoroughly suppressed by Wen Qingxuan. That figure, who was holding onto a golden long spear, was like a goddess, her

attacks were like torrential waves as they came in layers upon layers. At the same time, the Dragon-Tiger Cauldron was constantly shifting backward from the impact.

According to this situation, it was just a matter of time before Fang Yun was defeated by Wen Qingxuan.

While it was evident who held the upper hand in Wen Qingxuan's battle, the other two Battle Stages was still a stalemate, especially the battle between Wu Ling and Xue Tianhe.

The both of them had fully exploded their strength without the slightest restraint. The Spiritual Energy fluctuation being emitted from them had clearly undergone the Third Grade Spiritual Disaster, having only the last step left to step into the Sovereign Realm.

Blood-red Spiritual Energy whistled out in every movement of Xue Tianhe, it was like a river of blood that pierced the heavens, rumbling in the skies as it made attacks towards Wu Ling.

Wu Ling held a black rod as the black light was being emitted from the surface of his body. His handsome looks now seemed like it was forged from metal. Clearly, he had also cultivated his physique to a considerable level.

Thus, when facing the rumbling blood river, he only made a sweep with his rod, which caused the space to distort and a surge with a dreadful power that shattered the blood river, causing blood light to rain down.

Their battle was the most erratic as they unleashed an attack upon an attack against one another without the slightest thought of defending. Cheers roared from their heart-racing battle.

But, generally speaking, their battle was locked in a stalemate.

The next most attracting battle would be the one between Ji Xuan and Wen Busheng.

It was a battle with unequal fame, since Ji Xuan's name rang

throughout the various Spiritual Academies, whereas no one knew of Wen Busheng's name nor even the overbearing name of the academy behind him, the Undefeated Spiritual Academy. In fact, it was a nameless Spiritual Academy that many people had not heard of before.

Thus, they predicted that Wen Busheng would quickly lose to Ji Xuan. However, the truth made them a little dumbfounded as Wen Busheng was able to resist against Ji Xuan's attacks.

Furthermore, he relied on his palm to confront the piercing spear in Ji Xuan's hands.

This scene made many others startled as they now understood the reason why the Undefeated Academy's team was able to rise into the Best 8.

This youth that seemed ordinary was, in fact, not. Looks like it didn't matter how small the Spiritual Academy was, it was just a matter of time before a genius emerged.

However, although Wen Busheng didn't look to be falling behind from Ji Xuan's attacks, those Deans of the various Spiritual Academies could tell that Wen Busheng's attacks were gradually being suppressed by Ji Xuan.

Whoooosh!

A light spear pierced the space as a sun seemed to be appearing on the speartip. The Spiritual Energy was so violent, it looked like it could shatter space.

That ray of spear light shot forth against Wen Busheng.

Faced with the increasingly sharp attacks from Ji Xuan, the facial expression on Wen Busheng turned a little heavier. His right palm emitted a radiant white light, appearing to be made of a jade-stone as he pushed his palm forth.

Ding!

The spear and palm clashed, creating a metallic collision sound that spread out. A massive visible shock wave exploded, destroying the ground beneath those two.

Ji Xuan's figure jolted, whereas Wen Busheng was sent back several steps, every single one of his steps left deep footprints on the ground.

Rustle!

The long spear in Ji Xuan's hand trembled as he gazed at Wen Busheng and spoke in a faint voice, "If that's all you got, then this is the end."

As he spoke, his eyes turned increasingly sharp as the long spear in his hand thrust into the ground, both of his hands were placed together as a brilliant sacred light was emitted from his body. It was like a sun as it appeared behind him.

An astonishing Spiritual Energy exploded like a volcano from his body, the strength of his Spiritual Energy had nearly reached the pinnacle of Third Grade Spirit Disaster.

Compared to the time he fought with Mu Chen, he seemed to have grown stronger.

Wen Busheng sensed the dangerous aura coming from Ji Xuan and knew that the latter no longer intended to waste any more time, he inhaled a deep breath as he slowly extended his right hand forth.

His right hand was exceptionally slender and fair, and as it sparkled, it looked like it was crafted from jade-stone. At this instance, dark golden runes started to spread out from his palm.

The golden runes flowed into his palm, almost like blood. In that short moment, his right hand had already turned into a dark golden color as a peculiar pressure spread out.

That bizarre pressure made the eyes of Ji Xuan shrink, he fixed his eyes on Wen Busheng's right palm as a smear of doubt flashed

across his eyes.

“These ripples…”

The Deans up in the sky were looking over in astonishment, their faces were soon replaced with shock as their eyes flickered.

“That lad from the Undefeated Spiritual Academy… he actually transplanted the hand bone of a Sovereign expert? No wonder his right hand is so powerful…”

…

The colossal azure light array hovered in the sky as an extremely large azure light Spiritual Image appeared on the light array, it was like a divine being that had traveled here through space, looking down on the land from high above.

An indescribable pressure spread throughout the heavens and earth.

Countless gazes were filled with astonishment as they looked at the azure light figure. The appearance of the light silhouette wasn’t clear, but the powerful pressure that was emitting from it gave others an understanding of how powerful it was.

“What is that?”

“After hearing Liu Qingyun’s words, it should be the Wind Ancestor of his Wind Spirit Clan…”

“Wind Ancestor? The almighty being that founded the Wind Spirit Clan? Is he not dead yet?”

“That naturally can’t be the real body of the Wind Ancestor, it should be a Secret Art that Liu Qingyun executed from his Wind Spirit Clan and paired with his bloodline, thus he could summon a Spiritual Image of it. But even so, the power coming from it is extremely frightening.”

“Looks like Liu Qingyun is not going to waste any more time, he has even revealed such a trump card…”

"…"

Fine whispers circulated amongst the countless students. Many had shock contained in their voices as they were clearly startled by this move from Liu Qingyun. Not even an expert that had gone through the Third Grade Spirit Disaster could resist that large azure light Spiritual Image.

"To be able to walk this far and is not the slightest bit afraid of Mu Chen, who was the Numero Uno of the Elimination Round, he truly does have his trump card."

Many students in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy region had worries in their eyes.

"This Liu Qingyun is indeed formidable." Ye Qingling sighed, not a single one of those Best 8 were easy to deal with. The Elimination Round was probably just a warm-up for them and right now was the time for them to truly unleash their trump cards and fight.

"Can Big Brother Mu Chen withstand it?" Yu Xi spoke in an anxious voice as she clenched her fist.

Ye Qingling bitterly smiled as it was impossible for her to give an opinion on a battle of this level. Right now, they could only see if Mu Chen possessed a similar trump card as well.

"Although the Wind Ancestor's Spiritual Image that Liu Qingyun summoned isn't weak, Mu Chen is not someone to be easily messed with." Ling Xi lightly smiled as she appeased their worries. The Wind Spirit Clan might be powerful, but Ling Xi didn't think that they could be stronger than the mysterious clan behind Aunt Jing, a clan that even Aunt Jing feared would definitely not be an existence that the Wind Spirit Clan could compete against.

Seeing the smile on Ling Xi's face, Ye Qingling and the rest slightly felt relieved, but their eyes were still fixed on the Golden Battle Stage.

Mu Chen's black pupils were also fixed on the huge azure light

Spiritual Image on the stage.

“Mu Chen, if you can withstand this attack, I’ll admit my defeat!” Liu Qingyun coldly looked at Mu Chen as his hand seals changed. The azure light Spiritual Image strode forth as it sent a palm down, pressing towards Mu Chen.

Under that palm, the Spiritual Energy residing between the heavens and earth was being dissipated, before that palm even land, a huge shadow already engulfed the Battle Stage.

Mu Chen’s clothes stuck close to his body from the pressure as he looked at the terrifying azure light Spiritual Image, he inhaled a deep breath as his expression became solemn, and started to form seals with both of his hands.

Rumble.

As he formed the seals, the black and white Spiritual Energy behind him abruptly whistled as it started to converge together at a rapid speed.

As the black and white Spiritual Energy started to converge, everyone could see a three hundred meter black pagoda slowly taking form.

The colossal black pagoda stood towering in the sky as the surface of the primordial pagoda looked as if there were golden dragon Spiritual Images coiling around it. Vaguely, vast and ancient dragon roars rang out.

When the colossal black pagoda appeared, the corner of Dean Tai Cang’s lips uncontrollably twitched, since he still clearly remembered how Mu Chen’s mother used a black pagoda to refine the Yellow Dragon Sovereign...

And, right now, Mu Chen could also execute such a terrifying means?

However, can that black pagoda of his withstand the Wind Ancestor’s Spiritual Image summoned by Liu Qingyun?

Chapter 607 - Black Pagoda Refines Spiritual Image

The black pagoda that formed behind Mu Chen attracted countless attention with the eyes of many filled with shock. Judging from the might itself, the black pagoda didn't seem to be inferior to the Spiritual Image summoned by Liu Qingyun. Thus, they were wondering if Mu Chen's trump card could defeat Liu Qingyun's.

Only certain Deans that were more powerful compared to others could vaguely sense the peculiar fluctuations coming from the black pagoda as astonishment flashed across their eyes as they inwardly nodded their heads. Looks like the confrontation this time will be interesting.

Those two youths aren't so simple.

When Liu Qingyun saw the black pagoda behind Mu Chen, he slightly narrowed his eyes as he issued a cold snort. He believed that even Ji Xuan would have a hard time dealing with this Spiritual Image that he had summoned, he refused to believe that Mu Chen could withstand it!

"Let me see just how capable you are!"

Liu Qingyun coldly sneered as he changed his seals once again, the palm that was approaching Mu Chen grew even more radiant as the terrifying Spiritual Energy ripples created huge cracks on the firm Golden Battle Stage.

When Mu Chen raised his head and pierced through the space to the pressing energy, although it was extremely violent, it was still unable to cause any harm to him with his current physique.

What he needed to pay attention to was the azure light figure that was incoming.

Haaaaah.

A white mist slowly exited from Mu Chen's mouth as his black pupils turned exceptionally cold, like blades, and the seals that he was forming with his hands also changed.

Buzzzzz!

The black pagoda behind him started to tremble as it issued buzzing noises, the golden dragon patterns on the surface of the pagoda also shone more brilliantly. Dragon roars resounded as a Golden Dragon separated from the pagoda. Sunlight shone onto its body, reflecting the radiant luster off the golden scales.

The Golden Dragon faced the sky and issued a roar that trembled the skies and turned into a ray of golden light that charged forth as it whipped its tail. A realistic dragon pressure spread out, compared to the Wind Dragon what was created by Liu Qingyun earlier, it was even more intense.

A bundle of golden light charged forth as it clashed against the azure light palm that was pressing downwards under the countless viewers.

Boom!

The instant the two colossi clashed, golden and azure light turned into two brilliant light rays as they swept out.

Beneath the brilliant color, it was an extremely ferocious clash between Spiritual Energies.

At the point of the impact of the two attacks, space was drastically distorted.

"Liu Qingyun's attack is being blocked!" someone exclaimed since the azure palm was unable to land under the sweep of the golden light.

"Mu Chen truly does have some capability, no wonder he was the Numero Uno of the Elimination Round."

Up in the sky, seeing as his attack was being blocked, Liu

Qingyun frowned his brows as his hand seals changed again. In an instant, the brilliant azure light exploded with a deep thunderous roar. The azure palm was like a meteorite as it pushed downwards.

Boom! Boom!

The terrifying impacts wreaked havoc in the sky. What made everyone startled was that no matter how ferocious the azure palm was, it could not break through the golden light.

Liu Qingyun's facial expression finally turned a little ugly.

"Since you've finished attacking, it's my turn next." Mu Chen faintly laughed as he strode forth, his feet were heavily stomping on the ground as the black pagoda behind him soared into the skies.

Whoooosh!

Under the countless gazes, the black pagoda descended from the horizon as the size rapidly increased. In just a few breath's time, the size was already a few hundred feet in size as it enveloped the azure light image.

"Hmph!"

Liu Qingyun's eyes grew gold at the sight of it as the azure light figure opened its mouth. It was letting out a substantial sound wave, like a tornado, as it charged towards the black pagoda.

There wasn't the slightest trace of the black pagoda dodging the sound wave; however, the bottom of the black pagoda was like a bottomless pit as it sucked the sound waves in, it only created a burst of ripples before it perished.

"Get in!"

Mu Chen coldly barked as the black pagoda brought along a massive shadow, enveloping the azure light image and sucked it into the pagoda under the countless dumbfounded gazes.

"Sucking everything in, aren't you afraid of overloading?!" Frost

covered Liu Qingyun's face as his seals changed. Violent Spiritual Energy ripples burst out of the light image as dreadful palm winds were rapidly smacking against the wall of the pagoda.

Boom! Boom!

A heavy voice constantly resounded as fine trembles were displayed from the black pagoda.

"Its appetite is too huge and your capability is too puny. Do you want to overload it? Fat chance." Mu Chen smiled, but there wasn't much of a smiling expression in his eyes. He sat down on mid-air and started to form hand seals.

"Great Pagoda Art - Flames of Pagoda Refines the Heavens and Earth!"

Along with Mu Chen's hand seals constantly changing, he slowly closed his eyes and a solemn bark rang out from his heart.

Roar!

When Mu Chen barked in his heart, an earth-shattering dragon roar resounded from the pagoda, everyone witnessed three Golden Dragons from the first to the third layer of the black pagoda that looked to have been resurrected. The dragons flew into the body of the pagoda and transformed, they started to blaze with golden flames.

The golden flames whistled in the pagoda. These golden flames were similar to the ones his mother had used to refine the Yellow Dragon Sovereign, the only difference was the size.

After all, when Mu Chen's mother had executed it back then, there were hundreds of Golden Dragons transforming into pagoda flames. It was still far from possible for Mu Chen to achieve what she did.

However, it was more than sufficient to deal with Liu Qingyun.

As the golden flames appeared, the azure Spiritual Image in the

pagoda turned stiff for a moment, as if it had sensed a fatal danger and the colossal body condensed a little more.

Outside, Liu Qingyun had a heavy expression on his face as he had clearly felt that threat as well.

“Go.”

Mu Chen paid no attention and pointed with his finger when the golden flames rushed in, they had instantly engulfed the azure light image.

The brilliant azure light was like a tidal wave as it swept out of the azure figure, forming a defense as it withstood the terrifying refinery process of the golden flames.

Tsssssssssss sssssssssiiii!

When the two opposing forces came into contact, the azure light image was being dissolved at a rapid speed. The destructive power of the golden flames was simply frightening beyond expectations.

Through the pagoda, everyone could witness the scene as they felt a chill in their hearts in that instant. How could those golden flames be so dreadful? Even the Spiritual Image summoned by Liu Qingyun cannot withstand it?

In midair, Liu Qingyun’s face was ashen. However, he managed to calm his agitated heart in the next moment as he glanced at Mu Chen with a cold gaze, he sucked in a mouthful of air as he pointed his finger. Then, some dark-red blood appeared on his finger.

Rustle! Rustle!

His fingertips were dancing in the air as the blood formed into a blood-red ancient rune before him.

Shhhhhhiii!

The moment the rune appeared, it assimilated into the space and at the same time, the body of the azure light image inside the pagoda jolted. The azure light started to turn denser and denser,

the facial features of it also became clearer.

Faintly, there was an astonishing might spreading out.

“Liu Qingyun does have some means, to be able to summon his Spiritual Image to such a level.” Several Deans praised as they nodded their heads at that scene.

Clearly, the clearer the appearance, the Spiritual Image that was summoned by Liu Qingyun would be even more powerful. Once it was cultivated to the limits, the power of the Spiritual Image summoned by it could be comparable to the genuine Spiritual Image of the Wind Ancestor.

The azure light around the light image grew deeper and, at the same time, more refined. As the azure light surged, it was able to withstand those golden flames.

Tsssssssssssssssssii.

Two terrifying powers were eroding one another. Although the golden flames had the initiative, it was certainly not as violent as before. If this went on, Mu Chen’s Spiritual Energy might not be able to hold out for much longer; after all, he was in a disadvantage in terms of Spiritual Energy, compared to Liu Qingyun, who had gone through the Third Grade Spirit Disaster.

Countless gazes were nervously staring in their direction since they knew that the battle between Mu Chen and Liu Qingyun had reached the climax. The moment one of them fell to the disadvantage, the results would be determined.

Under the countless gazes, Mu Chen slowly opened his eyes as he stared at the pagoda. His expression was exceptionally calm as he formed seals with both of his hands again.

Buzzzzz.

As Mu Chen’s hand seals changed, everyone witnessed that there was actually a golden rune appearing on the fourth layer of the pagoda’s walls, the golden rune was spreading out at a rapid speed

and quickly transformed into a Golden Dragon Rune.

When the fourth Golden Dragon Rune appeared, Liu Qingyun's face drastically changed.

Roar!

Dragon roars resounded as the Golden Dragon Rune separated itself from the pagoda's wall and turned into golden flames, joining the sea of flames that engulfed the azure Spiritual Image.

Fhooooooooo!

As the fourth Golden Dragon joined the array of flames, the golden flames became more radiant as its power increased.

"Flames of Pagoda, Refine!"

Mu Chen slowly extended his hand out towards the black pagoda and clenched his fist as a cold voice resounded from his heart.

Fhooooo!

When his voice stopped, the raging golden flames rolled in the pagoda and engulfed the entire azure Spiritual Image.

Chapter 608 - Untitled

On the Battle Stage that belonged to Ji Xuan and Wen Busheng.

Ji Xuan stood on midair as boundless Spiritual Energy swept out from his body. Behind him, the vast Spiritual Energy seemed to have formed into a huge sacred sun.

The sacred sun floated in midair while emitting terrifying power. Looking at it, the students outside the stage felt their scalps tingling, the level of that attack was something that not even Third Grade Spirit Disaster experts could withstand. To be able to emerge into the Best 8 and possess the most prominent fame, Ji Xuan did have his own capabilities.

While many people were sighing, Ji Xuan focused his gaze on Wen Busheng; and in that direction, Wen Busheng maintained a calm expression as the dark golden color in his hand grew darker. From the outer appearance, it seemed to be made of gold, but an ineffable pressure was being emitted.

“The hand bone of a Sovereign…”

Ji Xuan fixed his eyes on Wen Busheng as he slowly said, “What good luck you have there.”

Only now did Ji Xuan realise why Wen Busheng was able to lead his team of decent strength to surmount all difficulties and make it to the Best 8. It turns out that this ordinary-looking fellow had such a powerful trump card.

“The hand bone of a Sovereign?”

The surrounding students felt their hearts jolt upon hearing their conversation as they looked at Wen Busheng’s golden right hand in overwhelming shock. A Sovereign’s hand bone is in that fellow’s hand?

Similarly, Wen Busheng was also looking at Ji Xuan and smiled, “It was just good fortune. Fortunately, I was able to obtain a

Senior's hand bone that he had managed to leave behind by using his Blood Essence in an ancient ruin. I was able to succeed because I was compatible with his hand bone and there's the fact that I know a little about the transplant technique."

"What good fortune he has." Someone involuntarily voiced out. Rumor had it that when a Sovereign expert dies, their body could last for a millennium, without being destroyed. Those that were fortunate to obtain the bones of a Sovereign could not transplant it directly into their body, since it wasn't something that belonged to them, if they were to transplant it carelessly, they could be devoured by it instead, unless that person was really fortunate to have a high compatibility with the Sovereign's bone...

Even with such a small chance, Wen Busheng actually encountered it. That fellow's luck was really envious.

"But, looking from the might of your Sovereign's hand bone, the owner of it wouldn't exceed Fifth Grade Sovereign Realm. So I'm afraid that it will not be that easy if you want to defeat me by just relying on it." Ji Xuan spoke in a faint tone.

"If I don't risk it, how would I know the results?" Wen Busheng showed an indifferent smile. Even when facing the powerful Ji Xuan, he still showed no trace of fear.

"Then, let me take a look at how much strength the Sovereign expert has left behind after his death." Ji Xuan deeply looked at Wen Busheng as his gaze gradually turned cold. His body slowly rose up and the sacred sun formed from his boundless Spiritual Energy was becoming clearer and larger in size behind him.

Everyone could feel the violent movements of Spiritual Energy between the heavens and earth, the light shone from the sacred sun was actually causing the natural Spiritual Energy in the heavens and earth to boil.

Everyone could tell that Ji Xuan was intending to end this battle with his finishing move.

Haaaaaah.

Wen Busheng deeply inhaled a mouthful of air as he suddenly clenched his golden hand, the clothes on his entire arm were instantly torn to shreds. With blue veins that were like earthworms wiggling on his arm, the blood in his body started to flow, endlessly pouring into his hand.

As the blood flowed, the dark color of his palm grew darker, the power being emitted from it also grew stronger.

Many people held their breaths as the two of them were preparing to have a decisive clash.

Rumble! Rumble!

Violent Spiritual Energy fluctuated in the heavens and the earth in ripples. The silence before the calm made the atmosphere between the heavens and earth a little frozen.

Up in the sky, the sacred sun behind Ji Xuan grew in size to a few hundred meters. Before the sacred sun, his figure, which was floating before it, looked extremely tiny. The sacred sun was like a blazing sun that had descended; it was extremely stunning.

When the sacred sun reached a limit, a radiant light shot out of Ji Xuan's cold gaze. He looked down at Wen Busheng as he formed hand seals and his chilled voice resonated throughout the heavens and earth.

"Great Divine Sun Art - Sacred Sun Cleanse!"

Buzz! Buzz!

The colossal sun emitted a buzzing noise and as Ji Xuan formed his seals, everyone witnessed the sun abruptly shoot up to the horizon.

Whoosh!

The sun rose towards the nine heavens and after a few breath's time, it dived down, a descending sun from the sky, along with

unimaginable destructive power. Under the countless gazes that were overwhelmed with shock, it descended towards the Battle Stage.

Under the terrifying attack, the firm stage caved in as cracks started to spread.

Wen Busheng's face turned even more solemn as he looked at the dreadful power falling from the sky. He raised his head as the sun that was reflected in his pupils grew bigger and bigger.

In that instant, he slowly raised his right hand, a dark golden liquid seemed to be circulating in his golden hand, his face turned pale as he waved his hand down in the air.

"Sovereign's Hand!"

A faint voice resounded from Wen Busheng's heart.

Buzzz!

The space violently trembled when Wen Busheng waved his hand down, so much so that the ripples were visibly seen spreading out like waves.

Golden light burst forth and everyone could clearly see a golden palm print flying from Wen Busheng's palm. The palm grew in size and in a short amount of time, it had already grown to a few hundred meters.

The massive golden palm soared, it was as if a giant was waving his palm and, under the countless startled gazes, it heavily clashed with the descending sun without fear.

Boom!

The heavens and earth became silent from the moment of contact. However, the silence only lasted for an instant before an eye-piercing radiant light exploded.

That scene was similar to two meteorites clashing together.

Dreadful Spiritual Energy impacts violently swept out as

everyone raised their heads, looking at the clash between the sun and the golden palm in astonishment. The two constantly eroded one another, trying to destroy the other party.

However, due to the fact that the two abilities were extremely powerful, the two attacks fell into a stalemate.

On the stage, Wen Busheng was watching the clash as he waved his hand down in the empty space again and at this same time, his face turned even paler.

Buzzzz!

The golden palm was abruptly strengthened and everyone saw that the golden palm had suddenly clenched, crushing the sun.

Hissssssss

Innumerable people sucked in cold air because no one expected Wen Busheng to be so powerful, even such a powerful attack unleashed by Ji Xuan was crushed by him.

The hand bone of a Sovereign was, indeed, formidable.

Whoosh!

After the golden palm crushed the sun, taking advantage of the extremely violent Spiritual Energy explosion, it charged towards the direction of Ji Xuan in the sky.

Space was distorted by the impact of the Spiritual Energy, rendering others incapable of seeing Ji Xuan's expression. But facing Wen Busheng's attack, he didn't seem to have any signs of dodging.

Swissssh!

The golden palm appeared before Ji Xuan in almost an instant as it waved down.

There wasn't any fluctuation in Ji Xuan's expression. On the contrary, a cold chill flashed across his pupils.

Liiiiiiii!

A primordial hawk cry resonated in the sky. When many people raised their heads, they saw an illusory hawk's wings tearing the space apart as it skimmed past the golden palm and disappeared.

The illusory hawk's wings only appeared for an instant and it only took a skim for the golden palm to disappear. Many people rubbed their eyes at the sight of it as the previous scene felt like an illusion.

When the golden palm was half a foot away from Ji Xuan, it suddenly froze and wasn't able to budge an inch.

Ji Xuan indifferently extended his palm as he lightly slapped the golden palm.

Crack.

Along with Ji Xuan's light slap, many people were filled with astonishment as they saw the indestructible golden palm crumbling and turning into golden flickers that filled the sky.

Pffffff.

Below on the stage, Wen Busheng spat a mouthful of blood as the Spiritual Energy ripples around him dropped. He felt the weakness in his body as he kneeled on the ground with one leg as fresh blood dripped from the corner of his mouth.

He slowly wiped the bloodstain off the corner of his lips as he raised his head. At this time, Ji Xuan slowly descended as he looked at him with an apathetic gaze.

"I lost."

Wen Busheng bitterly smiled and issued a soft sigh.

As Wen Busheng declared, cheers that filled the skies and covered the earth rang out. No one imagined that Wen Busheng, whose attack was at a slight advantage, would suddenly lose.

That Ji Xuan was simply too powerful.

Hearing the cheers, Wen Busheng turned his head around as he looked at a Battle Stage far away, which was similarly emitting astonishing Spiritual Energy ripples.

Ji Xuan’s name truly is not for nothing, it's all up to you to defeat him...

Chapter 609 - Emergence of the Best 3

When Wen Busheng was defeated, the battle between Mu Chen and Liu Qingyun had also reached the climax.

The black pagoda hovered in the horizon as the golden flames in the pagoda raged. The flames felt as if they could burn anything in the world. The flames were surging as they engulfed the azure light image.

Tsssssssshhiiiiiii

A piercing noise constantly resounded, as if the Spiritual Energy was being burnt.

The might of the four golden dragons that turned into the pagoda's flames was unbelievable. Under the raging flames, the azure spiritual image was rapidly being distorted. There was a suffering expression on the spiritual image's indistinct face.

On the Battle Stage, Liu Qingyun's face also drastically changed.

"Shatter!"

However, before he could react, Mu Chen's cold voice rang throughout the heavens and earth.

Fhoooooooo!

Along with Mu Chen's cold voice, the ferocity of the golden flames in the pagoda reached the limits and swept out. The azure spiritual image was incapable of holding out any longer as cracks started to appear and spread on the colossal body, a heavy sound came and it exploded.

Azure light dispersed but was quickly devoured by the golden flames.

As the golden flames spread, the place was soon empty as the azure spiritual image no longer existed.

That azure spiritual image was refined.

Poooooffff!

A mouthful of fresh blood spewed from Liu Qingyun's mouth as paleness rapidly ran across his face. The Spiritual Energy ripples in his surroundings were also weakened. The spiritual image contained his blood essence, which was linked together with him, thus he suffered heavy injuries when it was refined.

Swish!

When Liu Qingyun spewed blood from his mouth, a commotion roared around the battle stage. Many people widened their eyes, with shock covering their faces from the fact that Liu Qingyun actually lost...

"Liu Qingyun has already executed such a move and still lost to Mu Chen..."

"Truly well-deserving of being the Numero Uno of the Elimination Round."

"..."

Many people couldn't help gasping in surprise as Mu Chen's strength was only at First Grade Spirit Disaster, whereas Liu Qingyun was at Third Grade Spirit Disaster. But despite the difference between them, Mu Chen was able to emerge victorious. His fighting strength was truly admirable.

"Big Brother Mu Chen won!" Yu Xi's face and eyes were filled with excitement.

Ye Qingling, Su Ling'er, and Sun'er couldn't hide the joy on their faces. As for the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, a tsunami of cheers had already broken out amongst them as every single one of them had their faces filled with excitement. It had been too long since their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had achieved such outstanding results in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

In the past, when their academy participated in the Great

Spiritual Academy Tournament, those students from the other Five Great Academies were always staring at them with mockery. But today, the gazes coming from them were stupefied, which made them feel great.

“The Nine-layered Pagoda does have a little maturity.” Ling Xi focused her gaze on the silhouette of the youth as she revealed a smile. She had also cultivated the Nine-layered Pagoda in the past and, thus, she had a considerable amount of knowledge for it. It was known as a powerful technique in Aunt Jing’s clan and when cultivated to the end, it could even refine Sovereign Realm experts that had been sucked into it, it was extremely fearsome.

However, it hadn’t been long since Mu Chen obtained the complete Great Pagoda Art; but with his talent, it’s not too difficult for him to have great accomplishments in the future.

At the location gathered by the students of the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy was a scene of myriad flowers blossoming, the beautiful scenery was pleasing to the eye.

At this instant, all of them were looking at the Battle Stage which Mu Chen was at. After all, their confrontation was extremely dazzling.

“This Mu Chen is so formidable that even Liu Qingyun is not his opponent.”

“It is said that Liu Qingyun was a genius in the Wind Spirit Clan, anyone that comes out from that clan isn’t weak. I never imagined that even he could not win against Mu Chen.”

“But… hehe, that Mu Chen is quite handsome.”

“Haha, go and hook him over, you little fox. Our Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy won’t mind having such an outstanding male student…”

“…”

As those girls were boldly chattering and laughing, an aroma

spread out, which made the students of the other schools drool.

“Qian’er, this childhood sweetheart of yours is really from the Northern Spiritual Realm? Isn’t he a little too formidable? That Liu Qingyun is a genius of the Wind Spirit Clan.” Next Tang Qian’er, a girl with gorgeous looks praised.

“Yeah, even in the Northern Spiritual Realm, he was also very outstanding.” Tang Qing’er smiled as her gaze focused on that youth’s silhouette as well. Complicated lights flashed across her eyes and without her knowing, he was already so dazzling and the distance between them was getting further and further away.

The thought of it made Tang Qian’er’s spiritual eyes dim, but, she quickly firmly clenched her fist. The matters of the future were still far from them, no one knew what would happen in the future. Just like how the brat Mu Chen who had mucus dangling on his nose followed behind her, wobbling as he walked. Perhaps even he would not expect himself to be so dazzling in the future, right?

On the Golden Battle Stage.

Mu Chen looked at the emptied Nine-layered Pagoda as he made a summoning gesture with his hand. Following it, the Nine-layered Pagoda turned into a black light and flew back into his body. He then shifted his gaze and looked at Liu Qingyun and said, “Are we going to continue?”

At the current moment, the Spiritual Energy ripples around Liu Qingyun was extremely weak. Evidently, he had suffered a huge injury and he wouldn’t have any chance of success, even if he carried on fighting.

Liu Qingyun wiped the traces of blood off the corner of his lips as he deeply glanced at Mu Chen. “I always keep my promises, you are the victor of this round.”

He had already revealed his strongest attack, which was still

defeated by Mu Chen. If they were to continue, he would only be embarrassing himself, so he decided to admit defeat while showing elegance at the same time.

“Thanks for letting me win.”

Mu Chen cupped his hands as he smiled, there weren’t any deep grudges between him and Liu Qingyun, so there’s no point in forcing his opponent to a dead end.

Liu Qingyun stood up as he glanced at Mu Chen and spoke with indifference, “Although you have defeated me, don’t get too proud of yourself. Your greatest opponent is Ji Xuan, and he isn’t so easy to deal with.”

“I know he’s not easy, but I think that I’m not easy to deal with, as well.” The unerasable self-confidence held in Mu Chen’s calm tone raised the eyebrows of others.

Liu Qingyun went silent. Indeed, although Ji Xuan was powerful, this youth before him also wasn’t a simple figure. If the two of them were to clash, it would probably be an earth-shattering battle between those two.

Up in midair, the Five Great Deans were looking down as they each had different expressions on their faces.

A smile hung on Dean Tai Cang’s face because Mu Chen’s performance had surpassed his expectations. He never expected Liu Qingyun to be defeated by Mu Chen’s hands. With that, their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would be able to enter into the Best 4, such results were already pretty good.

“Haha, Dean Tai Cang, my congratulations to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, a formidable Freshman has emerged.” The Azure Sky Spiritual Academy’s Dean Tian Song sighed with an elegant smile.

“Dean Tian Song is flattering me. Mu Chen was just lucky. That Liu Qingyun of your academy is a dragon amongst men as well.”

Dean Tai Cang smiled as he replied.

“Right now, basically the Best 3 have already emerged in the battle of the Best 8.” Dean Tiansheng of the Saint Spiritual Academy lightly laughed.

Amongst the four Battle Stages, Mu Chen defeated Liu Qingyun and Luo Li had also easily defeated her opponent. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong also obtained victory, while Su Xuan maintained a tie. However, their results no longer mattered since their team had already obtained the advantage.

Whereas Ji Xuan defeated Wen Busheng and his team obtained a result of total victory, defeating all of their opponents.

As for the other two, the team led by Wen Qingxuan had expectedly won. Compared to Mu Chen and Ji Xuan’s battle, Wen Qingxuan’s victory was pretty easy. After all, Fang Yun’s strength was the weakest amongst the eight Captains. If it wasn’t for the Dragon-Tiger Cauldron, he might not even be able to last so long in the hands of Wen Qingxuan.

As for the Wen Qingxuan’s teammates, all of them had their own victories and losses, but according to points, they had already surpassed the Nine Cauldron Spiritual Academy. Thus, this battle ended in their victory.

Therefore, there were already three teams that emerged into the Best 4.

Mu Chen stood on the Battle Stage as Luo Li, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and Su Xuan, who had ended their battles, flew over towards his direction.

“You guys had it tough.” Mu Chen smiled at them.

“How can it be compared to yours?” Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong said helplessly. Although their battles were intense as well, compared to the battle Mu Chen had with Liu Qingxuan, it was beyond comparison.

“I didn’t manage to obtain a victory.” Su Xuan was a little embarrassed as she spoke. In the entire team, only she had ended her battle in a tie.

“It’s enough if we can get into the Best 4.” Mu Chen casually spoke. The other members of the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy’s team weren’t easy opponents and it was already a good result that Su Xuan could obtain a tie with her strength being the weakest in their team.

“Only Luo Li ended her battle the fastest.” Shen Cangsheng smiled, in the battle between the eight teams, Luo Li was the first to have ended the battle. Her efficiency attracted countless gasps of surprise.

Mu Chen nodded his head as he smiled as well. Even placed amongst the eight Captains, Luo Li’s strength could be considered amongst the highest and now, putting her against a team member was naturally an easy task.

“Right now, there is still one ongoing battle.” Luo Li said softly as she shifted her gaze towards a Battle Stage faraway as a chill flowed in her clear eyes.

It was the stage that Xue Tianhe and Wu Ling was fighting.

Chapter 610 – Demonic Blood Beast VS Divine War Ape

Three out of the four Battle Stages had concluded their battles as the Spiritual Energies calmed down. Only the one on the most right still had ripples of dreadful Spiritual Energy fluctuations, causing signs of faint distortion in the space.

It was the Battle Stage between Xue Tianhe and Wu Ling.

The team members of those two teams had their own victories and losses as according to the calculation of points, the two teams only had two points each. Which meant that two of their teammates in each team obtained a victory while having one tied; both of the teams had the same amount of points. Thus, the battle between their Captains would determine if they could get into the Best 4.

“This Xue Tianhe is truly formidable, to be capable of fighting with Wu Ling to such a degree.” Shen Cangsheng and the rest had astonishment revealed on their expressions. Wu Ling was the most prominent genius in the Martial Spiritual Academy. Due to the fact that he had been hiding his strength in the Elimination Round, he had yet to show his true strength. But even so, he still couldn’t defeat Xue Tianhe so easily.

“Xue Tianhe is a Prince in the Blood God Clan, his background would only be stronger compared to Wu Ling, not weaker.” Luo Li spoke in a soft tone. She naturally had a good understanding of the Blood God Clan. Although Wu Ling was the grandson of the Martial Spiritual Academy’s Dean, the foundation of an academy was still inferior to the Blood God Clan.

“I can’t tell who will win, as well.” Mu Chen nodded his head in agreement. In terms of relationship, he still wished for Wu Ling to emerge victorious. After all, he didn’t have the slightest favourable opinion of Xue Tianhe, since he hopes to personally slaughter this

fellow who had ill intentions for Luo Li.

“This battle will be extremely intense.”

When everyone heard that statement, they nodded their heads in agreement as they looked at the colossal Battle Stage without batting an eye.

In this vast region, every single person had their attention gathered upon that Battle Stage at this moment, especially students of the Martial Spiritual Academy; all of them had nervous expressions on their faces. Right now, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Saint Spiritual Academy and the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy had entered the Best 4, if their Martial Spiritual Academy were to fail here, it would definitely be a considerable impact to their morale.

Under the innumerable gazes, two surges of boundless Spiritual Energy were frantically clashing in the colossal Battle Stage, separated by the colours of blood-red and deep yellow, splitting the stage into two regions.

Xue Tianhe and Wu Ling’s figures were practically engulfed by the boundless Spiritual Energies with only thunderous explosions sounding off every time the two surges of dreadful Spiritual Energy clashed. Judging from the Spiritual Energy impacts, the battle between the two had already reached the climax.

Roar!

As the two surges of Spiritual Energies clashed, a violence-filled roar resounded from the Battle Stage. That roar didn’t seem to be something that could be produced by humans, it sounded like an ape’s roar. The roar was filled with endless ferocity as the sound waves spread out, pushing the blood-red Spiritual Energy back.

That scene instantly caused an endless uproar.

Mu Chen and Luo Li’s gazes also narrowed in an instant, shifting their gazes over, they saw the sudden appearance of a large

silhouette in the boundlessly deep yellow-coloured Spiritual Energy. It was an image of about a few hundred meters, it seemed to be a deep yellow-coloured ape. The ape was holding onto a huge black pole with a savage expression, its eyes were also filled with ferocity and thirst for battle.

As the gigantic ape made its appearance, the Spiritual Energy between the heavens and earth started to boil.

“That’s…”

Mu Chen could not help having his expression changed as he exclaimed in surprise, “Rank 15 of the Myriad Beast Record’s Earth Rank, the Divine War Ape?”

By his side, Luo Li also revealed an astonished expression as she clearly never expected Wu Ling to have previously refined the Soul Essence of a Divine War Ape. It looked like the Martial Spiritual Academy was related to this as well; otherwise, how could Wu Ling refine such a powerful Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence with his own strength?

“How dreadful, so Wu Ling had concealed such a trump card under his sleeve.” Shen Cangsheng and the rest also exclaimed in surprise, which was shortly replaced by envy. Such a powerful Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence wasn’t something an ordinary people could enjoy. Not only did one require great opportunity, it also required the aid of powerful experts. Otherwise, that person would only be counter-devoured by the Soul Essence instead.

Although all of them had refined Soul Essences back when they were in the Spirit Stage, their Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essences weren’t powerful. Thus, as they got stronger, the power of the Soul Essence would also slowly fade and would no longer be usable, unless they refined the Soul Essence of a powerful Spiritual Beast of the Myriad Beast Record back when they were in the Spirit Stage.

“Xue Tianhe is not going to last.” Li Xuantong looked at the

stage. When Wu Ling revealed his trump card, the stalemate between them was instantly shattered. The torrential blood-red Spiritual Energy was being pushed back and, clearly, according to this situation, Wu Ling would probably win the battle.

“It’s not that simple.” Luo Li, however, shook her head in disagreement as her eyes fixed onto that silhouette covered in blood-red Spiritual Energy as a chill flashed.

Mu Chen was also closely watching the Battle Stage since he also wished to know what else Xue Tianhe had hidden under his sleeve. Facing the currently powerful Wu Ling, can he win?

Boom!

Under the countless gazes, the large ape that Wu Ling had taken the form of waved its large pole, sweeping away an earth-shatteringly large amount of blood-red Spiritual Energy. Thereafter, Wu Ling drove his pole forth along with a windstorm towards the silhouette hidden in the blood-red Spiritual Energy.

Creak! Creak!

Wu Ling did not hold himself back in that move as the windstorm of the pole left behind faint marks in the space as it moved and dense blood red Spiritual Energy exploded.

The boundless oceanic blood-red Spiritual Energy was suppressed until it was only to tens of meters. Furthermore, that Spiritual Energy was also shattered under the whirlwind of the pole.

Suddenly, just when the pole was about to completely shatter the blood-red Spiritual Energy, an unforeseen event occurred.

Boom!

Suddenly, a mighty fist, covered in blood-red scales, charged out of the blood-red Spiritual Energy and clashed against the gigantic pole. Under the impact of the two terrifying powers, cracks started to spread on the ground below.

As the whirlwind from the impact wreaked havoc, everyone was shocked as they witnessed Wu Ling, who was currently in the form of a colossal ape, being pushed back, leaving deep footprint grooves on the ground.

“What?!”

Many people screamed out in astonishment as their gazes became filled with horror when they saw the blood-red Spiritual Energy. What did Xue Tianhe do, how is he able to push back the Divine War Ape?

The faces of Shen Cangsheng and the rest changed as well.

Mu Chen’s gaze was fixed onto the blood-red Spiritual Energy. Earlier, when that huge fist covered in blood-red scales appeared, he could sense the movement coming from the black egg, which was the current form of the Nine Netherbird.

“This Xue Tianhe has also refined a powerful Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence?”

Mu Chen’s gaze flickered as his expression was a little solemn. That fellow had truly deeply hidden that.

The blood-red Spiritual Energy slowly dissipates and, in the process, everyone could see a colossal figure gradually appearing in their eyes, getting clearer in their view.

Hisssssss.

When the colossal figure had cleared up, many people sucked in a mouthful of chilled air.

It was a colossal humanoid beast in blood-red scales, the colossal beast was also covered in a thick layer of blood armour, with blood-red bone spikes at its back. The appearance was very ferocious as a surge of savage aura was being emitted as it spread throughout the heavens and the earth.

“What is that?”

“Rank 13 of the Myriad Beast Record’s Earth Rank, the Demonic Blood Beast!” Luo Li said softly as her eyes were filled with chill.

“The Demonic Blood Beast of Rank 13?” Mu Chen’s heart jolted at her words. It was said that the Demonic Blood Beast was a species of extreme savagery, ranking in 13 and was only two ranks beneath the Nine Netherbird. From that point alone, one could deduct how powerful the Demonic Blood Beast was, but due to the fact of the beast possessing an extremely savage nature, it would affect the one that refined it, planting a savage nature into that person.

“In the Blood God Clan, there is a Blood Sea. The Blood Sea was made by the Blood God Clan from sacrificing the Blood Essence of countless people. Through it, they reached an agreement to beneficially strengthen both their clans.” At this moment, Luo Li’s clear pupils were filled with extreme hatred.

“All these years, the Blood God Clan has been boldly attacking the region of our Luo God Clan, taking our people to refine the Blood Sea and nurture the Demonic Blood Beasts!”

Mu Chen was slightly startled, despite being aware that the battles between clans were extremely violent, he never thought that the Blood God Clan would be so vicious. No wonder the Luo God Clan was filled with hatred for the Blood God Clan.

Mu Chen looked at the girl who was biting her rosy lips and couldn’t control the pity that was rising in his heart. The responsibilities on her shoulders had far surpassed his expectations. She had hundreds of millions of people to protect and she could only leave the Luo God Clan for two years to be at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Her sacrifices made Mu Chen feel his heart being plugged.

She had been silently sacrificing so much for him.

He inhaled a mouthful of air as he extended his hand and held onto Luo Li’s. He did not speak as he knew that right now, he didn’t have any qualification to confront such a colossal figure like

the Blood God Clan. But one day, he would overturn the entire Blood God Clan for her sake.

Luo Li also felt Mu Chen's thoughts as her small cold hands were also gripping onto Mu Chen's, she felt secured as she spoke in a soft voice, "Wu Ling is losing."

Mu Chen raised his head as he looked. Indeed, the battle in the Battle Stage was overturned, along with Xue Tianhe activating the power of the Demonic Blood Beast, his strength had surpassed Wu Ling at this point. The colossal ape was constantly being pushed back from the fist of the Demonic Blood Beast.

From this scene, everyone understood that there was only one outcome to this confrontation.

Boom!

Another collision occurred, the Demonic Blood Beast was pushed back as a portion of blood-red scales on its arm shattered, while the huge ape was sent flying. Its colossal body rapidly shrank in midair, returning to a human form as it drew long marks on the Battle Stage in a miserable manner.

Wu Ling spat a mouthful of fresh blood, every single part of his clothes was tattered as he fixed his eyes on the Demonic Blood Beast, filled with unwillingness and sadness. He never expected Xue Tianhe to be at this level of power.

Up in the sky, the Demonic Blood Beast rapidly shrank as well and returned to the figure of Xue Tianhe. He gave a mocking glance at Wu Ling, he tugged his arms to his chest as he swept his gaze out and in the end, fixed his gaze onto Mu Chen and Luo Li. A savage smile rose up from the corner of his lips.

Seeing his provoking smile, Mu Chen narrowed both of his eyes as he slowly extended his hand out with his thump facing up and turning it down in the end.

Under the sunlight, the youth had a slender figure with a calm

expression. However, his gesture was filled with heart-trembling arrogance and overbearingness.

Chapter 611 – The Mirror of Judgement

Smoke gradually dissipated as the last Battle Stage put a closure to that intense battle.

Naturally, the outcome was certainly beyond everyone's expectations, since no one expected Wu Ling to lose. After all, amongst the eight Captains, in terms of fame, Wu Ling ranked third. But even so, he was still defeated, the cruel reality made many people inwardly sigh. The Great Spiritual Academy Tournament this time truly was too intense.

Every student of the Martial Spiritual Academy looked at one another as they felt a little depressed. The defeat of Wu Ling had a huge impact on their morale.

However, they all knew that Wu Ling was not to blame as he had already performed very well. After all, he even used the power of the Divine War Ape in the end, but who could have expected Xue Tianhe to have such similar powerful trump card hidden as well?

The Dean of the Martial Spiritual Academy had his brows furrowed in midair as he looked at Xue Tianhe's silhouette. He couldn't help letting out a cold snort, "Those from the clans are really detestable, wanting to stretch their hands to everything."

Looks like Wu Ling's defeat made this Wu Tianwang a little unhappy.

When the four other Deans by the side heard his words, they knew that he was unhappy. Thus, they kept their silence, since it was impossible for them to do something like removing the qualifications of Xue Tianhe. If they did, the Blood God Clan would definitely not let this matter rest so easily.

"Cough, since the Battle of the Best 8 has concluded, let's announce the next match." Dean Tiansheng of the Saint Spiritual Academy dryly coughed as he spoke with a faint laugh.

Although the strength displayed by Xue Tianhe truly was powerful, he had absolute confidence in Ji Xuan. Thus, he believed that their Saint Spiritual Academy could get the best results in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

The four Deans nodded at his words.

Seeing their reaction, Dean Tain Sheng waved his hand as his robust voice spread out like thunder in the sky, “The Battle of the Best 8 has ended, those in the Best 4 are the four strongest teams!”

“They will be the protagonists of this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament!”

“Saint Spiritual Academy!”

Along with Dean Tiansheng’s robust voice resounding, a brilliant pillar of light descends from the sky, enveloping Ji Xuan and his team under the countless gazes.

“Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!”

Another pillar of light fell as Mu Chen’s team of five quietly remained as the light shone onto their bodies, causing a light arc to appear on their bodies as the amount trembling and ocean-rolling cheers resounded. Amongst those cheers, the cheers from the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were the craziest.

“Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy!”

Another pillar of light descended, Wen Qingxuan’s left hand was tightly gripping her golden war spear with her hair draped down. Her right hand was on her slim waist, while the golden armour covered her voluptuous figure and wonderful curves. Her charming face had the similar pride of a phoenix and as her phoenix-like eyes moved, she emitted a startling charm.

Behind her, Pin’er, Le’er and the other two girls were all gorgeous flowers, attracting countless amounts of attention.

“Blood God Academy!”

The last pillar of light descended on the head of Xue Tianhe and his team with him standing at the front. He tugged both of his arms against his chest as he maintained a calm expression, except his cold gaze, which was constantly locked on Mu Chen.

The four pillars of light became the most focused of the entire heavens and earth. The four teams were undisputedly the strongest and no one would deny this point.

They had undergone half a year of the Elimination Round and in the Final Battle, they defeated opponents that were similarly powerful to stand in the position that they were in right now, receiving the earth-shattering cheers and admiring gazes.

“Since the Best 4 have emerged, the next confrontation will be even more fearsome. I wonder who will win.”

“I’m guessing that Ji Xuan of the Saint Spiritual Academy has the highest chance. The strength of this person is deep and unfathomable.”

“That’s hard to say, Wen Qingxuan of the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy is not an easy opponent. Don’t look at how normal she was from her performance in her battle, even Ji Xuan doesn't dare to belittle her.”

“Yeah, I’ve heard the Dean mention before that Wen Qingxuan is not simple.”

“Then, is Mu Chen of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy simple? Even Liu Qingyun lost to him and based on Liu Qingyun’s strength, he’s probably comparable to Wu Ling.”

“That Xue Tianhe as well. No one wouldn’t fear someone that could defeat Wu Ling.”

“This battle round for the Championship of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament is probably the most intense in the last century...”

Whispers that filled the air burst out. The strength of the four teams was simply too powerful and without going through the final battle, no one was able to predict who would win.

As the heavens and earth were filled with the mountain-trembling and ocean-rolling cheers, the four teams stood on the four respective Battle Stages quietly as they welcomed countless heated gazes. Their expressions, however, were calm, without any ripples in their hearts.

Any of the teams that could come this far were the strongest amongst all the Spiritual Academies. Thus, their hearts were also the hardest to be shaken.

“I wonder how the next battle will be conduct.” Shen Cangsheng looked at the three other teams as he spoke with a heavy expression. Every single one of those three teams was extremely powerful and any single one of them would probably be a tough battle for them.

“No matter who our next opponent is, we just have to do our best.” Mu Chen said with a faint smile.

“Since we have you and Luo Li, our burden will be easier.” Li Xuantong said with a smile as their team had two hearts, Mu Chen and Luo Li.

The two of them, one in the light, while the other stayed in the shadows. Perhaps many people were unaware, but this girl that had not shown any ability was actually a powerful figure that wasn’t inferior to the four other Captains.

When Mu Chen heard his comment, he couldn’t help staring at his team and just when he was about to speak, he suddenly felt something and he raised his head with his eyes narrowed.

At the same time, Luo Li, Ji Xuan, Wen Qingxuan and Xue Tianhe had also realised it as they raised their heads as well.

Their line-of-sights were directed at the horizon and up in the

horizon, space suddenly started to violently distort as a colossal object that was roughly a few thousand meters in size exited from the distorted space.

Hissssss.

When everyone saw that colossal object that broke out from the space, they couldn't refrain from sucking in a mouthful of air.

It was a bronze mirror that was roughly a few thousand meters. The rim of the bronze mirror was filled with extremely profound runes, ancient and obscure. The surface of the mirror was dark ash-grey as if it was covered in dust and could not be seen.

The instant the bronze mirror appeared, the space in this region showed signs of disorder, as if an incredibly powerful object that it could not withstand had appeared.

The bronze mirror quietly hovered in the sky. The surface of the mirror that was covered in dust gave off a feeling as if it could reflect anything that was in the Great Thousand World.

"That's..."

Shock was revealed in Mu Chen's eyes as he felt that the Great Meru Demonic Pillar within his body have fine trembles. Furthermore, he was even more stunned when there were slight ripples from the "Immortal Page".

"That's the Divine Artifact of the Five Great Spiritual Academies... the Mirror of Judgement."

Sword lights also uncontrollably surged out of Luo Li's hand as a sword cry rang out as if it was trying to struggle free from her hand to compete with the mysterious bronze mirror.

"The Mirror of Judgement?"

Hearing this name, everyone felt startled and even Mu Chen's gaze was complicated. Generally speaking, the Mirror of Judgement more or less had something to do with the fact that he

could enter the Spiritual Road and meet Luo Li, since the Mirror of Judgement that was before him selected the people that were qualified for the Spiritual Road.

“What rank of Divine Artifact is it?” Mu Chen looked at Luo Li as he asked with a soft voice.

“Probably above High Rank.” Luo Li said after a brief ponder.

Mu Chen inhaled a mouthful of air again. Above High-Rank Divine Artifact? Probably only those ancient clans with powerful foundations could possess such a powerful Divine Artifact, he never expected for it to appear in the Five Great Academies.

“Legend has it that this Mirror of Judgement has been handed down since the ancient times. The light ray from it could penetrate the barrier of any plane. When it shines onto a Lower Plane... no one can hide from its light.” Luo Li continued explaining.

“It is said that in the ancient times, the light of this Mirror of Judgement could even reduce Sovereign Realm experts to dust.”

“So dreadful?” Mu Chen’s heart shook. If that was the case, didn’t it mean that he could use this Mirror of Judgement to locate his mother?

However, the thought flashed for only a moment before it was dispelled. His mother had gone through so much effort in order to keep him hidden, if he went poking his nose around, it might be sensed by that mysterious clan. At the current moment, Mu Chen didn’t think that he had the qualifications to confront that clan.

“It’s just a legend... but this Mirror of Judgement seems to have undergone a tribulation during the ancient times and thus, it was damaged. It shouldn’t have any dreadful power anymore.” Luo Li spoke as she smiled.

“I wonder what the Five Great Deans are planning by suddenly summoning the Mirror of Judgement.” Su Xuan was a little confused as she spoke her doubts.

The Mirror of Judgement did not belong to any of the Spiritual Academies but shared amongst the five. It could only be summoned with the Five Great Deans acting at the same time.

“Is it for the Battle of the Best 4 next?” Shen Cangsheng spoke in astonishment.

“That should be the case.” Mu Chen and Luo Li exchanged looks as only this reason would explain it. Otherwise, the Five Great Deans would definitely not take this Divine Artifact out so easily.

Just when everyone was lost in their guessing and doubts, Dean Tiansheng of the Saint Spiritual Academy in midair revealed a light smile as he pointed towards the Mirror of Judgement as his robust voice rang out within everyone’s ears.

“All of your guesses are correct, the Battle of the Best 4 will be started by the Mirror of Judgement.

Rustle!

As he spoke, mountain-trembling and ocean-rolling cheers rang out in an instant, even Mu Chen and his team had shock in their eyes as they exchanged looks.

The Battle of the Best 4 seemed to be more and more interesting.

Chapter 612 – Sea of Judgement

The colossal ancient bronze mirror hovered in the horizon, distorting the surrounding space as space looked to be on the verge of shattering. As if the space couldn't withstand the Divine Artifact.

Everyone focused their gazes on the Mirror of Judgement as awe and surprise was revealed on their faces. It was probably the first time everyone had seen such a dreadful Divine Artifact of such a grade in their lives.

"What has the upcoming Battle of the Best 4 got to do with the Mirror of Judgement?"

"According to what Dean Tiansheng said, it should be the case…"

"Then, it's interesting."

"…"

Innumerable whispers spread out as many people were a little curious since the Battle of the Best 4 this time seemed a bit different. It was not the usual lottery method, but another method. However, this was precisely the reason why everyone had expectations for it.

After all, the Five Great Academies wouldn't normally take out a Divine Artifact like the Mirror of Judgement. Thus, it was a feast for their eyes.

Naturally, they were not the only ones curious, even the Best 4 teams were looking at the Mirror of Judgement in astonishment, since they had no idea how the Battle of the Best 4 would take place.

Under the myriad of looks, Dean Tiansheng stood with his hands behind his back and smiled, "In the Battle of the Best 4 coming up next, the four teams will enter the Mirror of Judgement, and you only have one objective, to walk out of the Mirror of Judgement."

“If not even one member of the team can successfully walk out, that team’s qualification will be seized, and their journey in the tournament will come to an end.”

The eyes of Mu Chen and the rest grew cold, since it looked like the test in the Mirror of Judgement had a dangerous possibility of total annihilation. Although it was controlled by the Five Great Deans and thus, there wouldn’t be any danger to one’s life, they would lose their qualifications to fight for the Championship.

“Have you all understood?” Dean Tiansheng slowly spoke as he looked at the four teams.

The four teams nodded at his words.

“Since that’s the case…” Dean Tiansheng slightly nodded his head as he looked at the four other Deans and continued, “Then, let’s open the Mirror of Judgement.”

The four Deans stood up at the same time and made a gripping gesture with their hands, four ancient bronze seals flew out from their hands as they radiated with light. The five lights exploded with high speed as they entered the surface of the Mirror of Judgement, which was covered in dust.

Buzz! Buzz!

A peculiar buzzing noise rang out between the heavens and earth as the huge Mirror of Judgement slowly started to rotate. As the Mirror of Judgement moved, the surrounding space started to shatter, revealing hideous-looking cracks and a pitch-black abyss.

With the Mirror of Judgement rotating, the surface of the mirror, which was covered in dust, slowly started to turn clear as a faint light was being emitted from it, seemingly capable of penetrating through the obstructions of space.

On the stage, the four teams were looking at the clear mirror with heavy expressions.

“Let’s go!”

Mu Chen deeply inhaled a mouthful of air, let out a bark and waved his hand; speaking nothing else.

Rustle!

When he finished speaking, his figure was the first to fly out, transforming into a light ray as he streaked across the horizon, and charged directly into the Mirror of Judgement, before disappearing into it. After him, Luo Li and the other three of his team closely followed behind.

At the same time when Mu Chen's team entered the Mirror of Judgement, the three remaining teams charged in without any hesitation as well.

As the four teams disappeared, the surface of the Mirror of Judgement radiated with brilliance, and a huge screen appeared, displaying the four teams.

Everyone widened their eyes as they looked at this region, the space where the Mirror of Judgement's test would take place.

...

When Mu Chen and his team entered the Mirror of Judgement, their eyes were blinded by the dazzling light for an instant, before it disappeared.

As the light dissipated, Mu Chen and his team raised their guard, Spiritual Energy covered them as they tensed their bodies and looked at the surroundings with vigilance.

After that, they couldn't help having their expressions changed.

The area which they were in seemed to be in the chaotic ocean depths. The ocean was extremely vast, since the end couldn't be seen, it was inscrutable.

Furthermore, there was a dreadful pressure that existed in this chaotic ocean, a pressure that made Mu Chen and his team feel their scalps tingling.

There was a faint sphere of light around their team, it was this sphere of light that isolated them from the chaotic ocean. But despite that, the indescribable pressure still continuously invaded in.

“This ocean... seems to be formed entirely from Spiritual Energy.” Mu Chen’s gaze closely looked at the chaotic ocean outside the sphere of light as he spoke with his eyes twitching.

Hearing his words, the faces of Shen Cangsheng and the rest instantly changed as they looked around the chaotic ocean with fear in their eyes. All of this was purely formed from Spiritual Energy? It formed an entire actual ocean, just how frightening was that?

Furthermore, what made their hearts jolt was the fact that they seemed to currently be in this Spiritual Energy ocean.

At the thought of that, the faces of Shen Cangsheng and the rest grew pale. Even if this Spiritual Energy ocean wasn’t controlled by anyone, the pressure itself was more than enough to suffocate them.

Mu Chen swept his eyes as he realised that there were three similar sphere of light, surrounding the three other teams. At this moment, they were also looking around at this unfamiliar place.

“In ten breaths time, the light shield that is protecting all of you will shatter. The end of this Spiritual Energy ocean is right above you, and in here, you are all allowed to execute any means you have. As long as you are able to reach the end, you will be able to walk out of the Mirror of Judgement. Similarly, the teams that a single member could not walk out will lose their qualifications.”

When Mu Chen was looking around, a robust voice suddenly rang out in their ears, it was the voice of Dean Tiansheng.

Hearing his voice, the eyes of Mu Chen and the rest narrowed as their bodies tensed up.

Ten breath's of time passed in a flash as the atmosphere within the light sphere made them feel suffocated.

Crack.

When ten breaths of time passed, the lights surrounding them dimmed as a cracking noise resounded, turning into sparks of light as the sphere dissipated.

As the light sphere shattered, the dreadful Spiritual Energy ocean swept forth, engulfing the five of them with the fearsome Spiritual Energy pressure that was mountain-trembling and ocean-rolling.

On the surface of Mu Chen's body, black lightning burst out in nearly an instant as it flickered, he had clearly activated his Lightning God's Physique. But even so, he still felt an instant of heaviness on his body as the terrifying pressure swept towards him from all directions, as if it was trying to tear his body into shreds from the pressure.

Beside him, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and Su Xuan had already circulated the Spiritual Energy in their bodies, forming a barrier on the surface of their skin. However, their bodies still felt tens of feet down, and their faces were a little red.

Only Luo Li was able to keep up with Mu Chen.

"What powerful Spiritual Energy pressure." Luo Li also wore a heavy expression, but fortunately, the Spiritual Energy ocean wasn't deliberately controlled to deal with them. Otherwise, they would suffer heavy injuries in an instant.

Mu Chen nodded in agreement as he looked into the distance, there was spiritual light as the three other teams had clearly used their full strength to resist the pressure of this Spiritual Energy ocean.

"Let's charge!"

Mu Chen looked above, but the end could not be seen from the chaotic colour. Looks like it isn't an easy task to get out of this

Spiritual Energy ocean.

It didn't matter how hard it was to get their way there or what would happen next, they had to leave this place, first.

"Okay." Luo Li lightly nodded her head.

Looking at it, Mu Chen inhaled a mouthful of air as the black lightning radiated even more on the surface of his body. On his chest, six lightning runes appeared at rapid speed as he stepped on the empty ground, a wave of air swept out as the liquid of Spiritual Energy exploded. At the same time, his figure was like black lightning as he charged up.

Black lightning was being released around him to resist the terrifying pressure coming from the Spiritual Energy ocean.

Luo Li followed behind Mu Chen as the Spiritual Energy on the surface of her body rapidly flowed. She was using a clever method to negate a part of the pressure and maintained her speed.

Not far away from the two, Shen Cangsheng and the other two clenched their teeth as they closely followed behind. This place made them feel as if they were deep in the mud as the Spiritual Energy in their bodies was being rapidly exhausted.

Far away, the three teams had also moved, fifteen light silhouettes were shuttling in the Spiritual Energy ocean, travelling at a rapid speed towards the end of the ocean.

That scene was clear to those outside the Mirror of Judgement, there were twenty light silhouettes that were quickly tearing through the chaotic Spiritual Energy ocean.

Although they weren't present in it, they could also sense the dreadful Spiritual Energy pressure emitted from the Mirror of Judgement, which made them feel inwardly startled. If it were them, they would probably not be able to move an inch forth, not to mention about reaching the end.

Up in midair, the Five Great Deans were also staring at the

Mirror of Judgement, but each of them had a different expression in their eyes as they looked at the twenty light silhouettes.

“Haha, I wonder how many people will be able to walk out of the Mirror of Judgement this time?” Dean Tiansong of the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy smiled as he spoke with interest.

“It’s not so easy to walk out of the Sea of Judgement.”

Dean Tiansheng faintly smiled as his abstract eyes were looking into the clear mirror as he slowly spoke, “I believe the number of people that could walk out from it won’t exceed the fingers on one’s hand…”

Chapter 613 – Miserable Loss

Whoosh!

Ten-plus light silhouettes were like fishes, flashing in the chaotic Spiritual Energy ocean with boundless Spiritual Energy fluctuating around them, resisting the dreadful pressure that was coming from all directions.

Compared to the speed outside, those ten-plus light silhouettes were clearly slower.

The Spiritual Energy pressure of this ocean had reached a terrifying level. If one wished to move forward, they would have to exhaust a large amount of their Spiritual Energy.

Thus, even if the four teams were peak experts, it was impossible for them to travel in the Spiritual Energy ocean without any obstructions.

Because of the Spiritual Energy pressure, there were members amongst the four teams that had started to reveal their strength in just a few minutes. Just like Mu Chen's team, Mu Chen and Luo Li charge in the front while Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong followed ten feet behind and Su Xuan was after them.

Although Shen Cangsheng and the rest had executed their Spiritual Energy to the limits, they still could not catch up to the two.

Likewise, the three other teams also had similar distances dragged apart.

Su Xuan was last, her face was flushed red at this moment as the Spiritual Energy on the surface of her body also became chaotic. She could feel that her Spiritual Energy couldn't hold out much longer.

"Do you need help?" Mu Chen transmitted his voice with his Spiritual Energy to Su Xuan's ears.

Su Xuan clenched her teeth as she shook her head, “Looks like I’ll have to drop out of the team. The rest will depend on you guys, don’t bother stopping because of me.”

She knew very well what she had to do, not to burden Mu Chen and the rest. After all, this test didn’t require all of them to pass through the Sea of Judgement. Only one of them had to make it out, and they would succeed.

Hearing her reply, Mu Chen and the rest hesitated for a brief moment, before nodding their heads in the end. Right now wasn’t the time for them to stop and help their teammates.

“Then, we’ll make a move first, you be careful.”

Mu Chen spoke as he inhaled a deep breath, the black lightning on the surface of his body radiated with more brilliance, he stomped his foot, causing the liquid Spiritual Energy beneath to explode as his speed increased.

Luo Li also quietly formed seals with her hands as a flowing light film was formed on the surface of her body. Although her method wasn’t as overbearing as Mu Chen’s, it was ingenious as it negated part of the Spiritual Energy pressure to maintain her speed.

Looking at the scene from the back, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong bitterly smiled. Although their situation was slightly better compared to Su Xuan, the Spiritual Energy in their bodies was rapidly being depleted. This also made them understand a fact, they would never be able to be on the same echelon as Mu Chen and Luo Li.

Rustle!

The four of them formed into two different echelons, one group at the front while the other remained behind.

A distance away, there was also a similar clear distinction. However, only the Captains of the three teams were in the first echelon.

Whoosh!

The sounds of the liquid Spiritual Energy being swept across was like the sound of water flowing as it resounded by their ears. Everyone's faces were filled with graveness as they maintained their alert in high speed. Although this Sea of Judgement looked rather calm, it gave them a feeling of unease.

As they thought about it, this Sea of Judgement might not be as simple as it looked.

Mu Chen's gaze faintly flickered as he stared at the calm Sea of Judgement and, in a split second, his pupils abruptly shrank as he vaguely sensed the surrounding liquid Spiritual Energy becoming more and more violent.

"Be cautious!" Mu Chen reminded with a heavy voice.

Just when he finished speaking, Luo Li's face changed as she hastily said, "Watch out below!"

Mu Chen's heart went cold as he saw a huge Spiritual Energy vortex suddenly appear at the bottom of the Spiritual Energy ocean as he swept his gaze. It was like a huge mouth opening that was devouring at their direction.

A powerful suction force came from the Spiritual Energy vortex, causing their speed to gradually slow down.

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were located below, and their faces instantly changed as they felt, under the suction force of the vortex, their speed becoming as slow as a snail. Not only that, they were also slowly moving back bit by bit.

"Damn it!"

The faces of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong instantly turned ugly as they circulated their Spiritual Energy to the limits. Despite that, they saw the vortex rotating faster to the point that it was even getting close to them.

“You go first!”

Li Xuantong furrowed his brows as he grabbed onto Shen Cangsheng’s arm and threw him forth, whereas he was sent flying back from the opposing force and was devoured by the vortex.

Borrowing that force, Shen Cangsheng was able to break free of the Spiritual Energy vortex for the time being. However, he still had a bitter expression on his face as that method was just a temporary delay.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

The instant Mu Chen and his team encountered trouble, so did the other teams. Large Spiritual Energy vortices were like oceanic beasts as the burst of suction forces devoured all those silhouettes behind.

Everyone felt their scalps were a little numb at this moment as they knew that the Sea of Judgement was finally revealing its power.

Rustle!

Everyone accelerated their speed to the limits as they rapidly travelled through the liquid Spiritual Energy as they tried their best to break free from being devoured by the pressing vortices.

Shen Cangsheng had also pushed his Spiritual Energy to his limit, his face was flushed red as the boundless Spiritual Energy that was spread around him was pushing away the pressuring Spiritual Energy liquid.

Just as he was trying his best to resist, he finally broke free from the approaching Spiritual Energy vortex. The instant the suction force disappeared, Shen Cangsheng felt relieved and couldn’t help himself from cursing, “That damnable thing!”

“Watch out!”

However, just when he felt relieved, Mu Chen’s bark suddenly

rang in his ears.

Shen Cangsheng turned his head, he saw the chaotic Spiritual Energy ripples at his right formed into a peculiar vortex, and he was devoured by it before he could even react.

Mu Chen and Luo Li exchanged looks, since they never expected the two of them to be the only ones left in less than ten minutes. But fortunately, the loss of the other teams was even greater, only the four Captains were left from a total of fifteen people.

But at this point in time, they didn't have the mood to think about that as they could sense that this Sea of Judgement had been thoroughly awakened. Violent liquid Spiritual Energy started to sweep in multiple layers as densely-packed Spiritual Energy vortices appeared. The vortices were like huge mouths as they tried to devour them.

At this point in time, it was tough to advance. Not only did they have to resist the dreadful Spiritual Energy pressure, they still had to be alert against the Spiritual Energy vortices that randomly appeared around them.

Under this harsh environment, even Mu Chen had his forehead covered with beads of sweat in less than five minutes.

And outside of the Mirror of Judgement, many people were dumbfounded as they looked at the five miserable figures in the Sea of Judgement. There would be Spiritual Energy vortices appearing beside them from time to time, making them frightened as they watched. It truly was not an easy task to pass through the Sea of Judgement.

"Shit, Mu Chen fell into the Spiritual Energy vortex as well." In the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy region, Ye Qingling's face abruptly change when she saw Mu Chen's advancing figure being devoured by a vortex before he could even evade.

"A Spiritual Energy vortex of such level is still insufficient to trap

him, don’t worry.” Ling Xi spoke.

As she spoke, Ye Qingling and the rest saw brilliant black lightning suddenly exploded from Mu Chen’s body as his speed surged, escaping from the Spiritual Energy vortex and only then, did they feel relieved.

“However, the Spiritual Energy vortices will only get stronger and stronger. If he were to fall into one again, it might be troublesome.” Ling Xi slowly spoke as her gorgeous eyes looked at the Mirror of Judgement.

When Ye Qingling and the rest heard her words, they couldn’t help having their hearts lifted.

Within the chaotic Sea of Judgement.

“Are you alright?” Luo Li quickly inquired as she looked at Mu Chen, who had just escaped from the Spiritual Energy vortex.

Mu Chen shook his head as seven lightning runes appeared on his chest. Clearly, he had pushed his Lightning God’s Physique to the limits just to break free from the Spiritual Energy vortex.

“Be careful, the Spiritual Energy vortices are getting stronger and stronger.” Mu Chen reminded. The scale of the vortex that appeared earlier had already reached a few hundred feet, the Spiritual Energy in it was violent to a fearsome extent. If he were to fall in it again, even if he could make it out, it would definitely be after a huge exhaustion.

Even he might not be able to last long if it occurred a few more times.

“Their situation shouldn’t be too good as well.” Luo Li spoke as she glanced at the three silhouettes in the distance.

Mu Chen nodded his head as black lightning exploded beneath his feet, increasing his speed. Seeing his actions, Luo Li immediately followed.

The two of them helped one another, and although it was alarmingly dangerous, it was fortunately only alarming and not dangerous. Vaguely, their speeds were ahead of the other three.

In the distance away, Ji Xuan tapped his toe as he mysteriously dodged a Spiritual Energy vortex and he gave a dark glance at Mu Chen and Luo Li's silhouettes.

Right now, amongst the four teams, only the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had two people remaining. If the two of them could maintain it, perhaps it might not be too beneficial for the rest of them.

Ji Xuan's gaze flashed as he looked at another direction with an obscure gaze where Xue Tianhe was at.

The gazes of those two intertwined for a brief moment and unnoticeably nodded their heads, a smear of eerie chill flashed across their eyes.

Chapter 614 – Super Vortex

Whoosh!

Mu Chen and Luo Li's figures travelled like fishes swimming in the chaotic Sea of Judgement. Their silhouettes were extremely agile as they instantly flashed, accelerating their speeds at the same time as they dodged the endlessly appearing Spiritual Energy vortices.

However, the pressure from the chaotic ocean was simply too powerful as any action would exhaust much more Spiritual Energy compared to outside. Thus, even the condition of Mu Chen and Luo Li was greatly reduced from the high depletion.

Sweat started to form on the forehead of those two, but the two of them still kept high concentration as they didn't dare to loosen up as the number of Spiritual Energy vortices was constantly increasing in numbers. Furthermore, the frequency of them appearing was also increasingly faster, making it inscrutable.

The moment they fall into a Spiritual Energy vortex, even if they could break free from it, it would still exhaust a large amount of their Spiritual Energy, and the end of this Sea of Judgement still couldn't be seen. The moment their Spiritual Energy was fully depleted, it was basically impossible to advance any further.

Poof.

Another Spiritual Energy vortex with the size of around a hundred feet appeared on the right in front of them, the vortex was spinning as though it was like a mouth of a savage beast that was trying to devour the two of them.

Black lightning exploded off the surface of Mu Chen's body as he flashed past it at lightning speed, dodging the range of the vortex.

Whereas Luo Li stood on the Luo God Sword as piercing Sword Intent was being emitted, the sharpness of it even tore apart the

Spiritual Energy, creating an empty space which allowed her to travel through.

After dodging that vortex, Mu Chen lightly spat out a mouthful of air. After maintaining this for half an hour, his body was getting more and more used to the Spiritual Energy pressure. But even so, despite the strength of his physical body, he felt faint stinging pain on his skin, which the rest was probably withstanding with their robust Spiritual Energy.

But even so, it wasn't a permanent solution as he could sense that the surrounding pressure was rapidly getting stronger and stronger as time passed.

Furthermore, they did not dare to use any intensive method when resisting the pressure as the Spiritual Energy here was extremely chaotic, the instant there was an intense Spiritual Energy fluctuation, it would only fuel a larger vortex.

Thus, they were all exceptionally careful as they advanced.

"The Spiritual Energy pressure here is getting stronger, perhaps the exit will appear soon." Luo Li spoke in a soft voice as she moved closer to Mu Chen.

Even with their strength, it was getting hard to endure the Spiritual Energy pressure. However, the Five Great Deans would not have set up a test that exceeded their limits. Otherwise, it was basically impossible for anyone to escape the Sea of Judgement.

Mu Chen lightly nodded his head, his shifted his gaze in an instant, looking a short distance away at his left and right, where Ji Xuan, Wen Qingxuan and Xue Tianhe were rapidly advancing.

Due to the reason of the vortices becoming more and more densely-packed, the distance between the five of them was also pulled closer.

Wen Qingxuan also took notice of them as well as she waved her hand towards their direction with a charming smile on her face,

which was extremely attractive.

Luo Li returned her smile, and so did Mu Chen.

The silhouettes of the five people had turned into streaks of light as they rapidly advanced with all sorts of methods. But, generally speaking, there wasn't a considerable distance between the five of them as they chased after one another.

Mu Chen had also exerted his Lightning God's Physique to his limits as black lightning was constantly flickering on the surface of his body. However, the lightning did not last for a long time, before it was suppressed back into his body by the powerful Spiritual Energy pressure, sending piercing pains to himself.

In the beginning, the piercing pain made Mu Chen feel extremely annoyed, since it prevented him from being focused on sensing those vortices that instantly appeared, causing numerous situations where he was nearly sucked into one of those Spiritual Energy vortices.

However, that frustration only lasted for a brief moment, before he was startled when he vaguely felt a sour numbing sensation from the piercing pain, it was similar to when he was refining his physique with lightning.

Thus, he felt fine increments in the strength of his physique from the sour numbing sensation.

That discovery made him rather startled, and after further examination, he understood what was going on. It turns out that when the black lightning on the surface was being pressured back into his body, the lightning would travel through his muscles along with the pressure. It was precisely this refining method that made him feel the sour numbing sensation.

"So that's how it is."

Mu Chen suddenly saw the light of it as he never expected for the pressure to have such a miraculous effect.

“I can use it to refine my physique a little to increase my strength.” Mu Chen’s heart moved as he intended to try and use this energy to increase his strength a little. Thinking about it, he no longer hesitated as he slightly focused and loosen up his body to resist the Spiritual Energy pressure.

Just when Mu Chen was gradually submerging into his mind to use the pressure to refine his body, he failed to notice that as Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe were dodging the vortices, they were secretly getting closer to them.

They got closer very faintly to the point that even Luo Li had not noticed them as they had been travelling at high speed trying to dodge the endless Spiritual Energy vortices.

Thus, when Luo Li started to notice that Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe had been getting closer and closer to them, they were already a hundred feet away from them.

Caution rose in Luo Li’s eyes. Regarding being cautious, she wasn’t any inferior to Mu Chen. After all, she was the next Empress of the Luo God Clan, regardless of anything; thus, her guard for others was only superior and not weaker to Mu Chen.

But, clearly, Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe came prepared as they smiled the moment they saw the caution in Luo Li’s eyes, except for the fact that their smiles were a little vicious and eerie.

Boom!

Boundless Spiritual Energy burst forth from the two of them in a near instant. Due to the movement of their Spiritual Energy, the Sea of Judgement within a thousand feet in radius started to go violent.

The Spiritual Energy liquid in this region was extremely violent to begin with, and due to the commotion, it was like adding oil to the fire as an area of a thousand feet in radius started to tremble.

Buzz! Buzz!

Spiritual Energy fluctuations rippled out as a colossal vortex was quickly forming, the size of it nearly spread out to this vast region.

Luo Li's face changed at this moment.

Whoosh!

However, before she could take any action, two surges of Spiritual Energies swept out from Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe's hands. However, the two surges of Spiritual Energy wasn't aimed at Mu Chen or Luo Li, but on themselves.

Boom! Boom!

Spiritual Energy exploded as a dozen vortices were quickly forming around Mu Chen and Luo Li, instantly engulfing them. Furthermore, due to the reason that the vortices were too close to each other, they were rapidly fusing together, forming into a gigantic vortex.

"You guys!"

Wen Qingxuan noticed their actions at this moment, and her face changed. The size of the Spiritual Energy vortex was too big that it nearly engulfed all of them.

Rustle!

Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe retreated, and at the same time, they were constantly flicking their fingers as numerous Spiritual Energy waves were shot out, making this already violent region even more dreadful.

At this Sea of Judgement, the Spiritual Energy was exceptionally sensitive and violent, adding to the fact that they timed their actions at the right time and acted out without any hesitation when Mu Chen and Luo Li were in the most sensitive area.

The two of them were extremely vicious as they unleashed the Spiritual Energy in their bodies without any restraints, causing the size of that vortex to be well over a thousand feet in radius,

forming a super vortex.

Furthermore, all five of them was in the range of the vortex; however, Mu Chen and Luo Li were in the central area of it.

“Let’s go!”

Seeing as the Spiritual Energy vortex was formed, Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe both made a grasp with their hands without any pause as an ancient jade appeared in their hands, before immediately crushing them.

The two ancient jades were crushed as the space around the two of them faintly distorted, and in a flash, their silhouettes disappeared. When they reappeared, they were already a thousand feet away and dodged the engulfing radius of the super vortex.

Clearly, the two of them were well-prepared.

At the same time, Wen Qingxuan glanced at them in hatred as she formed seals with her hands. Golden light spread out and instantly formed into large golden wings behind her.

Boom!

The wings flapped as her speed accelerated, escaping the restriction of the super vortex as she flew out. Her position was towards the edge of it, and thus, she didn’t have to spend too much energy to escape from it.

When she escaped from it, she anxiously looked at the centre of the vortex as the two silhouettes were becoming more and more blurred.

Mu Chen, who was still submerged in his mind, was startled awake in the central region of the vortex. He looked around and instantly understood what was going on as his face turned dark.

Those two fellows are have not given up their vicious designs.

“What should we do?” Luo Li had constantly been resisting the terrifying suction force coming from the super vortex as she spoke

towards Mu Chen in an anxious tone, “If this goes on, we’ll be sucked into it.”

Mu Chen deeply inhaled a mouthful of air as his black pupils were filled with chill.

“It’s already impossible to resist the suction force, and if this goes on, we’ll be finished.” Mu Chen continued further, “I’ll send you out!”

Luo Li was slightly startled as she bit her rosy lips, “You still have a fight with Ji Xuan, and you shouldn’t be absent from it this time. So I’ll send you out!”

As she spoke, she held onto Mu Chen’s wrist, but before she could exert any force, Mu Chen flipped around and held onto hers instead as a smear of a smile appeared on his face.

“Indeed, this battle belongs to me, but trust me, I am not that weak… wait for me to come out!”

Spiritual Energy exploded from Mu Chen’s palm as the force pushed Luo Li out. The girl’s crystal-clear eyes were staring at Mu Chen, before she clenched her teeth in the end as her foot tapped on the empty ground beneath her. A torrential piercing Sword Aura burst out of the Luo God Sword. The Sword Aura wrapped around her silhouette as it tore through the layers of Spiritual Energy liquid and escaped the super vortex.

When Luo Li escaped from the super vortex, Mu Chen’s figure was sucked into the Spiritual Energy vortex from the dreadful suction force as he disappeared.

Chapter 615 – Best 4

That heart-stirring scene in the Sea of Judgement was clearly shown on the surface of the mirror as innumerable students had their eyes widened from the sudden changes that followed with an earth-shattering commotion.

“That Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe are so vicious!”

“What vicious method and with that, Mu Chen is actually eliminated, he was a potential Champion…”

“It can’t be considered vicious. After all, Dean Tiansheng had mentioned before that any means can be used. Mu Chen can only blame his own carelessness.”

“But there’s no honour in winning through this method.”

“What a pity…”

Countless clamours rose, some showed disdain, and there was some showing support. In an instant, this vast space became rowdy.

“That Ji Xuan is really shameless!” Naturally, the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were the most enraged as every single one of them had an ashen expression from anger. Originally, their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had the advantage as Mu Chen and Luo Li still remained, but now that Mu Chen was being schemed at, only Luo Li remained; thus, their advantage no longer existed.

“What despicable fellows!” Yu Xi raged as her face was filled with anger.

Ye Qingling and the rest softly sighed. Who could have expected Ji Xuan to be so despicable to attack at such a moment? However, they too, understood that it wasn’t a violation of the rules.

“No worries, even if Big Brother Mu Chen can’t take part in the

next battle, Big Sister Luo Li still remains, she definitely won't let Ji Xuan succeed." Sun'er comforted everyone.

Ling Xi's brows were also slightly knitted at this moment, since she could feel the pressure coming from the super vortex as she looked at the Mirror of Judgement. Not even a Third Grade Spirit Disaster might be able to escape from that vortex.

And Mu Chen's strength was only at the First Grade Spirit Disaster, the possibility of him making it out was too dim.

"That Ji Xuan is a disaster." Ling Xi's face was cold as a smear of killing intent flashed across her eyes.

The entire region went into a clamour at this instance. When the Five Great Deans witnessed that scene, Dean Tai Cang's face was a little dark as he coldly looked at Dean Tiansheng, who had a faint smile hanging on his face.

Dean Tai Cang's hands were tightly clenched in his sleeves as he suppressed the rage in his heart bit by bit, since he knew that there was nothing he could do, even if he raged. Although Ji Xuan's method was despicable, it was still within the rules.

"We can only depend on Luo Li, then."

Dean Tai Cang softly sighed in his heart. Fortunately, their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wasn't fully kicked out. Although they had lost Mu Chen, they still had Luo Li and the girl's background wasn't weak as well. Furthermore, she hid her strength, so there was still a chance for their academy.

...

The Sea of Judgement.

Wen Qingxuan was outside the super vortex as she anxiously looked at it. Not far away from her, Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe stood with faint smiles on their faces as their teamwork this time was perfect.

Whoosh!

As they smiled, a piercing break of wind came from the vortex, and a silhouette tore her way out, and in a flash, she appeared outside the super vortex, it was Luo Li.

Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe were a little surprised when they saw Luo Li making it out, but their expressions remained unchanged as they had already achieved their motive of dealing with Mu Chen.

“Luo Li!”

Wen Qingxuan rejoiced when she saw Luo Li making it out.

Rustle!

However, Luo Li’s face was covered in chill at this moment. She did not reply to Wen Qingxuan as she formed sword seals with her hand, and her Luo God Sword flew out. Two extremely sharp Sword Auras tore their way through the boundless Spiritual Energy liquid as they flew towards the two people.

The gazes of Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe changed when they saw Luo Li attacking without any words. They waved their sleeves as boundless Spiritual Energy swept out, colliding together with the Sword Aura.

Boom!

Spiritual Energy ripples wreaked havoc as it split the Spiritual Energy liquid in this region apart.

Luo Li’s face was covered in frost as she grasped her hand, the Luo God Sword appeared in her hand as she unleashed her powerful Spiritual Energy. Clearly, she had intended to go all-out.

“Luo Li, do you think that you can confront the both of us with just you alone?” Ji Xuan spoke in a dark tone as he saw how forceful Luo Li was being.

“Haha, no wonder you are the next Empress of the Luo God Clan, that’s some guts you have there.” Xue Tianhe eerily smiled as he

looked at Luo Li with mockery. If the latter intended to fight the both of them with her alone, she probably might not even gain any advantage, even though she possesses the Luo God Sword.

“Luo Li, don’t be rash.”

Wen Qingxuan flew over as she appeared beside Luo Li, holding onto the latter’s arm as she spoke seriously, “This is not the place to fight.”

Luo Li’s gaze was cold as she stared at the two people. She tightly gripped the Luo God Sword as killing intent was unleashed from her body without any restraints.

“Luo Li, all sorts of means is allowed in the Sea of Judgement, he can only be blamed for being careless to end up in that situation.”

When he saw the coldness in Luo Li’s pupils, rage rose a little in his heart as he sneered, “I’m doing it for his own sake. If he doesn’t even have this little mindset, he can only be a small figure, and the path of an expert is not for him.”

“Do you really think that I don't dare to act here?” Luo Li’s clear ice-cold voice had no emotion as the concentrated cold intent in her voice made the surrounding liquid Spiritual Energy fluctuate.

“Ji Xuan, if you guys want to fight here, then we’ll give it a go!” Wen Qingxuan spoke as she made a grasping gesture and a golden war spear appeared.

She was also disgusted by Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe’s earlier method and adding the layer of relationship she had with Luo Li, Wen Qingxuan would definitely not allow the two of them to gang up on Luo Li.

Seeing the posture of the two girls, Ji Xuan slightly narrowed his eyes. He was still rather fearful of the two girls before him, if they were to fight in this Sea of Judgement, not a single one of them could escape if they created even more dreadful Spiritual Energy vortices and he wasn’t willing to halt his steps here.

“Haha, Mu Chen does have some good fortune with girls.” Xue Tianhe laughed indifferently, containing a little mockery. Naturally, deep within his mockery, there was the unavoidable jealousy of a man. After all, the two girls before him were so outstanding to the point that even he was moved, and right now they were protecting Mu Chen, which made him feel uneasy.

“If he is that capable, then let him charge out himself. Otherwise, he won’t even have a chance to fight me.”

Ji Xuan faintly smiled as he glanced at Luo Li, “If you want to help him fight back, then wait till we’re out of the Mirror of Judgement. No matter what you want, I will accompany you till the end.”

When he finished speaking, Ji Xuan no longer spoke any further as he turned around and flew towards the end of the Sea of Judgement at high speed and Xue Tianhe immediately followed behind upon seeing the former’s actions.

Seeing the departure of the two, Wen Qingxuan stored her golden war spear as she helplessly sighed, while looking at Luo Li’s ice-cold face. Who could have expected Mu Chen’s steps to stop here?

“That fellow...” Wen Qingxuan tilted her head as she glanced at the super vortex. The suction force from it made her expression heavy. If she were to fall into it, even she might not even be able to break free.

“He will break free.” Luo Li said softly.

Wen Qingxuan bitterly smiled and didn’t know how to reply to her. If any of them were to fall into the super vortex, the chances of making it out were too low.

“Doesn’t matter if he can make it out, we should get going, or are you going to let Ji Xuan seize the Championship?” Wen Qingxuan spoke as she looked at Luo Li.

Luo Li narrowed her eyes as she looked at the super vortex and nodded her head in the end. Indeed, it wasn't the time for her to stop right now. If Mu Chen couldn't make it out, then she would have to obstruct Ji Xuan.

Luo Li bit her lips as she loosened her grip on the Luo God Sword, stepping onto it as Sword Aura whistled, carrying her flying figure out as her long radiant hair lightly fluttered, the scene was extremely gorgeous.

Wen Qingxuan also glanced at the super vortex with a complicated look, before following from behind.

There weren't any more waves in the Sea of Judgement after that. Although the pressure was getting stronger, the four of them possessed extraordinary strength after all; thus, they were able to endure it.

Another ten minutes passed under the endurance, and a peculiar fluctuation appeared in the chaotic ocean. A lustrous door appeared at the end.

Looking at the light door, the four people felt relieved as they finally made it to the end. Otherwise, their Spiritual Energy might be thoroughly depleted.

Whoosh!

The four streaks of light flew as they charged into the light door without any hesitation.

The Mirror of Judgement quietly floated on top of the Golden Battle Stage.

Tsssssssiii

Under the innumerable gazes, brilliant light burst from the Mirror of Judgement as four silhouettes flew out from the light and hovered in the air.

When the four silhouettes appeared, mountain-trembling and

ocean-rolling cheers rang out between the heavens and earth.

Four whole teams entered the Mirror of Judgement, and in the end, only four people made it out! Such a cruel competition trembled their hearts.

“Indeed, Mu Chen isn’t here…”

There were sighs of regret when many people did not see a silhouette amongst the four silhouettes. Who could have expected that a dark horse without any obstructions before him would fall in the end?

“Next… I’m afraid that it will be the Battle of the Best 4.”

Countless gazes shot up into the sky, at the four silhouettes that hovered in the air. When they exited the Mirror of Judgement, their exhausted Spiritual Energy had instantly recovered. The speed was several times faster compared to before they entered. Clearly, coming out of the Mirror of Judgement was beneficial to them.

Luo Li stood on her sword and under the earth-shattering cheers, her gaze was fixed onto the Mirror of Judgement, before she let out a sigh in the end and slowly clenched her fist.

Mu Chen, you must make it out. You have waited three years for this battle, so you must not be absent!

Chapter 616 – Battle of the Best 4

Creeeeaaak

Deep in the super vortex, the Spiritual Energy liquid was rapidly spinning, the dreadful power of it could even tear a Third Grade Spirit Disaster to shreds.

At the same time, there was light being emitted from the depths of the vortex, a silhouette was seen in a seated posture as black lightning was violently flickering on the surface of his body, there were also vague thunderous sounds spreading out.

The silhouette that was seated in the super vortex was Mu Chen.

Right now, his situation was clearly not optimistic because he had pushed his Lightning God's Physique to the limits. But even so, he was in a miserable state due to the dreadful pressure coming from all directions.

Fresh blood could clearly be seen oozing out from the pores of his skin, it was a sign that his physique could not withstand that pressure. Even with his Septa Rune Lightning Physique, he was having trouble with the energy from the super vortex.

Poof.

A mouthful of blood spewed from his mouth as fresh blood flowed from the corner of his lips, adding a hint of savage touch to his handsome face. He extended his hand as he slowly wiped the blood off the corner of his lips.

His black pupils were filled with a chill, there wasn't the slightest bit of fear contained within them.

"Indeed, it's a little hard to endure." Mu Chen's voice was a little hoarse due to the terrifying pressure, as if his throat was injured.

He slightly raised his head, every single scene that was captured by his eyes was the liquid form of Spiritual Energy rotating at high

speed with terrifying pressure being emitted from it.

He was able to feel the intense piercing pain coming from every single direction of his body, and the sensation was gradually getting stronger, showing that even with the strength of his physique, even he might not be able to last for long.

The instant he fell into unconsciousness, he would be transported out of the Mirror of Judgement and thus, losing his chance to participate in the Battle of the Best 4, it was a situation that he would absolutely not let happen.

“Since my strength is not strong enough…”

The youth raised his head. Due to his age, he still looked a little green; however, there was firmness between his brows that was rarely seen on a youth’s face.

He pursed his lips as he clenched his fist, his gaze also sharpened with a frosted look.

“Then, let’s get stronger!”

The main reason why he had Luo Li leave first was due to him not wanting her to enter such dangerous grounds, whereas he remained. But he still had other thoughts in his heart.

Although the Spiritual Energy pressure of this Sea of Judgement was terrifying, it also seemed to be beneficial to his cultivation under that pressure. But, naturally, the requirement was him being able to endure the pain brought from that pressure.

In this vortex, opportunity and danger existed at the same time.

Using the threat of near-death, a person could reach his peak, and at that time, it was naturally the best chance for a breakthrough.

Seeking wealth within danger, in this world, there wasn’t any strength that came without any price, this was what Mu Chen had always believed. In the Spiritual Road, the Northern Spiritual

Realm and the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the reason why he was able to stand out and succeed was not because of that so-called talent of his, but sharpening himself through the dangers.

“Luo Li, I will definitely not be absent this time.”

Mu Chen lightly smiled and, shortly after, he slowly closed his eyes as both of his hands formed seals, and at the same time, the black lightning that covered his entire body rapidly disappeared.

As the lightning disappeared, the torrent of violent liquid Spiritual Energy rushed over along with dreadful impact.

The horrifying pain came, and Mu Chen could feel his body being torn apart by the violent impacts. No matter how intense the pain was, he still retained a strand of consciousness. Black lightning constantly travelled through his muscles and bones as the black lightning, which was pressured by the dreadful pressure to the point that there was nowhere else to go, was forced back into his muscles and bones.

As the intense pain continued, Mu Chen’s flesh, bones and meridians were getting stronger bit by bit under the refinement of black lightning.

The youth sat within the darkness as his body was gradually being covered by the fresh blood that was oozing from his skin, forming into thick layers of dried blood, completely covering him.

All sorts of fluctuations were cut off, as if the vitality of the figure within the dried blood was erased.

When Mu Chen was engulfed by darkness and intense pain, the atmosphere outside the Mirror of Judgement rose to the limits by the mountain-trembling and ocean-rolling cheers.

Countless people were looking at the four figures on the Golden Battle Stage with excited gazes. No matter how many dark horses appeared along the way, there were only four that were able to

stand there in the end.

They represented the pinnacle of all Spiritual Academies.

Even if someone had used a method that they did not acknowledge, they inwardly sighed in the end from their strength and talent. Comparing their achievements to many other geniuses, they were dull.

“Mu Chen actually lost.” Outside the Golden Battle Stage, Wu Ling couldn’t help sighing as he looked at the four silhouettes on the Battle Stage with a slightly pale complexion.

Behind him, Wu Yingying was biting her rosy lips as she had no mood. She was blankly looking at the Mirror of Judgement as if she was expecting something.

“Stop looking…” Wu Ling bitterly laughed as he continued, “Mu Chen is already very formidable, he was only schemed by Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe. Those two fellows are extremely powerful, and it doesn’t matter if they did it intentionally or not, it isn’t injustice for Mu Chen to fall for it.”

“Furthermore, Luo Li is still there, and she is not simple. Even I might not be her opponent if we fight seriously. With her present, it will not be easy for Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe to obtain the Championship.”

Wu Yingying listlessly nodded her head with a dejected look, causing Wu Ling to roll his eyes upon looking at her. Even when he lost to Xue Tianhe earlier, she didn’t look so hurt.

“Mu Chen…”

Tang Qian’er’s face turned pale at the region occupied by the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy. She found it a little hard to believe that this youth, who, despite being a little younger than her, was so dependable and never admits defeat, would halt his steps here.

Although that youth always had a gentle expression and smile on

his face, she knew that it wasn't because he could turn a blind eye to all those setbacks, it was that he could stand up every single time he fell and straighten his body upright.

Perhaps he could still smile from this failure, but the thought of that smile made her feel heartache.

"Mu Chen, come out, you definitely must."

The young girl put her hands together as she prayed in her heart.

Up in midair, the Five Great Deans were looking at the four silhouettes that came out of the Mirror of Judgement.

Dean Tai Cang sighed in his heart as he originally thought that Mu Chen could last till the end and never imagined for such an unforeseen event to occur. Fortunately, at least their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy didn't lose completely, since Luo Li was still present.

"Haha, Four Deans, now that we have four people, I feel that we should begin the Battle of the Best 4, right?" Dean Tiansheng smiled as he looked at the four remaining Deans.

Dean Tai Cang knitted his brows as he said, "Dean Tiansheng, aren't you a little too quick to start the next match?"

"Haha, what is there to be quick about? Since the results are already evident, are you perhaps waiting for someone to appear?" Dean Tiansheng laughed. "Furthermore, according to the rules, as long as the true Champion has yet to appear, anyone that can escape from the Mirror of Judgement can still participate as usual."

Dean Tai Cang understood, although he knew that the chances were small, he was still a little unwilling in his heart. After all, the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament this time was extremely crucial to their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If the Champion title falls to the Saint Spiritual Academy again, they would have the qualifications to ascend as the Academy Head, and

once Dean Tiansheng held the position of Academy Head, their academy may be kicked out of the Five Great Academies with the excuse of poor results all these years.

“Then, let’s begin.”

Dean Tai Cang had no choice but to nod his head as he had no reason to object at this point in time.

“Dean Tai Cang is indeed understanding.” Dean Tiansheng smiled as he looked at the four silhouettes on the Battle Stage as his thunderous and robust voice rang out between the heavens and earth.

“Firstly, I would like to congratulate the four of you who were able to ascend to the Best 4, obtaining the qualifications to fight for the Championship of this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.”

“Next up will be the Battle of the Champion. There aren’t any rules, it doesn’t matter how you fight, the last one standing on the Battle Stage will become the Champion.”

Rustle!

Innumerable people broke out into a commotion as their hearts shook. It turned out that there wasn’t any lottery to determine their opponents, but having the four of them fight amongst themselves. Were they going for a battle royale?

The gazes of those four on stage slightly flickered.

“My announcement is complete. The main show of the tournament will now begin, the Battle of the Champion!”

As Dean Tiansheng finished his speech, everyone could feel the atmosphere on the Battle Stage instantly tensing up.

Everyone widened their eyes as all of them wished to know how the battle royale of those four would end.

Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe exchanged a glance in midair under the attention of everyone as they lightly smiled, both of their figures

flashed and landed on a vast Battle Stage each.

Xue Tianhe shot his gaze towards the young girl in midair, who was as cold as snow and her silvery hair fluttered in the wind as a cold sneer was revealed in his eyes.

“Blood God Academy – Xue Tianhe seeks the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s guidance.”

On another stage, Ji Xuan lightly smiled as well as he cupped his hands and his voice rang out, “Saint Spiritual Academy – Ji Xuan seeks the guidance of the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy!”

Chapter 617 – Luo Li battles Xue Tianhe

“Blood God Academy – Xue Tianhe seeks the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s guidance.”

“Saint Spiritual Academy – Ji Xuan seeks the guidance of the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy!”

When the two’s voices rang out from the vast Golden Battle Stage, a commotion broke out in this region as innumerable people were startled in their hearts as the scene before them clearly showed that Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe had formed an alliance.

Ji Xuan VS Wen Qingxuan

Xue Tianhe VS Luo Li

The battle formation caused excitement to fill the eyes of everyone as their blood flow increased as well. Right before their eyes, those four were all noble phoenixes and dragons among men.

“Senior Sister Wen Qingxuan, go for it! Defeat Ji Xuan!”

“Luo Li go for it, our entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy supports you!”

“Two beauties, go for it! We of the Nine Ridge Spiritual Academy supports the both of you!”

“Our Spring Spiritual Academy as well!”

“…”

An earth-shattering amount of cheers rang out between the heavens and earth. Truth be told, the popularity of Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan far surpassed Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe. After all, there were so many Spiritual Academies here, and aside from the Saint Spiritual Academy and a small number of people supporting the other two, the cheers were basically one-sided for the other party.

Clearly, compared to Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe, it undoubtedly felt better for them to support the two pleasing girls.

Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe lightly smiled in this situation as they weren't too surprised by the fact that Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan were more popular than them.

However, the Battle of the Champion was not a competition to compete for popularity.

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan exchanged a glance in midair as they both nodded and their silhouettes moved, separately moving towards the Golden Battle Stage of Xue Tianhe and Ji Xuan.

The two graceful girls stood tall, with one wielding a golden war spear and the other wearing a long sword, their fine hair fluttered in the wind as they looked extremely gorgeous. The appearance of those two made many others hold their breath. After that, a supportive cheer that was even more startling rang out.

Under the cheers, Luo Li was staring at the blood-coloured robed figure before her with a little chill in her crystal-clear pupils, pointing the Luo God Sword in her hand towards the ground as faint killing intent was emitting from her usual calm expression.

"Haha, seems like your killing intent is pretty big towards me." Xue Tianhe also noticed the killing intent that was being emitted from Luo Li's body as he spoke with an indifferent smile, while his eyes narrowed.

"Since you have the time to come out from the Blood God Clan, then forget about going back." Luo Li's pupils stared at Xue Tianhe as she spoke.

"Truly worthy of being the next Empress of the Luo God Clan, that's some tone you got there." A cold sneer lifted Xue Tianhe's lips as he continued, "Actually, I have a similar intention as well. If I'm able to capture you and bring you back to the Blood God Clan, I believe that the Luo God Clan can only serve us, the Blood God Clan, as their masters."

Luo Li's crystal-clear pupils were like isolated lakes, without the

faintest ripples. She quietly looked at Xue Tianhe and narrowed her eyes.

Buzz!

The instant she narrowed her eyes, the Luo God Sword in her hands exploded with sky-shaking sword cries as vast Sword Aura spread out, as if it had engulfed the entire heavens and earth.

Creak. Creak.

Cracks and marks appeared on the Golden Battle Stage that was extremely firm, which was caused by the Sword Aura that filled the heavens and earth.

Luo Li slightly lifted her hand, pointing the tip of the Luo God Sword towards Xue Tianhe. There were faint distortions in the air, as if it was not able to endure the sharpness of her Sword Aura.

Fixing his gaze on the piercingly sharp Sword Aura emitted from the longsword in Luo Li's hand, Xue Tianhe felt stinging pain on his skin, even with such a huge amount of distance between them.

As the Prince of the Blood God Clan, Xue Tianhe naturally knew how formidable the Luo God Sword was, it was the murderous weapon of the Luo God Clan. Back then, when Luo Li's father wielded the sword, god-knows how many Sovereigns of the Blood God Clan had fallen under that sword.

"Although this Divine Artifact is formidable, I doubt that you are able to unleash all of its power with your current strength, right?" Xue Tianhe coldly smiled.

Facing his cold smile, there weren't any answers coming from Luo Li. Her narrowed, charming eyes widened in an instant with her hand forming sword seals, stabbing her Luo God Sword forth.

Buzz!

Her stab might seem light, but the impetus behind it made

countless people astonished as they saw the piercing Sword Aura that filled the heavens and earth converged at this instant as it stabbed out along with the Luo God Sword, turning into a sword image with the size of roughly a hundred feet. With a rustling noise, it tore through space and appeared before Xue Tianhe.

Along with the appearance of that sword image, deep cracks appeared on the ground. The surface of the cracks was as smooth as a mirror, instilling fear in those that saw it.

Seeing the sword image stabbing towards him, Xue Tianhe's eyes were filled with graveness. Although he didn't mention it, he was filled with fear for Luo Li in his heart.

In the current generation of the Luo God Clan, this girl was a person that would be shouldering all responsibilities in the future. At that time, she would become the absolute supreme Empress of the Luo God Clan.

Even if he could look at Mu Chen with disdain, he definitely did not dare to belittle the Luo Li that was right before him.

"Spiritual Blood Wall!"

Xue Tianhe's feet tapped on the ground as his figure flew out, rapidly forming seals at lightning speed as he pushed his palm downwards against the empty space of the ground.

Boom!

The scarlet-red Spiritual Energy was like a tidal wave as it soared into the sky from the ground, turning into a colossal light screen that was a thousand feet in size.

Rustle!

The instant the blood-coloured light wall was formed, the piercing sword image was already within reach, and heavily slammed against the wall.

Boom!

Ripples that were visible to the naked-eyes were seen spreading out, causing explosions in the surrounding space as the aura rolled in waves.

Crack!

Clear cracks were seen rapidly spreading throughout the Spiritual Energy wall as a clear crisp noise was heard. The sword image had already pierced through the powerful Spiritual Energy wall, heavily slamming against Xue Tianhe's silhouette, which was unable to dodge in time.

Boom!

Xue Tianhe's figure was sent flying away as he made a hundred foot mark on the ground with both of his feet, before he could stabilise himself. His arm was postured in a cross before him, scarlet-red in colour, similar to heated metals, as peculiar violent energy was emitted from both arms.

Drip.

On his scarlet red arms, a deep sword mark was present as fresh blood dripped down.

The confrontation between the two was only an instant, but the astonishing power that exploded between their counters made every student feel their scalps turn numb. They could sense that even a Third Grade Spirit Disaster would have a hard time resisting that move from Luo Li.

Just a single sword move was already so formidable.

The supportive sheers that resonated between the heavens and earth froze in an instant as many experts felt a chill down their spines as they sensed how sharp and powerful Luo Li's attack was.

Amongst the four in the Battle Stage, Luo Li possessed the lowest fame compared to the rest. After all, Mu Chen had been the one leading their team and even in the Battle of the Best 8, Luo Li easily defeated her opponent; thus, not many people were well-aware

that despite having a gorgeous appearance and being low-profile, she possessed such terrifying strength.

When Mu Chen was around, she would naturally suppress her sharpness and become quiet. But the instant Mu Chen wasn't around, she was similar to the Luo God Sword in her hand; breaking her seal and unleashing her sharpness that soared in the skies, simply unstoppable.

Right now, Luo Li was unleashing her sharpened cutting edge.

She was like a blooming twilight flower.

"Truly expected of the Luo God Sword..."

Xue Tianhe looked at the blood-dripping sword wound on his arm as his expression was terrifyingly dark. Shortly after, he stared at Luo Li and revealed an eerie smile, "But, I have done my preparations to deal with you!"

As he finished his speech, his hand slowly smeared across the sword wound. The scarlet-red on both of his arms became darker, and vaguely, blood-coloured flames were oozing from his arm. Under the burning blood-coloured flames, the sword wound was actually healing at a rapid speed.

After the appearance of the bizarre blood-coloured flames, blood-red ancients rune actually appeared on both of his arms. With the appearance of those runes, Xue Tianhe's arms swelled up a size with veins wiggling like earthworms, unleashing a dreadful power that instantly exploded.

At this instant, not only did his arms look more robust, they looked longer as well. His palms looked as sharp as the palms of a beast, completely unhuman-like.

Boom!

Xue Tianhe revealed a savage smile as his palm slapped the ground. The scene made everyone dumbfounded as cracks appeared on the extremely firm Golden Battle Stage. The cracks

exploded as they extended towards Luo Li.

Luo Li narrowed her eyes as she drove her Luo God Sword into the ground, Sword Aura exploded from the ground as it stopped the cracks and gold-coloured rocks flew out at the same time.

She raised her head and looked at Xue Tianhe's arm with a little astonishment. She lightly raised her brows and faintly said, "This must be the Low Rank Divine Artifact of your Blood God Clan, the Blood Demon Arms, right?"

Xue Tianhe did seem to have the knack for it. Judging from the power, he had probably fused the Blood Demon Arms into his own, thus allowing him to fully unleash its power.

"Although the Luo God Sword is powerful, you still can't fully control it. So today..."

The smile hanging on Xue Tianhe's lips became even more savage and eerie.

"I will use these Blood Demon Arms to thoroughly defeat you, the future Empress of the Luo God Clan!"

Chapter 618 – Wen Qingxuan's Trump Card

The other Battle Stage was rather calm and quiet compared to the Battle Stage that Luo Li and Xue Tianhe were fighting on, with violent Spiritual Energy soaring into the sky.

Wen Qingxuan held onto her golden warspear as her armour wrapped around her exquisite and voluptuous figure, outlining her attractive curves. Her gaze was staring at the Battle Stage of Luo Li and Xue Tianhe, her gaze was a little heavy as she sensed the fearsome Spiritual Energy exploding from their confrontation. Xue Tianhe truly was not someone to be trifled with as he was able to fight with Luo Li to this point...

"Haha, looks like you are pretty concerned about the battle over there." Ji Xuan stood with his hands behind his back as he watched the battle on the other stage as well and smiled at Wen Qingxuan.

Wen Qingxuan indolently shifted her gaze to Ji Xuan as she smiled, "What? Ji Xuan, you're not going to fight?"

"I don't have any grudges with you. If we were to fight now, we would definitely suffer injuries. Thus, I suggest for us to wait for their results." Ji Xuan smiled.

"You're worried about over-exhausting your strength, and it doesn't matter which one of them will win as you will still face a little trouble in the end, right?" A mocking arc rose on Wen Qingxuan's lips as she replied.

Ji Xuan was slightly stunned before having a smile, "At least this way, your chances will also be higher."

"What a loathsome fellow, no wonder Luo Li doesn't like you." Wen Qingxuan spoke indifferently, "It doesn't matter how scheming you are, compared to Mu Chen, you're inferior."

Hearing her words, Ji Xuan knitted his brows as he spoke, "In the Spiritual Road, Mu Chen fell in my hands, and this time in the

Great Spiritual Academy Tournament as well, even he doesn't have the qualifications to even fight with me. You tell me, how am I inferior compared to that loser?"

"You should be well-aware of how you won the two times." Wen Qingxuan sneered.

"The results are more important, in this world, the losers do not have any qualifications to give any excuses." Ji Xuan said indifferently.

"What a thick face you have."

Wen Qingxuan raised the golden warspear in her hand as she pointed it towards Ji Xuan. A smear of frost appeared on her face, "In the Elimination Round, you dared to use me to lure Mu Chen out and now, I will claim your debts!"

Boom!

When Wen Qingxuan's cold voice fell, an astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuation spread out. Judging from the strength, she had gone through her Third Grade Spirit Disaster.

"Seems like you do not agree to my suggestion." Ji Xuan faintly spoke out.

Rustle!

Wen Qingxuan's reply was a brilliant spear ray that streaked across the horizon. In just an instant, it had already appeared before Ji Xuan.

Looking at the swift spear ray, Ji Xuan jolted his body, but there weren't any signs of dodging, he stood his ground as he allowed that spear ray pierce his throat under the gasps of surprise that filled the sky.

However, there wasn't any blood as the spear pierced through, whereas Ji Xuan's figure slowly disappeared.

"An afterimage?"

An exclamation resounded from the eyes of the one that spoke had their eyes slightly trembled. Ji Xuan's speed was actually so fast, and they had never noticed him moving. Clearly, Ji Xuan's speed exceeded the speed their eyes could follow.

"Up in the sky!"

Very quickly, someone spoke out as they raised their head. Midair, above the Golden Battle Stage, Ji Xuan stood with his hands behind his back, allowing the wind to flutter his white robes as he looked extremely elegant with his posture.

The spear ray landed a miss, but Wen Qingxuan wasn't surprised as she knew that it was impossible for an attack of this level to do anything to Ji Xuan. Thus, she extended her jade-like hands and started to form seals.

A crisp cry suddenly rang out between the heavens and earth as a pair of golden wings appeared behind Wen Qingxuan. The wings that had expanded at this instant were huge, with a size of approximately ten feet, and they looked as if they were made of gold, being extremely radiant.

Rustle!

Wen Qingxuan's wings flapped as they blew up a violent gale, her silhouette disappeared from within the gale at almost an instant.

Up in the sky, Ji Xuan's pupils abruptly shrank, and before he could move, a violent gale blew from his back as a golden light spread out. Wen Qingxuan had directly appeared behind him.

"I'll see how swift your speed truly is!" Wen Qingxuan's cold voice resounded, and at the same time, the golden warspear in her hand had already turned into a ray of light as she thrust it forth.

Rustle!

Ji Xuan's gaze was cold as he formed seals with one hand and his figure jolted.

The spear rsy pierced through, but it was another after image.

Ji Xuan's figure appeared in the sky a thousand meters away. But the instant he reappeared, another spear ray was thrust towards him.

Rustle! Rustle!

Up in the sky, the two figures were like ghosts as their locations constantly changed every single time the image was pierced through. The scene made everyone feel dumbfounded. They couldn't even sense the movement of those two and could only catch their figures when they attacked.

Their speeds were simply like ghosts.

Facing with the speed of those two, even Wu Ling and the rest of the pinnacle experts had a heavy expression on their faces as they knew that if it was them, they could only stand still and suffer their attacks, be it from Ji Xuan or Wen Qingxuan.

Although there wasn't a huge commotion from their confrontation, the fearsome speed that they unleashed was extremely startling.

Rustle!

Ji Xuan's figure appeared at another location again, but this time, his face was a little dark. Speed had always been his forté and now, he realised that despite pushing his speed to the limits, he still couldn't shake Wen Qingxuan off.

The latter's speed wasn't any inferior to his own.

Whoosh!

Golden spear light chased and was thrust out again in an extremely tricky angle.

"Hmph!"

A cold snort came from Ji Xuan as he abruptly clenched his fist, a long spear appeared in a flash as he thrust it out as well. The tip of

the two spears collided as a metallic ringing sound resonated. An astonishing wave of aura swept out, as if it was lifting a hurricane.

Facing Wen Qingxuan, who possessed swift speed as well, Ji Xuan could only give up on the idea of using his absolute speed to suppress her.

A hurricane swept out as the two figures fell back.

Wen Qingxuan gripped her golden war spear as her phoenix-like eyes looked at Ji Xuan and coldly smiled, “You’ve finally given up running?”

Ji Xuan’s face was as solemn as the water as he did not reply. Torrential sacred Spiritual Energy rapidly gathered behind him, and in an instant, it had formed into a huge sacred sun behind him

It was the technique that he used against Wen Busheng.

However, Ji Xuan clearly placed Wen Qingxuan at a higher level that surpassed Wen Busheng. Thus, his hand seals changed again, and above the sacred light, another brilliant light gathered once again and after that, another two sacred suns rapidly formed!

Three sacred suns!

The three sacred suns hovered behind Ji Xuan, and that formation made countless others feel their scalps numbing from the sight of it. So when he was fighting with Wen Busheng, Ji Xuan had actually concealed so much of his strength, that fellow truly was deep and unmeasurable.

“Go!”

Ji Xuan did not speak any nonsense as he flicked his finger, the three sacred suns soared into the sky and were positioned in a straight line, engulfing Wen Qingxuan as they descended.

Under the dreadful suns, the impacts instantly created spiderwebs of cracks on the Golden Battle Stage below.

Wen Qingxuan lightly raised her head, the reflection of the suns

was rapidly expanding in her eyes. However, she didn't have any fear as her pupils were still filled with cold pride.

Facing such a fearsome attack from Ji Xuan, she actually had no intentions of dodging.

Boom! Boom!

The three sacred suns ferociously fell down as the brilliant light spread out, covering the entire heavens and earth in divine light. The piercing light from them made innumerable others feel a stinging pain in their eyes and could not open them.

The violent sacred light wreaked havoc in the sky for a long time, before it gradually dissipated.

Many people stared in that direction as they were curious about whether Wen Qingxuan was able to escape from Ji Xuan's dreadful attacks in that situation.

As the sacred light gradually dissipated, the sky became clear again and after that... innumerable people had their eyes suddenly widen as the noise of inhaling cold air resounded.

At the same time, Ji Xuan abruptly narrowed his eyes.

Far in the sky, covered by golden light, a colossal golden phoenix was slowly expanding its wings in the golden light. The body was covered in golden light, as if it was forged from gold. It possessed a perfect posture, every single inch of it was oozing with pride and nobility, as if it was the sovereign of all lives.

"That's..."

Up in midair, even some Deans had their facial expressions changed as they muttered, "That's... the Sacred Golden Phoenix?"

The Sacred Golden Phoenix, Rank 6 of the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking.

Rumours state that it was a beast that possessed the genuine bloodline of a Phoenix. An existence that was comparable to a

Heavenly Sovereign upon reaching the late stage of cultivation.

No one could have expected that Wen Qingxuan had refined a Sacred Golden Phoenix's Soul Essence!

This trump card of hers was sufficient to shock anyone.

Up in the sky, the Sacred Golden Phoenix was flapping its golden wings that had golden light flowing on it. On its colossal figure, there was a slender silhouette standing there with a spear held in her hand, there was also golden light flowing in her gorgeous phoenix-like eyes as she stood on the golden phoenix. Her head was slightly lifted up with pride, revealing her snow-white and elegant neckline. After that, she extended her jade-like hand out as she undid the bundle of her hair. Instantly, her hair was like a waterfall as it draped down, that moment of demeanour made even the heavens and earth light up.

At this moment, Wen Qingxuan was exceptionally stunning.

Ji Xuan also fixed his gaze on Wen Qingxuan, who was standing on top of a Sacred Golden Phoenix and slowly clenched his fist. This opponent of his was even harder to handle than he had expected.

Wen Qingxuan's phoenix-like eyes were also looking at him from far away. The golden war spear was pointed in a slanted position as a clear and crisp sound rang out between the heavens and earth.

"Ji Xuan, bring out the Primordial Skydragon Hawk of yours. Otherwise, you won't stand a chance."

Chapter 619: Luo Shen Sword's True Form

"Demonic Blood Arm..."

Luo Li looked coldly at Xie Tianhe. The blood rays on Xie Tianhe's arms were rising aggressively. His veins were squirming like dragons. His sharp nails were like blades and looked as though they could tear the earth apart.

Luo Li had heard of the Demonic Blood Arm. In the Blood God Clan, the Blood God's Arm was a Divine Artifact that could suppress the Clan. This Divine Artifact was above Middle Rank, and it could destroy the heavens and the earth. Its power was comparable to the Luo Shen Sword that could break any seal. In the past, her father had been seriously injured by the Chief of the Blood God Clan. His Sovereign Sea had been destroyed, and then he died.

The Demonic Blood Arm was an imitation of the Blood God's Arm that the Blood God Clan had come up with. Although it was an imitation, it was powerful and was comparable to the Lower Rank Divine Artifacts.

A killing intent radiated from Luo Li's eyes.

"Hahaha, you seem to detest the Demonic Blood Arm." Xie Tianhe looked at Luo Li's cold face and said with a smile, "Is it because your father was killed by the Wu Clan with the Blood God's Arm?

"It might as well be. Your father was killed by the Blood God's Arm, and you will be defeated by the Demonic Blood Arm. It fits both of you well." Xie Tianhe licked his lips and smiled viciously.

Boom!

Xie Tianhe looked vicious. He stomped his feet and the ground cracked. With lightning speed, he appeared before Luo Li and threw a blow at her.

Pom!

As Xie Tianhe threw the blow, blood rays spread out. The air before him exploded, and there was a space warp. The blow was extremely powerful.

Luo Li's face turned cold, and she held on tightly to her sword. With one hand on the hilt and the other on the end of the sword, she held forth and used it to protect her body.

Prang!

A Blood Fist hit the sword hard, and the sound of metal resounded. The ground under both of them cracked, and a visible blast swirled out.

Swoosh!

Luo Li dashed down and waved the sword. The blade was shimmering, and a Sword Lotus formed by the sword aura appeared. Luo Li pointed the tip of the sword at Xie Tianhe and shot toward him.

"Ha." In face of the sharp Sword Lotus, Xie Tianhe merely snorted at it. He threw a powerful blow and activated the Demonic Blood Arm. His arms were so tough, they were like Divine Artifacts. To fight him head on, even Mu Chen, who possessed the Hepta Rune Lightning Physique, might not even triumph over him.

Dong!

The Blood Fist hit the Sword Lotus and the blood rays exploded.

The sword aura shot up and Xie Tianhe, who was under the protection of the majestic spiritual energy, dashed out. He attacked Luo Li with the wind blast of the fist.

Boom! Boom!

Bloody fist prints whizzed furiously across the horizon. Every fist print carried with it an aggressive spiritual energy fluctuation. Xie

Tianhe's power had surpassed the Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster. On top of that, he had the help of the Demonic Blood Arm. His attack had caused top powers like Wu Ling to turn pale. Wu Ling knew that if Xie Tianhe had used this powerful blow on him, he would have lost.

Swoosh!

As the bloody fist prints whizzed toward her, Luo Li constantly retreated. Sword aura shot forth and it was so sharp, it seemed to be able to slash the space apart.

Xie Tianhe seemed to have the upper hand. The Demonic Blood Arm had merged with his arms, whereas Luo Li's Luo Shen Sword acted upon the different layers of the seal.

The students of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy were looking on with anxiety. They were worried about Luo Li, because they had seen her being forced to move back continuously. After all, Xie Tianhe had displayed astonishing power.

Xie Tianhe's eyes had completely turned red. He looked extremely vicious. The Demonic Blood Arm was ferocious, and now that it had merged with Xie Tianhe's body, it had affected his personality. Once he activated the Demonic Blood Arm, he would become brutal and have the desire to kill. However, it did not bother Xie Tianhe. In fact, he enjoyed it.

"Hahaha, Luo Li, is this what you are capable of? It seems like there is no one else in the Luo Shen Clan. Why not join my Blood God Clan now? If you are captured by the Wu Clan in the future, you will have to fight them!"

Xie Tianhe roared out in laughter. His attacks became more and more aggressive. Under the attacks of the bloody fist prints, Luo Li seemed to be losing her footing.

Swish!

Luo Li slashed her sword down and split a bloody fist print in

two. She looked coldly at Xie Tianhe, who had turned violent. She curled her lips and was filled with killing intent. "Since you wish to see my actual strength, I will let you have a taste of it! I will fulfill a dead man's wish."

There was coldness in Luo Li's eyes. She speedily stretched out her slender finger and wiped the Luo Shen Sword.

Fresh blood started to spread out on the sword. After being tainted with blood, ancient obscure runes appeared on the sword.

The runes were like chains that bound the Luo Shen Sword. When the runes came into contact with the blood, they melted away.

As the runes melted away, a blue ray shot up into the sky. A horrifying sword aura covered the heavens and the earth.

Swish! Swish!

The bloody fist prints that had been attacking Luo Li broke up several feet away from her. The edges of the cracks became smooth like a mirror before turning into lights.

The expressions of the Chiefs of the Spiritual Academy changed as they watched from the sky. They could feel a powerful sword aura that frightened them as well.

The five Chiefs looked toward the source of the sword aura.

Xie Tianhe was stunned for a while. He stared at the spot where the blue ray had spread out and felt uneasy.

A horrifying sword aura covered the heavens and the earth, and then the blue ray finally dissipated. With the dissipation of the blue ray, everyone suddenly squinted their eyes.

Luo Li was standing in the air. A heavy blue sword that was about a foot long hung in the air. The blue sword was transparent and seemed to be made of ice. There seemed to be a blue ice bone within the sword. The ice bone was filled with vicious-looking

bone spikes that were at the cutting edges of the sword's blade...

The heavy sword seemed to be as tall as Luo Li. It was wide, and as Luo Li stood before it, she looked tiny. The sword hung quietly before Luo Li. A terrifying sword aura that covered the heavens and the earth radiated from the sword.

This heavy and vicious-looking sword was the same slender and graceful looking sword that Luo Li was holding onto earlier. This was the Luo Shen Sword's true form.

"You..."

Xie Tianhe looked gloomily at the heavy blue sword and was terrified. He gritted his teeth and said, "You have finally shown the true form of the Luo Shen Sword. Do you think you can control it with your strength?"

The sword was a nightmare for the Blood God Clan. For thousands of years, many Sovereigns had died under the sword.

However, although the Luo Shen Sword was extremely powerful, not many people could control it. Without its acknowledgement, even top Sovereigns would not be able to hold it.

Previously, Xie Tianhe was not afraid of Luo Li because he had thought she would not dare to display the Luo Shen Sword's true form.

However, what he had seen was far from what he had expected.

Luo Li looked coldly at Xie Tianhe, and then slowly stretched forth her slender hand. She held the icy blue sword.

Buzz! Buzz!

As Luo Li held the sword, it shook violently and let out a crisp sound.

Luo Li remained calm as the Luo Shen Sword shook. She grabbed hold of the hilt tightly, and her palm was pricked by the sword aura radiating from the sword. Blood was flowing out from her

palm.

As fresh blood flowed down, it covered the blue sword.

Luo Li felt as though her arm would be cut off by the sword aura. However, she remained calm and stubbornly held onto the hilt. She had no intention of letting go.

The sword continued to buzz for a while. When the blood had almost covered the entire sword, it stopped buzzing.

Because she had lost so much blood, Luo Li looked a little pale. She lifted up her head and looked flatly at Xie Tianhe, who looked ghastly.

"Now, I will let you experience how it is with the true Luo Shen Sword."

Upon saying this, Luo Li dashed out. In a split second, she appeared above Xie Tianhe. Holding onto the heavy blue sword, she slashed down hard on him.

The sky seemed to tear apart as Luo Li slashed the Luo Shen Sword down. A sword ray of about 1,000 feet tore the horizon apart with its destructive cutting edge. It was merciless.

Xie Tianhe's face instantly turned pale.

Chapter 620: Unforeseen Circumstances

Boom!

A massive beam of light emitted from the sword extending a thousand feet, tearing the space apart with a faint trace. The whole world seemed to be engulfed within the sword's swift and fierce aura.

The light from the sword had yet to land, but the incomparably sturdy, hard ground of gold had become riddled with holes.

After compelling the true form of the Luo Shen Sword, Luo Li's attack power had reached a terrifying stage. Even some of the elders from various Spiritual Academies, not to mention the other disciples, were startled by this formidable attack.

Xie Tianhe's expression twisted into one of aggravation. The sole of his foot sank half an inch into the ground and he was now overwhelmed by the sword's powerful aura.

He could not escape because the beam of light from the sword held him in place and the space around him was as if it had been sealed off by the sword's aura.

Luo Li clearly intended to deal a critical blow.

"With your ability, I don't believe you can truly compel the Luo Shen Sword!"

Xie Tianhe's expression twisted into something distorted. Although Luo Li could compel the true form of the Luo Shen Sword, it didn't mean that she could utilize the sword's full power. Otherwise, Xie Tianhe would have been obliterated by now.

Roar!

Xie Tianhe took a step forward. His throat emitted rumbling growls like a beast, his arms flushed as blood rose up and his veins gradually turned red. Trails of blood seeped through his pores,

transforming into two bloody, ferocious, demonic faces above his arms.

A strange and unnerving wave of aura radiated into the surroundings.

"Demonic Blood Arm, Demons Engulf the Sky!"

Xie Tianhe roared and a barrage of magnificent spiritual energy burst out as he clenched his fists and delivered a fierce punch.

Boom! Crash!

The air in front of him exploded section by section, and on Xie Tianhe's arms, countless crimson earthworms wriggled beneath his skin. With a blow of his fist, two bloody beams of red light burst out.

The two bloody beams quickly condensed into two monstrous mouths hundreds of feet in size that devoured the spiritual energies of heaven and earth as if they could devour all things.

Whoosh!

The moment the two frightful demonic mouths condensed into existence, the beam of light from the sword cut them down without hesitation.

Whoosh!

The light of the sword flashed by but no one saw it clearly. They could only see the spark of light, and then the mouths of the two terrible demons in the sky suddenly exploded. The vast golden battle stage beneath rumbled with tremors as a crack about a thousand feet long quickly spread.

Smoke and dust rose, shrouding the battle platform.

Numerous people cast glances towards the direction of the uproar. Luo Li hovered in the air. Although she had a tall and slender physique, she seemed dwarfed in comparison to the Luo Shen Sword held in her hand. However, this contrast depicted her

with a different aura than usual; one that was piercingly cold and solemn.

She glanced coldly at the area enveloped in smoke and dust below. A light breeze blew it away, with many casting their gaze towards it.

On the battle platform, a ferocious crack spread and at the end of the crack where the stage was sunken, the figure of Xie Tianhe appeared.

At this moment, his upper garment was torn into shreds and his arms were crossed in front of him. A deep blade wound was embedded in his terrifying Demonic Blood Arms, spreading from fist to shoulder. The wound was so deep, the white of the bone could be seen. Blood ran down like a stream and where he stood, everything was stained red.

Xie Tianhe's expression was twisted in rage as he looked at the scars on his arms. The corners of his mouth twitched in annoyance. After utilizing the Demonic Blood Arms, his arms were comparable to Low Rank Divine Artifacts, or were even invincible but now, the deep blade mark almost cut his arms off.

Moreover, the terrifying thing was that the fierce aura of the sword was embedded in the scar. Its all-pervasive aura rendered the self-healing property of the Demonic Blood Arms ineffective...

The Luo Shen Sword was indeed intimidating.

Xie Tianhe gritted his teeth with dread and fear in his eyes. Luo Li's capability had surpassed his expectations and despite still having a card up his sleeve, it was unlikely that he would be able to best Luo Li.

It looked like it would be a daunting challenge for him to defeat her.

Something flashed in Xie Tianhe's eyes as he swept his gaze towards the other battle platform. Suddenly, his gaze turned

ferocious and his hands began conjuring a myriad of seals at a speed as fast as lightning.

Roar!

As Xie Tianhe's seals transformed, a violent roar burst forth from within his body.

The gush of blood red light spread across the atmosphere and converged into a gargantuan, bloody red beast behind Xie Tianhe. The beast stood with massive feet, and its body was covered entirely with bloody scales and ferocious blood red bone spikes extending out from behind its back. They were sharp, as if able to penetrate space, and its scarlet eyes were full of violence and savagery.

An ominous aura soared into the sky.

"Xie Tianhe actually triggered the Soul Essence of Demonic Blood Beast within him. It seems that Luo Li has forced him into a corner for him to resort to this..."

Many disciples exclaimed in shock upon witnessing the scene.

Luo Li glanced coldly at the massive Demonic Blood Beast, a killing intention intensifying in her gaze.

"Art of the Blood God, Sea that Entraps the Heavens!"

Xie Tianhe roared and blood spurted out of his mouth. Meanwhile, the Demonic Blood Beast also opened its massive jaws and blood gushed out like tumultuous sea waves.

Two streams of blood converged and surged with the wind. In the blink of an eye, they manifested into a sea of blood in the sky. The sea enveloped the world and Luo Li was in the center of the sea of blood.

Boom!

The sea of blood raged in a mad frenzy and transformed into a huge blood red tornado that was about a thousand feet in size,

binding and trapping Luo Li into it. The terrible force wreaked havoc in an attempt to annihilate Luo Li.

Boom! Boom!

The sea of blood continued to rage on, its turbulent movements shaking the heavens and earth.

However, just as everyone thought that Xie Tianhe was about to take the opportunity to launch a barrage of attacks, he suddenly leapt onto the Demonic Blood Beast, which retreated out of the great battle stage with large strides.

...

The clear cry of the Phoenix echoed in the heavens and earth as the golden Phoenix flapped its beautiful golden wings and glittered in the sun with a dazzling luster, drawing envious looks from countless disciples.

Wen Qingxuan stood poised atop the golden Phoenix and pointed the golden spear she held at Ji Xuan.

Ji Xuan was hovering upright in the air as he looked at the golden Phoenix under Wen Qingxuan. His eyes were somber but there was not much surprise in them, as he had expected this to happen.

"Haha, how fortunate of you, to be able to refine the Soul Essence of a Golden Divine Phoenix..."

Ji Xuan smiled faintly. It seemed that Wen Qingxuan had a formidable background, otherwise, it would be impossible to obtain the Soul Essence of the Golden Divine Phoenix, let alone successfully refine it.

"I could say the same to you," Wen Qingxuan lifted her gaze and remarked nonchalantly.

"It seems that you don't intend to summon your Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk?"

"Currently, I don't think it's necessary. I don't have to go that

far." Ji Xuan smiled.

"Is that so?"

Wen Qingxuan's eyes turned cold, no longer polite. Her hands holding the golden war spear jerked abruptly. The golden Phoenix let out a long clear cry as it spread its wings, only to see countless golden feathers soaring into the sky, condensing into a large Golden Winged Spear that was a hundred feet long.

Whoosh!

The Golden Winged Spear struck out at an astonishing speed and appeared above Ji Xuan's head in a flash.

Whoosh!

The long spear in Ji Xuan's hand burst with dazzling light. The magnificent forces of spiritual energy were like a wave that swept through. He dealt a piercing blow with his spear as swift as lightning as the weapon clashed with the Golden Winged Spear.

Clang!

The crisp sound of the collision between metal and gold rang in the air as shock waves wreaked havoc, flinging Ji Xuan's body into the air.

Despite hurtling into the air, a faint smile was still etched on Ji Xuan's face. However, his gaze gradually turned eerie. His hands suddenly cast a myriad of seals and spiritual energy fluctuations erupted out from his body.

"Art of the Great Saint's Light, Descent of Divine Spirits!"

When Ji Xuan's deep rumble permeated the heavens and earth, the dazzling divine light appeared and a massive shadow beam of divine light close to a thousand feet across was seen in the sky above Ji Xuan. The shadow of the divine light was akin to a direct blow of a palm headed towards Wen Qingxuan. The blow was immensely strong, seemingly having the boundless power to

shatter the mountains and fill the sea.

It was apparent that Ji Xuan was starting to deal critical blows when facing a formidable opponent like Wen Qingxuan.

"Hmph."

Wen Qingxuan looked at the shadow of the divine light, one that would instill fear and dread in others, but she merely snorted coldly. She did not retreat at all and with a light jerk of the golden spear, the golden Phoenix soared into the sky. Both Phoenix and lady, as if they had transformed into a dazzling golden beam, skyrocketed upwards with an indescribable speed, clashing head-on with the divine light.

Conk!

Heaven and earth seemed to tremble violently. The pervasive divine light and gold light made the sky begin to show signs of distortion.

The spread of the spiritual energies caused shockwaves to emerge, shaking heaven and earth.

Boom!

The shadow of the Divine Light and the Golden Phoenix were clashing violently, two terrifying forces attempting to devour the other. However, it was apparent the Golden Phoenix was gaining the upper hand, as the shadow of the Divine Light gradually faded under the erosion of the golden light.

Ji Xuan's face remained indifferent, although a callous and cold expression flitted across his gaze as he gave a small nod.

Amid the sea of divine light and gold light, a blood red aura suddenly came into the mix.

The expressions of countless people changed dramatically in shock, especially the girls from the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy, as their beautiful faces twisted in anger.

At this moment, a beam of crimson blood light surfaced behind the golden Phoenix, a gargantuan Demonic Blood Beast stepped forward with an air of ferocity as its huge fist mercilessly swung down.

What was originally a duel between the two now had unforeseen circumstances!

Chapter 621: Silver Hair Darkened to Black

Boom!

The torrent of blood red light swept harshly into the world of golden light and divine light. The brutish Demonic Blood Beast appeared like a demon behind the golden light that the Golden Divine Phoenix had transformed into.

The sudden, unforeseen scene shocked the entire audience.

They could not fathom how this massive fellow barged in, as it did not belong to this battle stage...

"What... is he doing?" Some members of the audience stared with wide eyes and murmured in disbelief.

"Roar!"

In the midst of the crowd's distraction, the Demonic Blood Beast roared ferociously, clenching its massive fists as blood red light spewed forth. A blow of the fist punched out like a crimson meteor at a speed as fast as a thunderbolt as it bombarded straight towards the Golden Divine Phoenix.

The blow was exceptionally brutal.

"Despicable!"

"Jerks! Two ganging up against one!"

"How could they bully a girl!"

"..."

While Xie Tianhe's intention was completely exposed, realization dawned on numerous disciples and immediately, curses of condemnation could be heard. Many were filled with indignation, disdain in their eyes.

No matter what the current rules were, it was a one versus one duel after all. The match was set on the basis of participants

fighting with their real capabilities. Regardless whether they won or lost, they would win the respect of the people. However, Xie Tianhe's actions had tarnished the fairness of the fight when he adopted such an unorthodox and underhanded approach.

Furthermore, two grown men ganging up on a beautiful lady would fill anyone with indignation and disdain.

The people who were most outraged were naturally the girls from the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy. Their expressions were twisted with fury and although they did not lash out with overly harsh and crude words, outbursts of anger still rang clearly. This made the disciples from Saint Spiritual Academy look uneasy as they glanced at each other but they were afraid to refute, lest attracting the wrath of the masses.

Crash!

Xie Tianhe's sudden attack came as an utter surprise to Wen Qingxuan, so when she sensed terrifying bursts of motion behind her, her expression twisted with shock.

However, Wen Qingxuan had a reputation comparable to Ji Xuan's, clearly not just because of her beauty but also due to her own strength and talent—something that even Ji Xuan would not underestimate.

Thus, even at this alarmingly dangerous moment, she was able to remain calm. Gritting her teeth, a golden wing of the Golden Divine Phoenix spread out towards the back as it transformed into a gold shield.

Bong!

The huge blood red fist fiercely bombarded the gold shield. A terrible shockwave wrecked havoc, causing the space to become somewhat distorted.

Above the golden wings, the golden feathers shattered into golden spots of light.

Wen Qingxuan paled. Her defence was too hasty. Even if she could resist the brutal attack from Xie Tianhe, it would deal damage to her.

Boom!

While Wen Qingxuan was distracted by countering the attack from Xie Tianhe, Ji Xuan stood in front of them, smiling nonchalantly. The shadow of the Divine Spirits, which had shown signs of dissipating, suddenly had a blinding glow again as the Divine Light converged above the shadow of a massive hand. A gigantic Divine Light Spear of about a thousand feet surfaced.

"Art of the Great Saint's Light, Descent of the Divine Spear!"

Ji Xuan pointed his fingers with a flourish. The Divine Spear held in the Shadow Palm of the Divine Light pierced down swiftly. In a flash, it appeared over the Golden Divine Phoenix, causing terrible waves of fluctuations, as if it could penetrate heaven and earth.

"Blood Demon's Seal!"

As Ji Xuan launched the offensive, Xie Tianhe smiled grimly while standing on the shoulders of the Demonic Blood Beast. His hands conjured a myriad of seals and as the seals flickered and transformed, the massive Demonic Blood Beast conjured the same seals.

Blood red light soared into the sky. Two seals, a large one and a small one both resembling blood, condensed and surged out, quickly merging in mid-air. It then immediately expanded into an abomination that was hundreds of feet in size. With a gush of bloody aura, it brutally suppressed Wen Qingxuan and the Golden Divine Phoenix as it swooped down towards them.

The attacks of the two were formidable enough to cause any master who had passed the Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster to tremble in fear. This degree of attack was considered to be comparable to that of the most powerful Sovereign!

A huge force of oppression enveloped them as Wen Qingxuan gripped the long spear tightly in her hand, but even in the face of this magnitude of danger, her beautiful eyes were still filled with pride without a tinge of fear—just like the elegant and proud Golden Divine Phoenix.

Wen Qingxuan struck the golden spear heavily on the ground as dazzling golden light poured out from within the Golden Divine Phoenix. These golden lights appeared highly viscous, like a golden liquid, solidifying at an alarmingly fast rate. In the blink of an eye, everyone saw a huge golden ball envelop the Golden Divine Phoenix.

The massive golden ball flashed with a dazzling luster, a perfect sphere without any blemish. Patterns of a golden phoenix taking flight were etched on its surface, and it was so sturdy that it seemed to be able to withstand the most powerful blows in the world.

"Golden Protection!"

When the golden ball condensed, Wen Qingxuan's soft but cold howl echoed in the sky.

Even though Wen Qingxuan compelled the power of the Golden Divine Phoenix's Soul Essence, she revealed her cards and could only trigger the most powerful defensive move while facing Ji Xuan and Xie Tianhe's joint attack.

Crash!

The golden ball condensed into form and at the same time, the two startlingly powerful attacks from Ji Xuan and Xie Tianhe intensely followed. As many watched on anxiously, the blows fiercely bombarded the golden ball.

Bong!

The moment the blows made impact, earth-shattering noises resounded. Golden shock waves wrecked havoc, causing the clouds

in the sky to be violently torn to pieces.

Ji Xuan and Xie Tianhe hurtled into the air with the impact of the terrifying shock waves. The Divine Light's shadow shattered as it disintegrated. Even the Demonic Blood Beast suffered a wound, a gaping hole in its huge chest, as it roared in pain.

In this moment, all eyes were on the glimmering golden ball as it stood upright.

Crack.

Alas, the calm before the storm only lasted for a moment. A crack began to spread out at an alarming rate on the surface of the golden ball, causing dramatic changes on everyone's faces.

Bam!

In a short breath's time, the crack extended through the entire gold ball and as its withstanding power reached its limit, it exploded abruptly.

With the explosion, a mournful cry of the Phoenix echoed through the heavens, as the massive body of the Golden Divine Phoenix faded into the void. A slender figure flew out, clearly affected by the impact.

Spurt.

A mouthful of blood spewed out from the slender figure in mid-air, her beautiful face deathly pale. Either Ji Xuan or Xie Tianhe alone was enough to fight on par with her. Now that the two aces had suddenly joined forces, Wen Qingxuan was naturally no match for them.

"They are such b*stards!"

Upon witnessing this scene, numerous disciples began cursing up a storm again.

In the sky, the Chiefs of the Five Great Academies witnessed this situation but no one commented. However, the Chief of the

Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy, Chief Tang Qiu's expression was particularly sullen but she did not say anything, either. The rules of this championship battle were no matter the means used, the last person standing would be the champion.

No one had expected Xie Tianhe to suddenly attack Wen Qingxuan. Now, it seemed that this fellow obviously knew he alone was unable to best Luo Li. Hence, his plan was to help Ji Xuan defeat Wen Qingxuan quickly, so they could form an alliance to defeat Luo Li.

In the sky, Xie Tianhe looked coldly at Wen Qingxuan, who had been grievously injured. He exchanged a glance with Ji Xuan and a chilling glint surfaced in their eyes. They were aware how strong Wen Qingxuan was, and now that they had caught the opportunity to act, they had to utterly incapacitate her to the point where she could no longer fight. They could not afford to give her time to counter attack.

Therefore, they ignored the cursing from the masses and attacked again. Two powerful and brutal blows of spiritual energy swept out in a barrage, aiming straight for Wen Qingxuan, whose spiritual energy was in turmoil due to the impact from before.

Seeing their actions, infuriated cursing from the audience intensified, ringing through the arena.

Wen Qingxuan was in mid-air and she was aware of the fierce offensive attacks of the two men. Despite wanting to defend herself, her spiritual energies were in utter turmoil, and she could not control and tap into her energy. She heaved a faint sigh and closed her eyes in despair.

Upon witnessing this, some of the more delicate girls from the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy teared up, their eyes red.

Boom!

Just as the crowd sighed and lamented, suddenly a startling

sword aura soared into the sky. Everyone lifted their gaze and saw that the vast sea of blood in the distance was torn apart violently by a massive beam of light from the sword.

The sea of blood subsided and a beautiful silhouette appeared swiftly in a flash of lightning and stood behind Wen Qingxuan. She stretched out her hand to support the latter's slender waist. The Luo Shen Sword in her hand suddenly swept out as the light of the sword raged, tearing apart the two fierce beams of spiritual energy.

Woah!

This unforeseen circumstance once again came as a shock to countless disciples. Earth-shaking cheers echoed throughout the heavens and earth, as the girls of the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy stared in a daze at the beautiful girl in the sky supporting Wen Qingxuan. In the next moment, stars twinkled in their eyes as they screamed with ecstasy.

"Wow, it's the girl named Luo Li!"

"That was awesome!"

"She's so cool, I like her so much!"

"..."

As countless screams resounded from the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy, they immediately made other male disciples around them almost faint as darkness flashed across their eyes, their faces resentful.

In the sky amid the excited screams, Luo Li loosened her grip around Wen Qingxuan's slender waist. Her beautiful face was cold as she gazed forward where Ji Xuan and Xie Tianhe stood. Her eyes filled with a chilling murderous intention.

"Are you alright?"

Luo Li turned her head to look at Wen Qingxuan, whose face was still pale.

"I'm okay. Let's do it together."

Wen Qingxuan gritted her teeth as she struggled to make a move. Alas, her spiritual energies were too turbulent and were somewhat out of her control as she staggered to her feet.

"You are hurt too badly. Take time to recuperate, I'll hold them back," Luo Li stated slowly.

"No, you can't!" Wen Qingxuan remarked hurriedly, as she was all too aware of how strong Ji Xuan and Xie Tianhe's alliance was.

Luo Li did not say anything further as she slowly stepped out, her hand gripping the Luo Shen Sword. Her usually serene and stunning face was now solemn and deadly. The sharp and powerful aura of the sword permeated the heavens and earth.

Wen Qingxuan looked at Luo Li but suddenly discovered the latter's long silver hair, which was as dazzling as the silver river in the galaxies, gradually turned to black.

Chapter 622: The Spirit of the Luo River

Luo Li moved with light steps, as graceful as a lotus. With every slow step, her long silver hair, as dazzling as the silver river in the galaxy, turned obsidian black at an alarming speed.

In just a few short moments, her originally cool toned silver hair transformed into inky black strands.

Naturally, there were other changes besides that of her long hair, including her disposition and aura. If the usual Luo Li was as tranquil as the lotus of a secluded valley exuding a beauty of refined serenity, now she exuded an aura of palpable coldness, her crystal clear eyes filled with nonchalance. It was as if she were sitting on the divine throne, overlooking the masses like an empress.

In the sky, Ji Xuan and Xie Tianhe narrowed their eyes as they gazed at Luo Li. Their expressions were somber, as if they could detect an unusual sense of danger unlike before.

They remained silent, as they were aware that Luo Li must have tricks up her sleeve. However, they were not simple characters to be trifled with, either. Now that they had temporarily become allies, even if Luo Li had a strong ace up her sleeve, it would be difficult for her to fight one versus two against them.

"Heh, it seems like you intend to fight us one versus two?" Xie Tianhe cackled, his gaze ghastly.

Luo Li looked at him coldly but did not reply. Her slender hands lightly clasped together, forming an ancient seal, as a soft voice rang out.

"Luo River."

Crash!

When those two words were uttered, a hurricane seemed to have taken form in the world as the spiritual energy between heaven

and earth rioted in a wild frenzy.

In the space behind Luo Li, a violent turbulence occurred and amidst countless shocked gazes, a nearly invisible vast and endless river appeared.

The river, brilliant and dazzling, resembled a primordial ancient dragon, greatly astonishing the crowd. Despite the river being a shadow, the vast majesty it exuded still shook many to the core.

Even the Chiefs of the Great Spiritual Academies in the sky could not help but gape in surprise. Their faces were startled, as the Chiefs of the Five Great Academies stared solemnly at the ancient river.

Whoosh.

There was a faint sound of trickling water and the sound seemed to contain a strange, irresistible force.

Luo Li's lovely face remained composed as she conjured a seal with one hand, placing it lightly before her chest.

Crash!

In the winding ancient river, a gushing water column suddenly burst out, soaring into the sky. Everyone's faces morphed into shock, as a pair of huge majestic wings condensed from water spread out from within the water column.

The spiritual energies between heaven and earth fluctuated in a violent frenzy.

The water column dissipated into mist, revealing the figure within. It was a shadow of about 100 feet, slender and graceful. She floated atop the ancient river and if one scrutinized her face, they would find it to be similar to Luo Li's but at the same time, there were slight differences. She spread her wings with an elegant flourish, exuding an indescribable sense of beauty that made everything in the world pale in comparison.

She seemed to be the embodiment of beauty.

Furthermore, everyone could feel the powerful spiritual energy fluctuations around her.

Everyone stared dumbfoundedly at the scene before them.

In the sky, Ji Xuan and Xie Tianhe's expressions twisted with surprise. The former's eyebrows knitted tightly in frustration, while the latter seemed to have recalled something. Shock flitted through his gaze as he cried out in disbelief.

"This is... the Spirit of the Luo River?"

Ji Xuan's heart jolted in shock as his eyes narrowed.

"The fifth rank in the Beast Record's Earth Ranking, revered to be the most mysterious Spiritual Beast, the Spirit of the Luo River?"

In this vast world, the Beast Record was divided into two lists; the Heaven and Earth Ranking, with the Earth Ranking sometimes called the Spiritual Beasts Ranking, because all the rankings belonged to the domain of Spiritual Beasts. In this ranking, the most mysterious one was that of the Spirit of the Luo River, which was ranked in fifth place.

To a certain extent, the Spirit of the Luo river was the most intriguing existence in the Spiritual Beasts Ranking because it did not rely on the usual methods of reproduction and inheritance of the bloodline, but rather developed from a miraculous existence of the Luo River as its precursor.

In the primordial times of the Great Thousand World, there was once a magical river named the Luo River, which seemed to have an everlasting existence. It was ancient, with infinite power and mystery. However, after the horrendous catastrophe when foreign tribes invaded the land, the Luo River was destroyed and ceased to exist, so it was extremely rare to see the Spirit of the Luo River appear again.

As the birth of the Spirit of the Luo River required very precise

and harsh conditions, it not only required the Luo River as a precursor but when it is born, it must find a perfect host, a fetus still in the mother's womb to integrate with. Otherwise, the newly born Spirit of the Luo River would once again fade into nothing and dissipate in the Luo River.

This fusion was rather intriguing, as not only does it not damage the host, it instead serves a complementary function in the path of cultivation, hence it is highly coveted by practitioners.

In the primordial times, when the Luo River was not yet destroyed, there was a group of Sovereigns who merged with the Spirit of the Luo River, and these top powers were a powerful force to be reckoned with in the catastrophe of guarding the Great Thousand World.

However, now that the Luo River had been destroyed, it was obvious that it was impossible to restore it to its former glory, hence over time, the Spirit of the Luo River became one of the most mysterious ranks in the Spiritual Beasts Ranking.

In the top four ranks of the Spiritual Beasts Ranking, the Four Spirit Symbols consisted of the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and Black Turtle. However, this was in fact only symbolic, as the bloodlines of the four spirits were unable to be restrained by the Spiritual Beasts Ranking. They were not only ranked extremely highly on the Spiritual Beasts Ranking, but even on the terrifyingly formidable Heaven Ranking in the Beast Record. Some also called it the Divine Beasts Ranking.

The reason why these four spirits could dominate the top four of the Divine Beasts Ranking was because they had to go through a period of infancy before they could evolve into the true form of their Divine Beasts.

Hence, to a certain extent, the first rank in the Spiritual Beasts Ranking could be considered as the fifth-ranked Spirit of the Luo River...

Moreover, the Spirit of the Luo River possessed the power of evolution. Although it did not have the power of a bloodline, once it really evolved, it became particularly terrifying, as the Spirit of the Luo River would transform into the God of the Luo River. That sheer magnitude of power could only be rivalled by those who had lived for countless years, and only the most powerful Divine Beasts would be able to best it.

In this era, the Spirit of the Luo River had become a legendary myth. Thus, when Xie Tianhe and Ji Xuan witnessed Luo Li summoning the shadow of the Spirit, their faces twisted into dread.

"She's actually the host of the Spirit of the Luo River, how could it be..." Ji Xuan's eyebrows knitted in frustration as he murmured incredulously.

Although the Luo River had been destroyed, there had been a remnant of the hidden Luo River in the Luo God Clan. Who would have expected that the little remnant of the Luo River could really birth the Spirit of the Luo River. What a great fortune indeed!

Xie Tianhe's face was livid with rage as he gnashed his teeth.

"I see." Ji Xuan nodded his head subtly.

"Hmph, well there's nothing to be afraid of. The Spirit of the Luo River is clearly still at a juvenile phase. It won't pose as a threat at all!"

Xie Tianhe snorted disdainfully.

Something in Ji Xuan's gaze flashed momentarily before smoothing back into an indifferent expression.

"I would really like to see what you could possibly do to me."

Xie Tianhe's gaze turned chilling. Now that Wen Qingxuan had been defeated, Luo Li alone would not be able to turn the situation around. Even if she had revealed an astonishing card up her sleeve, Xie Tianhe was not a cowardly imbecile who was easily

intimidated.

He smiled grimly at Luo Li and then roared ferociously, plunging his unnervingly hideous crimson arms into the crown of the Demonic Blood Beast's skull. The crowd saw his arms wriggling frantically, as dark red blood flowed unceasingly into the Demonic Blood Beast's body.

With the influx of blood, the body of the huge and ferocious Demonic Blood Beast flushed blood red. The crimson blood thorns that grew from its back of red bone thorn extended into something increasingly grotesque and horrendous.

Roar!

The Demonic Blood Beast let out a bloodcurdling roar skyward and its murderous aura pervaded heaven and earth, causing the world to shake ominously.

"Blood Demon Bell!"

As Xie Tianhe's roar permeated the air, a flash of blood red light burst out of the mouth of the Demonic Blood Beast and transformed into a gargantuan crimson red bell. Droplets of blood trickled and dripped down the surface of the bell. As countless ferocious faces emerged, a shrill roar rattled through the world.

The rumbling growl seemed to have the power to influence the minds of the people nearby. Numerous disciples in the vicinity of the battle stage felt their spiritual energies fluctuate uncontrollably and even their blood showed signs of ebullience.

Bong!

The Demonic Blood Beast swung its huge fists, dealing a brutal blow towards the Blood Demon Bell. Suddenly, a murderous aura pervaded the heavens and earth, a beam of blood red light around a hundred feet long spewed out, like a blood dragon howling past, creating unnerving sound waves aimed straight towards Luo Li.

Luo Li lifted her gaze slightly. Her beautiful face remained

impassive. With just a gentle lift of her hand, the slender and graceful silhouette behind her mirrored her movement.

Crash!

A gentle stream of crystal clear water flowed out, colliding lightly with the beam of blood.

Whoosh!

In the collision, there was no hard impact causing the spiritual energies to fluctuate and spread. Instead, the blood almost disintegrated entirely at the first touch of the seemingly gentle and clear water.

The ancient Luo River always had the power to cause everything to dissipate.

Luo Li did not give Xie Tianhe any opportunities to regroup as she dealt continuous blows towards his attacks. With a flourish of her hands conjuring up seals, the clear stream of water coalesced into tumultuous waves and in a flicker, appeared above the Blood Demon Bell, engulfing it entirely.

Whoosh!

The Blood Demon Bell was swept into the water and was reduced to nothing in the gentle swooshing sounds of the water.

Xie Tianhe's expression twisted with dread and terror.

However, before he could attack again, he suddenly felt a turmoil in the space surrounding him. His eyes narrowed as he saw his surrounding space being torn apart. Turbulent waves of crystal clear water surged out, turning into a lake that enveloped him.

A seemingly gentle attack instead made Xie Tianhe feel that he was in mortal peril.

Chapter 623: The True Ace Cards

Whoosh.

The sound of clear water lingered over the sky, but it was this crisp sound that made the scalps of countless disciples tingle in fear. It was clear that they all felt a terrible force contained in the seemingly gentle stream of water.

The clear and soft stream of water transformed into a massive lake, entrapping Xie Tianhe and the Demonic Blood Beast in it.

Xie Tianhe looked at the clear water surrounding him. His face twisted with vexation but he was not one to resign himself to death like a sitting duck. His gaze darkened as he conjured up different seals. The Demonic Blood Beast growled as it opened its large, ferocious mouth. A huge beam of blood red light shot out, and violent spiritual energy fluctuations swept through.

Pssh!

However, when the seemingly ferocious beam of blood red light crashed harshly on the pillar of water, it did not achieve much effect. Instead, it diminished at an alarming speed under the flow of the water.

The seemingly gentle lake, however, had become an impenetrable prison, firmly binding Xie Tianhe.

Luo Li hovered in the air, her crystal-like eyes looking nonchalantly at the fierce resistance Xie Tianhe was putting up. She stretched out her slender fingers and pointed them gently downwards.

Crash!

Suddenly, the waves of the gentle lake thrashed violently, revealing its ferocious side. The currents abruptly shrank and contracted. Billowing waves unfolded carrying strange fluctuations as the lake mercilessly bombarded the massive body of

the Demonic Blood Beast.

Tsst-whoosh!

The currents rushed up and suddenly there was a shrill roar of agony as white mist rose up from the huge body of the Demonic Blood Beast. Huge expanses of skin had melted off, revealing the flesh and blood within. The Demonic Blood Beast was not in its real physical manifestation, but merely a force of its Soul Essence. Hence, it was not the real flesh and blood that disintegrated, but the pure spiritual energy and the power of the Soul Essence.

Thus, in the face of the vast streams of water, the crowd could clearly see that the Demonic Blood Beast's massive body was shrinking rapidly as its spiritual energy was being eroded.

Xie Tianhe stood on the shoulders of the Demonic Blood Beast, his face deathly pale and his eyes struck with terror. He found that no matter how much of a defense he put up, he could not resist the seemingly gentle, clear water. He could only watch helplessly as the Demonic Blood Beast melted away while the waves crashed.

In just a few moments, the Demonic Blood Beast trapped in the tumultuous currents had shrunk by nearly half, and the wild spiritual energy fluctuations that preceded it had begun to wither.

"The Serpent of Luo River."

Luo Li's breathtakingly beautiful face remained calm as she conjured up seals with one hand.

Hiss!

In the lake, there was a shrill whine and the water currents were torn with a swish. A dozen giant pythons sprang out. Their huge tails swung around the body of the Demonic Blood Beast, entangling and binding it securely. That terrifying force stopped the Demonic Blood Beast from moving even a muscle and was powerful enough to squeeze the Demonic Blood Beast into pieces just by sheer force.

Xie Tianhe's expression grew distorted as he thrust his arms into the Demonic Blood Beast's body. Despite feeling his Blood Essence surge out, he could barely put up a resistance. He could feel the growing power of the constricting force as his defense began to gradually falter.

The power of the Luo River to dissolve everything was overwhelmingly strong!

Around the golden battle stage, countless disciples watched the scene unfold and were unable to help but gasp in wonder. Who would have thought that Luo Li had such an unexpectedly strong ace up her sleeve? Once she revealed her hand, it had completely suppressed Xie Tianhe.

"All the best Senior Luo Li!"

In the direction of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, numerous disciples cheered and shouted loudly with excited faces. Although they had lost Mu Chen, who had the strongest combat power, Luo Li's performance had amazed them. Although the victor of this Spiritual Academy Competition had not yet appeared, it was undeniable that the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy had put up the most impressive performance.

Creak!

In the midst of the roaring cheers, Xie Tianhe's face became more and more aggravated. The massive body of the Demonic Blood Beast began to emit soft creaking sounds, signalling that it was at its limit. If this continued, it was bound to be destroyed, dealing irreparable damage to Xie Tianhe as well. He would no longer be able to withstand Luo Li.

Krawk!

Just as Xie Tianhe was about to reach his limit, suddenly an ancient and resounding cry of an eagle rang between the heavens and earth. Everyone twitched in response as they saw a shadow of

an eagle's wing descending from the sky. The shadow seemed to sweep through the space as it dove straight into the lake, cutting over Xie Tianhe's body.

Boom! Crash!

As the shadow passed, the huge water pythons burst apart.

Bam!

Feeling the weakening of his restraints, Xie Tianhe hurriedly manipulated the Demonic Blood Beast. They soared into the sky, escaping from the shrouded area of the lake, and then stopped in a humiliating manner in the sky. His eyes twitched with a tinge of palpitation. He did not expect that Luo Li would be so powerful after revealing her ace card, the Spirit of the Luo River. Just one careless move and he was nearly annihilated.

Upon seeing Xie Tianhe escape, Luo Li's eyebrows knitted together slightly. She lifted her beautiful face to glance towards another direction, her tone stating calmly, "You have finally decided to summon the Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk?"

Countless glances shifted upwards as they saw Ji Xuan's figure standing in the sky a short distance away. Behind him, mighty spiritual energy fluctuations permeated the air and in those powerful fluctuations, everyone could see the silhouette of a gargantuan eagle slowly emerge.

The great eagle extended his wings that seemed massive enough to veil mountains as dark purple ran throughout its body. It's head, however, did not resemble that of an eagle, but a ferocious dragon. Its sharp claws were also the sharp claws of a dragon. The creature who resembled a dragon and an eagle but was not entirely either one of them ranked eighth in the Spiritual Beasts Ranking, the Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk.

The Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk was a ferocious Sovereign Spiritual Beast, and despite it not having the pure

bloodline of a dragon, the fusion between two bloodlines led to the emergence of metamorphosis. This resulted in the Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk having the power to surpass its predecessor. It was said that the Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk, which had the highest level of cultivation, could even feed on the Dragon Clan.

However, these dragons were merely Spiritual Beasts which had some of the Dragon Clan's bloodline. Although it did not paint the full picture, it was enough to prove the ferocity of the Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk.

"The Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk... It's ranked quite highly but with its Soul Essence, you didn't think that it would be able to rival the Spirit of the Luo River, did you?"

Her voice calm, Luo Li's crystal-like eyes glanced at the massive Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk.

"Haha well, the Spirit of the Luo River is ranked first on the Spiritual Beasts Ranking, and with the Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk's soul essence alone, it is naturally difficult to rival the Spirit of the Luo River," Ji Xuan said softly and smiled faintly as he looked at Luo Li.

"To compel the spirit of the Luo River, I'm afraid your ability is now infinitely close to the Sovereign-level. "

This remark, however, caused many disciples' hearts to jump in shock as they stared at the graceful figure in awe and reverence. The Sovereign-level... That was representative of being reborn, a boundary of demarcation to differentiate one from the rest. One could only be considered as a top power by attaining the Sovereign-level. Although the Sovereign-level and the Spirit Disaster were only a line apart, the difference between them could not be compensated for with mere ordinary means.

Now that Luo Li was infinitely close to the Sovereign-level, she could be considered invincible among the others and with this

strength, she could even become an elder in some of the Spiritual Academies.

Xie Tianhe's heart shook. With Luo Li's immense power, no wonder he had been suppressed, despite passing through the Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster. Luo Li now had surpassed them by a large margin.

"I originally wanted to leave you to Mu Chen but suddenly, I feel that you don't deserve to be his opponent," Luo Li remarked calmly.

The smile on Ji Xuan's face stiffened little by little as the corners of his mouth twitched slightly. His handsome face suddenly became ferocious, and he glared at Luo Li as if he were going to devour her. Clearly, the latter's remark had dealt such a heavy blow to him, that he was too enraged to maintain his usual composed countenance.

"Are you saying that I'm not worthy to be the opponent of the fellow that has repeatedly been defeated by me?"

Ji Xuan took a deep breath, his face still twisted in rage. He let out an unnerving and eerie laugh and shook his head gently.

"Self-denial does not feel good at all but if he really had the ability, he should stand in front of me and say that statement straight to my face. Unfortunately... he's not worthy enough."

Upon hearing this, Luo Li smiled beatifically without a hint of rage. Her smile dazzled countless people before she lifted her Luo Shen Sword.

"You are not qualified to comment if he's worthy or not. Show me your true ability, and if your ace card is the Soul Essence of the Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk, I guess that would be too disappointing."

Ji Xuan's twisted expression gradually smoothed into his usual mask of composure. He cast a significant look at Luo Li before

slowly closing his eyes. He spread out his arms gently, his nonchalant voice echoing in the sky.

"Since you requested, then... as you wish. I will let you know, between him and I, who exactly is not worthy enough to be the other's opponent."

Crash!

Just when Ji Xuan's last word rang out, everyone felt a terrible power transcending that of the Spirit Disaster sweep out from within Ji Xuan's body like a raging storm.

In that instant, the crowd's expressions morphed into shock.

Chapter 624: Sovereign Sea

Crash!

The spiritual energy between heaven and earth rioted in a frenzy as everyone looked towards the sky in shock and terror. Ji Xuan stood with his hands clasped loosely, as if holding the sun and the moon in his palms. The space behind him twisted with distortion, even showing signs of rupture.

In the twisted areas of the space, it seemed as if one could see a vast and endless ocean where the sea was particularly dazzling. The area was filled with the spiritual energy of the Holy Light, its vastness seemingly capable of crushing a mountain.

An inexplicable sense of oppression emanated from a sea that seemed to be illusory, and it was this sense of pressure that caused countless disciples to gasp in shock. Terror could be seen in their eyes, as this level of oppression was not something that Spirit Disaster masters were capable of. That familiar aura of domination belonged to the Sovereign Master!

"That's... the Sovereign Sea?"

A few people stared at the ocean appearing distinctly in the broken space and they could not help but gasp, murmuring in disbelief.

The true Sovereign Master possesses two unique symbols, one being the Sovereign celestial body and the other the Sovereign Sea. Once their cultivation reaches a certain level, and if they successfully enter the Sovereign-level, their body's aurasea disintegrates and is replaced by the Sovereign Sea!

It was commonly known that the aurasea was the place where the spiritual energies of the human body converge. If we excluded other external tactics and means, the one who had more powerful spiritual energies in his aurasea would possess stronger

capabilities.

However, after stepping into the Sovereign-level, the aurasea inside the body was broken and replaced by the Sovereign Sea, as the Sovereign Sea was a more powerful and perfect existence.

The existence of the aurasea, although essential, was extremely vulnerable from some perspectives. Once the aurasea was destroyed, the path of cultivation could end, and years of hard work and effort in cultivation would be in vain.

The Sovereign Sea was extremely mystical because it did not exist purely within the human body, but uncovered a small mysterious realm in it. This small realm hidden in the body was highly obscure compared to the aurasea, and even more vast and powerful. That degree of sturdiness was something that the aurasea could not match up to.

Most importantly, 10 percent of the Sovereign Sea's power would enable the practitioner to hide their spirit within it, so that even if the physical body was destroyed, the spirit could still survive under the protection of the Sovereign Sea. As long as the practitioner could cultivate a physical body again, he could make a comeback in the future.

Therefore, the Sovereign Sea and the Sovereign Celestial Body were the most apparent signs of the Sovereign Master—one to protect his life and the other to increase his combat power greatly. This was why everyone coveted reaching the Sovereign-level in this realm.

Now, the seemingly illusory sea that appeared behind Ji Xuan was the Sovereign Sea!

The fact that Ji Xuan could call upon and condense the Sovereign Sea... Doesn't it mean that he had stepped into the Sovereign-level?!

Countless people looked at each other at a loss as they swallowed

tightly, eyes full of shock.

Ji Xuan had concealed his hidden depths so deeply and in this case, what was the point of having this match? Disciples of their current stage of cultivation had no chance of resisting the Sovereign-level.

At the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, Ye Qingling, Yu Xi and Su Ling'Er's faces turned pale, as every tactic was virtually impractical and ineffective in the face of the Sovereign Master's true power.

"His Sovereign Sea is not complete," Ling Xi stated slowly, as she stared intently at the battle stage.

Ye Qingling and the girls glanced over upon hearing Ling Xi's words.

"It is true that Ji Xuan is incredibly gifted, that he can reach the threshold of the Sovereign-level at such a young age, but the true Sovereign Sea is perfect, while the edge of the space shows signs of fragmentation. It is clear that he has barely condensed the rudimentary form of the Sovereign Sea, and the spiritual energy of the Sovereign Sea is somewhat mottled. Thus, I think he has borrowed and tapped into external forces."

Ling Xi was, after all, an elder of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Her perceptiveness was on another level, compared to the likes of Ye Qingling. Hence, she could naturally see at a glance the imperfections of Ji Xuan's Sovereign Sea.

However, when she said that Ji Xuan was extremely gifted, she forgot that her age was not much more than Ji Xuan's. Therefore, if Ji Xuan's talent was immense, then she was not one to be trifled with, either. Of course, this was largely due to Ling Xi having always been by Mu Chen's mother's side in the past.

To be under the personal tutelage of a Sovereign who was worthy enough to be compared to the Heavenly Sovereign in the Great

Thousand World... People who could have that honor were few and far between.

"Is that so..."

Ye Qingling and the girls heaved a sigh of relief.

"Don't be too optimistic yet. Even if it is an imperfect Sovereign Sea, the power it embodies far surpasses that of the Spirit Disaster. Although Luo Li possesses the Spirit of the Luo River, the Spirit of the Luo River is a growing Spiritual Beast, so at this stage, I'm afraid the power it can lend to her would not be as strong as you all think." Ling Xi gently shook her head and dashed their hopes again.

Ye Qingling and the girls could only smile grimly and nod. Seeing the current situation, they could not give Luo Li any help. All they could do was to pray that Luo Li could defeat Ji Xuan.

Ling Xi lifted her head. Her beautiful eyes glanced beyond the battle stage, looking up to the Mirror of Judgment suspended high up in the air. She ruminated in silence, and then murmured, "Would you give up just like this..."

...

The spiritual energy between heaven and earth was in a wild frenzy as Ji Xuan stood proudly in the sky. A vast, looming ocean appeared distinctly in the broken space behind him, accentuating his majestic aura as he overlooked the masses below.

"Luo Li, do you think he is still worthy enough to be my opponent now?" Ji Xuan sneered coldly at Luo Li.

However, in the face of Ji Xuan's sneer, Luo Li did not retort but smiled gently, her expression resembling that of calm waters. It was her serene and unperturbed demeanor that made Ji Xuan's face twist in fury again, as he could clearly sense the hidden meaning behind her faint smile.

She would not deign to argue with him on that, because her heart

had the answer that never wavered.

"I'll see how far you can go no matter what you think, but at least others will understand that he is just a loser, whom I defeated!" Ji Xuan's eyes filled with an eerie chill as he abruptly took a fierce step forward. His eyes surged with a cold gaze as he turned his palm and suddenly dealt a blow.

Boom!

The spiritual energy of heaven and earth rioted wildly as a startling spiritual energy swept out from the vast ocean, directly materializing into a substantial Fist of the Holy Light as it clapped down.

Rumble!

The incomparably strong golden ground shattered, disintegrating into pieces. Ji Xuan did not perform any Divine Technique. Instead, he completely relied on the immense power of spiritual energy but even so, that attack was still indescribably strong.

Luo Li's gaze was cool as she clasped the Luo Shen Sword in her hand. With the clench of her first, the Spirit of the Luo River in the ancient winding Luo River behind her caused the river to surge out, coalescing into a larger sword as they swung the swords down at the same time.

Whoosh!

A thousand feet of light from the swords swept down. The fierce and unparalleled aura of the swords soared to the sky.

Bong!

The light of the swords collided harshly with the Fist of the Holy Light, and the impact resulted in shock waves which raged like a storm.

"I'll see how many attacks you can resist!"

Ji Xuan smiled. As he leapt forward, his body stormed into the sky. With a lift of his hands, everyone felt heaven and earth quake and rumble. The Sovereign Sea, hidden in the space, raised a barrage of turbulent waves as countless beams of Divine Light soared into the sky, quickly transforming into blows of the Fist of the Holy Light.

Upon seeing that scene, the scalps of countless people tingled in fear. Such powerful attacks at such a high frequency would result in the rapid and immense consumption of spiritual energy, but Ji Xuan could do it effortlessly at will.

The heavens and earth darkened as numerous blows from the Fist of the Holy Light tore the sky and earth apart like meteorites before swarming towards Luo Li.

Luo Li's expression turned somber as she took a deep breath. With a wave of her hands, the Luo River swept out, guarding her within, resembling a water dragon as it hovered serpentine-like.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

The mighty blows of the Fist of the Holy Light bombarded the Luo River. As the onslaught of spiritual energy was too strong for the golden battle stage to withstand, huge cracks continued to spread out...

Everyone looked on at the scene anxiously.

With the terrifying barrage of attacks from the Fist of the Holy Light, they could see the Luo River guarding Luo Li was rapidly fading.

Numerous disciples of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy gnashed their teeth and clenched their fists tightly.

Anyone could see that in the face of Ji Xuan's terrifying degree of spiritual energy, even Luo Li was unable to put up an effective resistance.

Boom!

The Luo River began to falter and finally reached its limit. With a crisp sound, the Luo River burst into spots of light in the sky and the Spirit of the Luo River dissipated with it. It transformed into a beam of light, surging into Luo Li's body.

Luo Li let out a soft groan. Her body trembled as she fell backwards.

"Look out!"

Just as Luo Li's protective barrier had been broken, Wen Qingxuan's expression morphed into shock as she saw a mass of blood red light suddenly emerge behind Luo Li. Xie Tianhe's face twisted grotesquely in rage as he lifted his palm to deal a critical blow to Luo Li's back.

Wen Qingxuan gritted her teeth and leapt forward nimbly on her toes as she summoned the last of her spiritual energy. She quickly rushed behind Luo Li in an attempt to use her body to shield Luo Li from Xie Tianhe's attack.

"Senior!"

At the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy, numerous girls paled in terror.

"Xie Tianhe, you f**king son of a b*tch!"

The Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy disciples cursed in fury, as Xie Tianhe's despicable and underhanded means enraged them once again.

"Hmph!"

In the face of innumerable curses, Xie Tianhe smiled unnervingly. Not only did he not halt his blow, he instead summoned all his spiritual energy, dealing a brutal blow to Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li, clearly intending to annihilate the two ladies.

Wen Qingxuan gritted her teeth and closed her eyes in

resignation as she prepared herself to bear Xie Tianhe's fierce blow.

The situation was perilous.

"Die!" Xie Tianhe roared ferociously, his blows landing mercilessly.

Rumble!

However, just as Xie Tianhe's blow was about to land on Wen Qingxuan, suddenly the deafening sounds of a raging thunderbolt rang in the heavens and earth.

In the sky, the Chiefs of the Spiritual Acdemies and the Chiefs of the Five Great Academies suddenly glanced at the Mirror of Judgment with a gleam in their eyes.

The surface of the Mirror of Judgment suddenly rippled, and then a flash of thunder too dazzling for one to look at directly burst out. The light of the thunderbolt had such a swift speed and in a flash, it appeared above Wen Qingxuan. Next, everyone saw a fist cast like a thunderbolt, piercing through the space and thundering like lightning as it landed on Xie Tianhe.

Boom!

Xie Tianhe's body descended rapidly with the force of the impact and he landed heavily on the golden battle stage. Half of his body was mangled and mutilated, leaving him a bloody mess.

The curses permeating the air came to an abrupt stop.

Countless people were dumbfounded for a moment, and then they suddenly looked up and saw a slender figure sweep out in the midst of the thunder. His arms were wrapped around Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan's slender waists, as his body moved in a flash and appeared on the golden battle platform. The thunder then gradually weakened and finally, in the midst of thunder and light, a slender figure slowly emerged.

Chapter 625: Mu Chen Appears

Lightning flickered atop the golden battle platform. Following the dissipation of the lightning, a familiar figure appeared before many astonished gazes.

When they saw the figure's appearance, the eyes of countless people narrowed sharply. Some even blinked their eyes repeatedly, looking frightened as if they just saw a ghost.

"That's... Mu Chen??!"

"Wasn't he trapped within the Mirror of Judgment? How did he come out?"

"How is this possible... Did he break through the binding of the Mirror of Judgment?"

"That's too terrifying..."

"..."

At this point, the uproar resounded through the heavens and earth. Almost all of them had their eyes wide open and shock was written on their faces. It was clear that the scene before them shook them, and the astonishment was no less than the discovery of Ji Xuan summoning the Sovereign Sea.

Many disciples in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy looked at the scene in amazement. When recognition dawned on them, ecstasy suddenly poured out of their eyes, and deafening cheers reverberated like thunder.

"Wow, Brother Mu really appeared!"

"Hahaha, no wonder he's worthy of being the top of the Heaven rank at our Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy!"

"Brother Mu, destroy those two b*****s!"

All the disciples in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy were very excited. Although Luo Li had also shown her impressive

capabilities, she had always kept a very low profile in the Academy. Mu Chen, however, improved and advanced courageously at an astonishing speed from the moment he entered the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. He swiftly became the most dazzling newcomer in the Academy.

As he surpassed himself time and again, he began to truly gain the approval of everyone in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Even though he eventually replaced Shen Cangsheng as the top of the Heaven rank, no one felt dissatisfied or questioned his ability. They knew that he had the qualifications to occupy that position.

Unconsciously, in the hearts of many Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy disciples, Mu Chen had clearly become the benchmark of their Academy. Thus, when they saw that Mu Chen had finally reappeared, the excitement in their hearts was palpable.

"This fellow..."

Su Ling'er's eyes sparkled at the slender figure atop the golden platform. She bit her lips, and clasped her small hands tightly together with excitement.

"Brother Mu Chen really appeared. I knew he wouldn't disappoint us!"

Yu Xi's beautiful face was full of admiration.

Ye Qingling heaved a quiet sigh of relief as she looked around at the students of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, who had suddenly burst out with amazing vigor.

They were originally despondent, but at this point it seemed as if they had been infused with infinite confidence, and their faces were full of passionate glee. They seemed to always believe that with the appearance of Mu Chen, the situation could be reversed completely.

Ever since Mu Chen had entered the Northern Heaven Spiritual

Academy, everything he had done during his years there had never disappointed anyone.

The youth had a charisma that had others easily following him, and that charm came from his self-confidence.

No matter how strong the enemy was, he never backed down, and always faced opponents courageously.

"The moment he appears, he acts all suave and rescues beautiful ladies, please..."

Ling Xi smiled faintly, her stiff body gradually relaxing. There was a smile on her little red mouth. Mu Chen's performance did not disappoint her.

Atop the golden battle platform and amid the commotion that rang through heaven and earth, Mu Chen glanced down at the two women in his arms and asked, "Are both of you alright?"

Luo Li gazed at the familiar face in surprise. A faint smile appeared before she shook her head to signal that she was fine. Wen Qingxuan, however, was stunned in shock when she saw Mu Chen's face. Realization dawned on her when she heard the deafening cheers and felt Mu Chen's arm around her waist. Her cheeks flushed as she hurriedly freed herself from Mu Chen's grasp. She stared at him in fury and embarrassment.

"Trying to take advantage of me?"

Upon seeing the girl was about to get mad, Mu Chen replied exasperatedly,

"Under the circumstances, I was just trying to save you, okay."

"Hmph, it must feel good having two of us in your arms, doesn't it?"

Wen Qingxuan wasn't buying his explanation, as she harrumphed.

"You let two girls fight for such a long time. How ungentlemanly

of you!"

Mu Chen scratched his head sheepishly as he lifted his head to glance at Ji Xuan, who stood in the sky. His eyes darkened coldly before smiling in reply. "My apologies. Let me do the next battle."

"Are you up to it? That fellow now can even summon the Sovereign Sea, although he isn't a true Sovereign yet. He's not someone we can resist easily."

Wen Qingxuan glanced at him in apprehension, but worry was hidden in her gaze.

"Let me help you. I can still fight. Even though he summoned the Sovereign Sea, if it came down to it, I might not lose to him," Luo Li said softly.

Mu Chen smiled as he shook his head gently.

"I have been waiting for this battle for a long time."

Luo Li said nothing more, for she knew that the battle before her indeed belonged to Mu Chen.

"Be careful."

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan glanced at each other before slowly stepping back. They locked a glacial gaze on Xie Tianhe, who had been severely injured by a blow from Mu Chen, as he lay limply on the battle platform. Xie Tianhe had completely lost his combat power. However, the two women, who had been extremely disparaging of his previous despicable means, would naturally not let him off lightly now.

Mu Chen on the other hand, did not care about the state Xie Tianhe was in. He slowly hovered in the air, finally standing in front of Ji Xuan, directly facing him.

Ji Xuan's cold gaze had been fixed on Mu Chen ever since he appeared. Deep in his eyes, a cold glint was intertwined with murderous intent. Finally, a ferocious smile became etched on his

face as he tilted his head slightly and stared at Mu Chen.

"I was surprised that you could actually break out."

"Your surprise has just begun."

Mu Chen smiled, but his smile was chilling. His eyes were also filled with sharp, murderous intent. He could feel the spiritual energy surrounding Luo Li was in slight turmoil, which was due to Ji Xuan inflicting injuries on her in their prior battle.

Ji Xuan shook his head as he replied, "It doesn't matter. The fact that you could appear is what I wanted. I'm thinking, if I utterly defeat you here, will those disciples from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy still trust and worship you?"

He had clearly seen the sudden outburst of countless disciples from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, and if he defeated Mu Chen later, the many eyes that had lit up would then turn despondent, and this would make him feel a sense of satisfaction.

Mu Chen smiled but did not say anything more. His hands slowly clenched, and the majestic force of his spiritual energy was suddenly erupting like a volcano.

Boom!

A wave of powerful spiritual energy rippled around Mu Chen's body, the strength far surpassing that from before.

"Oh? The Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster?"

Ji Xuan sensed the spiritual energy fluctuations. As he raised his brow, his mouth twisted into a sardonic smirk.

"It seems that you have gotten a lot of benefits from the Mirror of Judgment."

Before entering the Mirror of Judgment, Mu Chen's ability level was only at the First Grade of the Spirit Disaster. However, his ability now was at the Third Grade of the Spirit Disaster. It was apparent that Mu Chen had passed two Grades of the Spirit

Disaster in the Mirror of Judgment...

"However, this level of spiritual energy is of no threat to me, at this stage."

Ji Xuan smiled before his expression turned cold. Pointing his fingers in the air, a huge holy light swept through the Sovereign Sea behind him, as if materializing into something tangible, traversing the space, and shooting directly at Mu Chen.

His casual point summoned such powerful spiritual energy fluctuations that far surpassed that of masters who had passed the Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster.

Crash!

However, when the beam of holy light containing astonishingly strong spiritual energy fluctuations swept towards him, Mu Chen's expression remained calm. Immediately above his body, bright sparks of thunder burst out. These sparks of thunder wrapped around Mu Chen's body fluidly, quickly integrating into his body.

Whoosh!

The flickering of thunder caused Mu Chen's skin to become as bright as silver. Sparks of thunder glimmered on his chest as thunder marks appeared line by line.

One mark... Five marks... Seven marks... Eight marks... Nine marks!

Mu Chen's Thunder God Physique had attained the powerful stage of the Ennea Rune Lightning Physique!

When the ninth thunder mark emerged, Mu Chen's dark eyes looked as if they were cast by a thunderbolt with flickering sparks of lightning.

He took a step forward, dealing a seemingly slow and mild blow.

Bam!

His fist seemed to be slow, but in an instant, it bombarded the

beam of seemingly intangible holy light. The sparks of thunder then burst out in a barrage, shattering the holy light into smithereens with one brutal blow!

"You want to resist the Sovereign with just the strength of your physical body? What a joke!"

Seeing Mu Chen surrounded by thunderbolts, Ji Xuan sneered coldly as his gaze hardened. He could feel that Mu Chen's physical body had become extremely strong, but if he wanted to compete with him on that basis, he was afraid that Mu Chen was overly naive.

"Even someone like you is considered to be a Sovereign?"

Mu Chen smiled, as he gazed intently at the vast and majestic Sovereign Sea behind Ji Xuan. He smirked and stated slowly, "Isn't it just an imperfect Sovereign Sea? Did you think... that you were the only one who had it?"

Upon hearing Mu Chen's words, Ji Xuan's eyes narrowed in shock.

Chapter 626: Mu Chen's Sovereign Sea

In the sky, a cold glint flashed in Ji Xuan's eyes as he stared at the thunderbolts surrounding Mu Chen. His eyes narrowed as he thought of Mu Chen's prior statement. However, he twisted his mouth into a sardonic smirk as he replied, "Oh, really?"

Clearly, he did not believe that Mu Chen also possessed the Sovereign Sea. After all, no matter how astonishing an encounter he had, it was impossible to advance from the First Grade of the Spirit Disaster to summoning the Sovereign Sea in merely an hour.

However, in the face of Ji Xuan's sarcasm and condescension, Mu Chen did not say anything more. Instead, he smiled slightly, his expression turning glacially cold. A chilling glint flashed in his thunderous eyes while his hands conjured up seals!

Whoosh!

A red pillar of light suddenly burst into the sky from the crown of Mu Chen's head. Simultaneously, a palpably demonic force pervaded the heavens and earth, as if a primordial, ferocious beast was about to be born.

Everyone looked up at the scene.

Inside the red pillar of light, the gargantuan Demon Pillar stood quietly. The surface of the Demonic Pillar was well-worn and had traces of the vicissitudes of life. It was impossible to tell what could have inflicted the hideous marks, but it was also conceivable that in primordial times, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar most likely had gone through terrible and bloody battles.

On top of the Demonic Pillar, some strange patterns could be seen, such as chains entangled around the surface of the pillar, as if they were binding the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

These patterns were naturally the seals that Mu Chen called upon from the "Immortal Page" within his body.

After all, the demonic aura of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar was too strong, and previously it had been impossible for Mu Chen to control it. Hence, he could only seal it away.

However, it was time for the seal... to be broken.

A cold glint flashed in Mu Chen's eyes, and he moved immediately, appearing before the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, conjuring a seal with one hand and then dealing a blow to the Demonic Pillar.

Buzz!

A wave emanated from Mu Chen's palm and then spread out. The "Immortal Page" hidden within his aurasea suddenly gave out a slight hum. A dark purple glow bloomed and surged out from Mu Chen's palm.

"Seal, break!"

A faint voice rang in Mu Chen's heart.

Whish-whish.

The dark purple light patterns on the surface of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar swiftly melted away.

Boom!

With the melting of the seal, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar suddenly trembled sharply and violently. The huge Demonic Pillar, which was originally a hundred feet tall, had expanded rapidly without Mu Chen's control. Looking at it from a distance, it seemed it could reach up to the sky. The terrifying demonic power that emanated from the Demonic Pillar increased in sharp bursts, painting the heavens and earth a crimson red.

At the sight of the fierce burst of demonic power, many hearts trembled in fear.

Even the Chiefs of the Spiritual Academies in the sky were slightly unnerved by this terrible force.

Chief Tai Cang looked at the scene, a glint of surprise flashing in his somber eyes, as he murmured, "Is he intending to break the seal of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar? This primordial evil artefact is definitely not easy to control..."

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar was once the most precious treasure of the Demonic Dragon Palace. Chief Tai Cang was somewhat knowledgeable in this. Hence, he knew its power very well. If the Demonic Dragon Palace could restore the Great Meru Demonic Pillar to its original state, even if the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy had the assistance of the Northern Sea Dragon, it would be difficult for them to win.

Now that the Great Meru Demonic Pillar had landed in Mu Chen's possession, could he truly wield it with his current ability? With such an evil artefact, the moment he lost control of it, he would likely be devoured by its power.

Everyone gazed at the monstrous Demonic Pillar in the sky.

After he had broken the seal, Mu Chen looked up and gazed at the huge Demonic Pillar before him. The surface of the pillar appeared as if it had scarlet cracks, which appeared to be in the form of the mouth of the devil. The unceasing spitting of appalling waves of demonic force revealed the most terrifying side of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

Mu Chen moved and immediately appeared at the top of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

Crash!

However, just as he landed, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar trembled violently. A fierce demonic force transformed into a beam of blood-red light, sweeping towards him directly. Such an evil artefact could not be tamed easily, and with its legendary origins, such a powerful evil would possess its own intelligence. Mu Chen had sealed it previously. Hence, it could only lurk silently, but now that the seal had been broken, it naturally would

be unwilling to let Mu Chen control it.

"Hmph."

Facing the possibility of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar devouring him, Mu Chen snorted coldly. It was clear that he had expected this to happen. Stomping his feet heavily, the dark purple light patterns spread quickly along the soles of his feet. As the lines spread, the terrifying demonic aura suddenly diminished like a weakening tide.

Despite the Great Meru Demonic Pillar being aggressive and brutal, the "Immortal Page" within Mu Chen's body possessed the power to curb and restrain it.

As it was subjected to Mu Chen's counter-attack, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar appeared to restrain itself, and no longer dared to devour Mu Chen.

"Now that you are obedient, let me borrow all your strength!"

Mu Chen felt the Great Meru Demonic Pillar quiet down. He smiled as he immediately sat down directly atop of the Demonic Pillar. As he lifted his hands lightly, scarlet demonic force soared to the sky, and materialized into a beam of scarlet light, enveloping Mu Chen.

Whoosh!

An endless stream of demonic force poured into Mu Chen's body, and finally, rushed into the aurasea within him like a ferocious dragon.

After the seal of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar had been broken, it became apparent that it was more fierce than when it had been sealed, and the power of the demonic force was far greater than it had ever been in the past.

The fierce and vast demonic force constantly poured into the aurasea, and the entire aurasea turned scarlet red. As its capacity gradually reached its limit, a sense of pain quietly poured in.

In the face of this sharp and immense pain, however, Mu Chen still remained motionless as he triggered the demonic force of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar to continuously surge into his aurasea.

Whish-whish!

As the severe pain surged, the pressure of the demonic force could no longer be accommodated in the aurasea. This resulted in a slight distortion at the central point of the aurasea. When the distortion reached its extreme, a small black spot emerged, barely noticeable, but a strange fluctuation emanated from it. Within the tiny black spot, it was as if a strange little realm was hidden in it.

When that little black spot appeared, a terrible suction force burst out of it, and suddenly the demonic force inside the aurasea roared before being swallowed up entirely by that small black spot.

In a short time, the aurasea became empty again, without even the slightest spiritual energy lingering within.

Atop the Demonic Pillar, Mu Chen's body trembled slightly. He looked up at the distant sky, directing a smile towards Ji Xuan, who had been staring at him coldly. He then rose up, his hands slowly spreading out.

Boom!

The space behind Mu Chen suddenly appeared distorted, and in that space distortion, it seemed that an ocean of blood was emerging. It also resembled a vast sea of spiritual energy, but the spiritual energy of this ocean was painted crimson red like blood. It looked extremely gory.

Countless people were looking at the blood red ocean in the twisted space behind Mu Chen, as fear flashed in their eyes.

The Sovereign Sea!

"Brother Mu Chen actually summoned the Sovereign Sea?" Yu Xi looked at the scene before her and exclaimed in surprise.

Ye Qingling and the others also had expressions of unimaginable shock. After all, Mu Chen only had the ability of the First Grade of the Spirit Disaster before entering the Mirror of Judgment, but now, he advanced a sudden step to the extent of summoning the Sovereign Sea. Wasn't that too terrifying?

Ling Xi shook her head gently as she stated softly, "That's not the Sovereign Sea that Mu Chen summoned. He only summoned a 'Sovereign Origin' in his aurasea, then filled it with the demonic power of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. However, this power does not truly belong to him, thus it has its limits and cannot last for long. The Sovereign Sea can only exist for a short period of time before it will dissipate, but that should be his purpose."

The aforementioned Sovereign Origin was the original form of the Sovereign Sea, but in order to form the true Sovereign Sea, it was necessary to perfect it with one's own spiritual energy. Now, Mu Chen did not have sufficient time to do so, so he employed another approach. Lending the power of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar and infusing it with the Sovereign Origin could form a false Sovereign Sea.

However, Mu Chen did not care if the Sovereign Sea was real or false at this point. He just needed the power.

Once he possessed the Sovereign Sea, all of Ji Xuan's advantages would vanish thoroughly.

With the Ennea Rune Lightning Physique and the power of the Sovereign Sea, right now Mu Chen could be counted as truly invincible under the Sovereign-level.

The tumultuous waves of the scarlet sea rolled in the twisted space as Mu Chen slowly lifted his head. He looked at Ji Xuan, who was at a distance, his expression somber. The corners of Mu Chen's mouth twisted into a cold smirk as he reached out his hand, lightly bending it, and pointed to Ji Xuan.

The young man planted his feet on the massive Demonic Pillar.

His eyes, one scarlet, the other with flashing thunderbolts, were as dark as the thunder wrapped around him.

An unspeakable aura of oppression slowly permeated the arena. The pressure surpassed that of Ji Xuan's, appearing to be even stronger!

Currently, Mu Chen was akin to a vengeful god full of murderous intent as he intimidated everyone in the arena.

Chapter 627: The Blow of a Sovereign

Mu Chen stepped on the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. The demonic force swirled throughout the heavens and the earth. Everyone held their breath due to the oppression.

They lifted up their eyes to look at the tall and handsome youth. He had a cold look and his red eyes flickered with wrath. He looked flatly at Ji Xuan from afar and said calmly, "There was no outcome with the fight that we had years back. It is time to see who the winner is."

Ji Xuan looked gloomy and said slowly, "It seems like during the Mirror of Judgment, I should not have interfered. I have given you an opportunity instead."

Judging from the situation, Mu Chen must have chanced upon something great when he had been trapped in the spiritual energy whirlpool. His power had suddenly increased tremendously, and he had reached the Third Grade of the Spirit Disaster. He was even able to open up the Sovereign Sea and be on par with Ji Xuan.

Mu Chen disregarded what he said, and looked at Ji Xuan with increased intensity.

"You have not disappointed me, though. Otherwise, I would be made a laughing stock for being wary of you." Ji Xuan clasped his palms together. Holy lights gathered together and a Divine Light Spear appeared. It had wings on it and looked extremely special. It was like the Wings of the Angel.

A forceful, blazing, holy light circled out with an imposing fluctuation.

"The Spear of the Angel..." Chief Tai Cang saw the long spear fluctuating strongly in Ji Xuan's hand and stared at it. He said flatly, "Saint Spiritual Academy is indeed generous. They have given the Low Rank Divine Artifact to Ji Xuan."

"Hahaha, Ji Xuan has been performing well in the Academy. He has also contributed much, which is why he has been given the Spear of the Angel." Chief Tian Sheng of Saint Spiritual Academy smiled and said, "Although the Spear of the Angel is powerful, it is still not as powerful as Mu Chen's Great Meru Demonic Pillar. It seems like the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy has put in much effort as well."

He did not think that Mu Chen had earned the Great Meru Demonic Pillar but rather, that the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy had merely given it to him.

Chief Tai Cang sneered and could not be bothered to explain. He turned to look at the two competitors in the sky. The atmosphere was getting tense. They were at swords' points.

Everyone fixed their gazes on the sky, their eyes burning with anticipation. The two people before them were the most powerful among the younger generation in the Academies. Their fight would be a fight of champions. This would be the main attraction of the Spiritual Academy Competition.

Buzz!

Ji Xuan had a cold look about him as he exerted great force and grabbed the long spear. The moment he moved his body, he disappeared into thin air.

Pom!

However, just as he was about to disappear, Mu Chen threw out a blow toward the empty space before him.

Boom! Boom!

Black lightning surged crazily, and a majestic spiritual energy gathered around it. It shot out with a roar like a ferocious dragon. It contained a terrifying power that was capable of injuring someone who had passed the Third Grade of the Spirit Disaster.

A sharp spear tore the space apart while holy lights surged. The

force was overbearing and hot, creating a warp in the space. The spear shot across and its tip hit the lightning-engulfed fist.

Prang!

The sound of crashing metal resounded.

A horrifying windstorm swirled out from where the fist and spear met. A visible fluctuation spread out.

Mu Chen stayed put and looked ahead. There was a space warp, but Ji Xuan was nowhere to be seen. He could only see the spear that seemed to have traveled through space.

"What is the point of probing now?"

Mu Chen was expressionless. He threw out a powerful blow, and it shot past the horizon like a thunderbolt. It was indescribably fast and blasted off in the sky.

Boom! Boom!

A figure had been thrown out at the spot where the thunderbolt blasted and flew backward. After several steps, he then managed to find his balance. It was Ji Xuan, holding on to his spear and looking gloomy.

"Ha."

Ji Xuan gave a cold look and snorted. He looked extremely grave and suddenly formed a seal with his hands. There was a space warp behind him, and a Sovereign Sea filled with holy lights exploded. The Sovereign Sea whizzed crazily and multiple rays of holy light gushed out.

"Holy Light Art, Legions of Angels!"

Following his shout, rays of holy light started to come together and form 1,000 holy light figures. Their faces could not be seen, but there were light wings flapping on their backs. Every holy light figure radiated a powerful spiritual energy fluctuation. The fluctuation was comparable to the experts in the Spirit Stage.

Many disciples surrounding the Golden Battle Stage were stunned. Ji Xuan was indeed powerful. He had cultivated such a mysterious Divine Technique. It was a miracle. He had shown how powerful that technique was compared to the Sovereign-level and Spirit Stage. It could not be displayed through other means other than real power. If Mu Chen did not open up the Sovereign Sea, he would not be able to fight against Ji Xuan.

"Kill!"

Ji Xuan looked coldly at Mu Chen and shook his spear. The holy light figures whizzed out, formed a powerful array, and surrounded Mu Chen.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

The Angels of the Holy Light grabbed a hold of their Divine Light Spears and shot toward Mu Chen.

"Back off!"

Mu Chen's eyes were cold. He stomped his feet, and multiple scarlet lights shot out of the Sovereign Sea, blasting at the Angels of the Holy Light.

As there was about to be a collision, Ji Xuan curled his lips and gave an evil smile. He formed another seal and shouted, "Funeral of the Angel!"

Boom! Boom! Boom!

An earth-shattering explosion took place, and the Angels of the Holy Light exploded. A terrifying holy light windstorm covered up Mu Chen. The windstorm was about 1,000 feet high, and there were huge cracks on the Golden Battle Stage.

Many people turned pale seeing this powerful array. It was rare to see such a fierce fight in the Spiritual Academy Competition.

The holy light windstorm raged crazily. Everyone fixed their gaze on the windstorm and was afraid of being hit by it. They felt that

Mu Chen should be at his wit's end.

The holy light windstorm gradually died down, but everyone was still staring at the spot where it had been. Suddenly, there were screams of shock and Ji Xuan, who was in the air, looked stunned as well.

After the windstorm had dissipated, Mu Chen remained standing in the air.

His shirt had been shredded, and there was thunder water flowing down his body. Nine lightning runes were glittering around his chest. Thunder emanated from his body continuously. Other than the shredded clothes, Mu Chen was not damaged. Ji Xuan's horrifying attack had not hurt him at all.

Some of the onlookers swallowed hard and said in shock, "What a powerful physique..."

Mu Chen stood shirtless in the sky. His skin was bright like silver. Although he did not look muscular and was a bit thin, he gave one the feeling that he would be unmovable, even if the heavens and the earth fell apart.

Mu Chen's eyes looked bright. Even the demonic force from his body was unable to suppress the force from the thunderbolt. He grasped his palms and looked at Ji Xuan, as though a divine being were looking at an ant.

"If this is only what you are capable of, let me do it." Although Mu Chen spoke lightly, his words were accompanied by thunder, and resounded in the heavens and the earth, causing a fluctuation.

Boom! Boom!

After Mu Chen had spoken, some of the onlookers sensed that the sky had darkened, so they lifted up their heads to look. Dark thunder clouds suddenly surged and covered a radius of 1,000 feet. The dark thunder clouds caused everyone to hold their breath.

A silver thunderbolt writhed around like a huge dragon in the

thunder clouds. It emanated an oppressive power.

Boom!

The thunder clouds writhed about and suddenly, an enormous lightning bolt pierced through the clouds and shot downward. The thunderbolt did not hit Ji Xuan, but instead blasted down hard on Mu Chen.

Bang!

A majestic thunderbolt struck Mu Chen. However, Mu Chen absorbed it into his body.

Swish! Swish!

The black lightning water on Mu Chen's body started to solidify. In the blink of an eye, black, vicious-looking Lightning Armor appeared on his body. While Mu Chen had been covered by the armor, his body seemed to have grown many times. He had become a Lightning Giant.

The fluctuation in Mu Chen's body was increasingly terrifying.

"I can kill you with one blow."

A pair of bright eyes looked at Ji Xuan from under the Black Lightning Armor. Booming sounds resounded in the heavens and the earth. Mu Chen stepped forth and in the next instant, he appeared above Ji Xuan. He threw out a blow that consisted purely of ultimate power.

Thunderbolts danced crazily in the sky. The spiritual energy in the scarlet Sovereign Sea whizzed out and entered Mu Chen's arms.

The power of the Sovereign Sea and the Ennea Rune Lightning Physique gathered together and turned into a simple blow.

Boom!

Just one blow, and the space broke out.

Ji Xuan's expression changed. Even the Chiefs of the Spiritual Academies, who were in the sky, looked extremely grave. This blow that Mu Chen had thrown had displayed the true power of a top Sovereign!

Chapter 628: Ji Xuan's trump Card

Boom!

The heavens and the earth seemed to be quaking.

Thunderbolts were shooting all over the sky while thunder resounded. The blow that Mu Chen had spent so much time gathering his energy for was so powerful, he was taken by surprise. This blow that combined the physique and spiritual energy was perfect. They blended well together, and it was so powerful that it could kill any opponent below the Sovereign-level.

Even Ji Xuan was stunned by this blow.

Dong!

Tiny cracks formed where the blow hit. It looked like glass that had been smashed.

The terrifying lightning had been amplified in Ji Xuan's eyes. He gritted his teeth and formed a seal. Holy lights in the Sovereign Sea blasted out and speedily gathered before him. Within a short period of time, a Divine Shield of about 100 feet appeared.

"Angel's Divine Shield!"

The Divine Shield was extremely plain and primitive. It had a pair of holy wings and seemed formidable. It also seemed to be able to withstand any attack.

In the face of Mu Chen's almost perfect blow, Ji Xuan had to activate his most powerful defense.

Boom!

Mu Chen had thrown out his terrifying blow as the Divine Shield appeared. The blow blasted out and hit the Divine Shield.

When the blows collided, it was as if a meteorite had landed. The heavens and the earth seemed to slow down for a while. Following that, there was a loud explosion that resounded in the entire space.

A visible wave swirled out in the sky up to a few thousand feet away. The entire heavens and earth were in turbulence.

Lightning and holy lights swirled out from the spot where the blows met.

Many people squinted their eyes and fixed their gazes on that spot. Although their eyes were prickling in pain, they refused to look away.

The collision was earth-shattering.

Dong!

A horrifying shockwave spread out. Instantly, a pathetic light figure was thrown down to the Golden Battle Stage.

Dong!

The Golden Battle Stage had been destroyed. A deep hole a few hundred feet wide appeared. Cracks were everywhere, and very quickly, the sturdy Golden Battle Stage collapsed. A huge rock rolled down and covered the deep hole.

Hiss.

Many people gasped. They were obviously shocked by the array. So far, no one had ever destroyed the Golden Battle Stage, which had been specially constructed for the Spiritual Academy Competition.

"Who has fallen?"

The crowd quickly shifted their attention to the duel. Judging from the situation, the one who had fallen must have lost. The winner would emerge from this powerful duel.

The spiritual energy fluctuation was still raging crazily in the sky and it continued for a few minutes. After a while, the sky gradually calmed down, and the lightning and holy lights dissipated.

Swoosh.

Everyone stared at the sky.

As the sky became clear, a figure slowly appeared.

The figure was in black Lightning Armor. However, the Lightning Armor had been smashed. Bits and pieces of the sturdy armor started to fall off.

"It is Mu Chen!"

Many people's eyes widened. Although his face was covered by the Lightning Armor, they could still recognize him.

Many students from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy shouted with joy. The disciples' faces were red with excitement. They looked at the figure in the sky with adoration.

"Brother Mu Chen has won!" Yu Xi said. She was extremely excited and held tightly onto Su Ling'er's arm.

"He is amazing." Su Ling'er nodded. Her face was red and her big, beautiful eyes were glittering.

On one side of the battle stage, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan lifted up their heads to look at the figure. They heaved sighs of relief. Luo Li was elated and proud of Mu Chen. Even if she had been the one to defeat Ji Xuan, she would not be so happy. Wen Qingxuan had a complex look. There was admiration in her look, but at the same time, she was reluctant to admit defeat.

Many Chiefs of the Spiritual Academies watched the scene from the sky with different expressions on their faces. However, none of them spoke.

The Chiefs of the Five Great Academies remained silent and watched quietly. Only Chief Tian Sheng clenched his fists and was no longer smiling.

The place was in an uproar. The figure in the sky gently moved, and the Lightning Armor fell off. As all of them had expected, Mu Chen appeared. His eyes had resumed their darkness, and he

lowered his head to look at his fist. It was bloody. Ji Xuan's last defense was stunningly powerful. It was shockproof. If Mu Chen's physique had not advanced to the stage of the Ennea Rune Lightning Physique, his arm would have been smashed.

Mu Chen was oblivious to the uproar and fixed his gaze on the collapsed battle stage. Ji Xuan must have been seriously injured by the blow, but Mu Chen could not understand why he felt so uneasy.

The shouts continued for a while and gradually stopped. Many people turned to look at the Golden Battle Stage that had collapsed. If Ji Xuan did not appear, the result of the fight of the champions would be out...

There was dead silence.

Mu Chen stood in the air, his eyes glittering. Suddenly, he clenched his fists. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar shot up to the sky and carried a demonic force with it. It smashed down hard on the Golden Battle Stage.

Boom!

The Battle stage had already collapsed, but at that instant, it was crushed. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar smashed down onto the hole in the Golden Battle Stage.

Pom!

Golden rocks turned into powder and there were cracks all over.

This blow that Mu Chen had thrown out was merciless. Many people were stunned. It was a deadly blow.

Mu Chen did not bother with what was going on in the minds of the onlookers. When the Great Meru Demonic Pillar fell, his eyes suddenly narrowed and he looked solemn. The spiritual energy that had dissipated started to surge again. The lightning on his body started to shimmer as well.

The disciples were shocked that Mu Chen was fully armed. Immediately, they collected themselves and stared at the Golden Battle Stage that had collapsed. Is Ji Xuan able to continue with the fight?

Dong!

A deep sound traveled from under the Golden Battle Stage. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar suddenly shook.

Dong! Dong!

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar shook more vigorously, and suddenly, it shot up to the sky and attacked Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's eyes turned cold. He tapped his feet and appeared on top of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. He stomped on it and suppressed it. He became wary of the dark hole in the Golden Battle Stage and stared at it.

Everyone fixed their gazes on the hole as well and held their breath. Their hearts were thumping fast.

Purple lights started to appear from the dark hole and then spread out. A figure slowly floated up and landed gently on a huge rock.

Everyone gasped upon seeing the figure.

It was Ji Xuan. However, he looked different than before. There were purple lights on his body and strange purple light patterns on his face. His eyes had turned dark purple, and they were sharp and cold. He looked hostile.

There was a pair of purple eagle's wings on his back. As the wings flapped gently, a space warp formed around it.

Ji Xuan's face looked indifferent. He folded his arms before him, and lifted up his head to look at Mu Chen with disdain.

Mu Chen squinted and looked at Ji Xuan. He looked so different and strange now. Mu Chen could feel prickly pain on his skin. He

sensed grave danger that could put his life at risk.

Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li turned pale as they looked at Ji Xuan. They felt something was amiss.

The Chiefs of the Academies were taken aback as well. They looked at Ji Xuan with astonishment.

Other than Chief Tian Sheng, Chief Tai Cang and the other Chiefs looked at him with their eyes glittering.

"Something is not right with Ji Xuan," Ling Xi said and looked gravely at Ji Xuan.

"Sister Ling Xi, what is the problem with this guy? He suddenly become very scary," Sun'er said timidly. She was extremely sensitive and could indistinctly feel that Ji Xuan had become more horrifying than before.

Ling Xi did not reply, but fixed her gaze on Ji Xuan.

Ji Xuan slowly curled his lips into a ruthless smile. He gently stomped his feet and a fluctuation spread out. Everyone was shocked to see that the Golden Battle Stage had turned into powder...

Kree!

The sharp cry of an ancient eagle resounded in the heavens and the earth. The cry was piercing to the ears. Everyone saw a huge purple eagle about 1,000 feet tall appear behind Ji Xuan. The eagle had the head of a dragon and the body of an eagle. A terrifying fluctuation emanated from its body as it raged at the heavens and the earth.

Many people looked on with fear. They could sense that the huge, ancient eagle was not an illusion. It was real!

Ji Xuan did not possess the Soul Essence of the Ancient Dragonhawk. He possessed its actual body!

Chapter 629: Re-appearance of Nine Nether

Kuk!

The sharp cry of an eagle resounded in the heavens and the earth. The ear-piercing sound became real, and multiple deep scratches were seen on the ground. A terrifying oppression covered the place. Everyone, including the Chiefs of the Academies, turned pale under the oppression.

A few Chiefs looked gravely at the huge eagle and said, "Is this the actual body of the Ancient Dragonhawk?"

"It is in fact the actual body and not the Soul Essence... but why has the Ancient Dragonhawk hidden itself in Ji Xuan's body? Given his power, he would not be able to tame it," some of the Chiefs said with curiosity.

The Ancient Dragonhawk was ranked number eight in the Spiritual Beasts Ranking Chart. The Spiritual Beasts in this level would have matured, and their power was comparable to the Sovereign-level. Ji Xuan had just managed to open up the Sovereign Sea. Strictly speaking, he had not reached the Sovereign-level, thus he could not have the ability to tame the Ancient Dragonhawk and control it.

Some of the Chiefs looked at one another and were baffled as well.

"The strength of this Ancient Dragonhawk has reached Grade Four Sovereign... it seems like the outcome is obvious. There is no need to continue with the fight," one of the Chiefs shook his head and said helplessly.

In the Academy, those at Grade Four Sovereign could become an elder. The elders of the Five Great Academies were extremely powerful. Their level was a level beyond the reach of the disciples.

"Ha, Chief Tian Sheng, your Academy is cheating. The Ancient

Dragonhawk does not belong to Ji Xuan. He has borrowed it. This is against the rules!" Chief Tai Cang said in a deep voice and looked coldly at the huge Ancient Dragonhawk.

Upon hearing this, Chief Tian Sheng smiled and said, "Chief Tai Cang, what you have said is not right. This Ancient Dragonhawk has nothing to do with our Academy. This is Ji Xuan's own doing. The Ancient Dragonhawk is lodging in him, and Ji Xuan has paid a great price to possess such a great power."

"Lodging?"

The Chiefs of the other three Great Academies were shocked. Lodging was extremely dangerous. When the Ancient Dragonhawk was present in the human body, it could attempt to take over the person's mind and replace it with its own. Likewise, the lodger could attempt to refine its power and control it.

This was betting one's life on it. The one who had been defeated had to pay a great price for it.

Generally speaking, very few people and Spiritual Beasts would go for this method. No man would want to put a time bomb in his body. To a Spiritual Beast, it was too dangerous. They would not want to be placed in such a situation.

Lodging was thus rarely seen.

"The Ancient Dragonhawk is eyeing Ji Xuan's physique and it is trying to take over. Ji Xuan, on the other hand, is eyeing the Ancient Dragonhawk's power. They have thus formed a lodging. Ji Xuan has not borrowed the power, so he has not violated the rules," Chief Tian Sheng said and smiled.

The Chiefs of the other three Great Academies were silent. Ji Xuan was not powerful. The Ancient Dragonhawk could defeat Ji Xuan if it had wanted to, given its power. However, Ji Xuan was ruthless and cunning. He must be well prepared, or else he would not have done such a dangerous thing.

Chief Tai Cang remained gloomy and was dumbfounded. Although Ji Xuan had taken a shortcut to gain such a great power, he had bet on it with his life. Chief Tai Cang lifted his head and looked up at the youth in the air. He let out a sigh. Mu Chen had fared well, but no one had expected Ji Xuan to hide such a great power within.

...

"This fella... has an Ancient Dragonhawk hidden in his body!" Wen Qingxuan gritted her teeth as she looked at the Ancient Dragonhawk. She said with a wry smile, "It seems like we have underestimated Ji Xuan."

Luo Li clenched her fists and looked at Mu Chen. He looked calm and was expressionless. However, he must have been taken aback.

"Later, you back off first," Luo Li said softly.

"What about you?" Wen Qingxuan asked.

"Mu Chen will not give up. I will stay by him to the end," Luo Li said firmly and smiled.

"The power of the Ancient Dragonhawk is comparable to Grade Four Sovereign. Even if you join forces with Mu Chen, it is impossible for you to defeat it." Wen Qingxuan said anxiously, "Just forget it. This is just a competition. Everyone knows that Ji Xuan is trying to cheat. This power is not cultivated by him.

"He would have been defeated by Mu Chen if they fought based only on their abilities!"

Luo Li shook her head and said with a smile, "Do you think Mu Chen will back out?"

Wen Qingxuan was at a loss for words. She knew about the feud between Mu Chen and Ji Xuan. Although Mu Chen looked mild, he was extremely stubborn. Even if he knew that he would lose to Ji Xuan, he would not admit defeat.

"Silly guy." Wen Qingxuan sighed. However, she must admit that Mu Chen had character when he was stubborn.

Wen Qingxuan gritted her teeth and said, "Let's do it together then!" She had recuperated and regained much of her strength.

Luo Li was shocked and looked at Wen Qingxuan. She had not expected Wen Qingxuan to join them in this fight, in which they did not have much confidence in winning.

Wen Qingxuan blushed when Luo Li looked at her. She quickly said, "Mu Chen has helped me earlier. I am not an ungrateful person."

Luo Li smiled and looked thoughtfully at her. However, she did not say another word and just nodded.

There was not much uproar. The disciples were shocked by the Ancient Dragonhawk and their mouths hung wide open. The degree of oppression had surpassed their limits. They knew that this level was something beyond their ability, at least for the moment.

The people from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy were silent as well. Many of them looked pale and lost the joy they had earlier.

As the people looked at the sky in shock, Ji Xuan turned his neck lazily. Crackling sounds were heard. He lifted up his face and stared at Mu Chen, and said with a smile, "Are you disappointed?"

Mu Chen was expressionless. He slowly clenched his fists.

The Ancient Dragonhawk that was behind Ji Xuan looked at Mu Chen with hostility. It was not bothered by Mu Chen's strength. It shifted its gaze to Ji Xuan and said coldly, "Is it because of this fella that you have summoned me? Ji Xuan, do you know that the more you use me, the more I can eat you up?"

Upon hearing this, Ji Xuan smiled and said, "I hope that you can take over my physique before I surpass you.

"But, before that, we are bound together for good or ill. So, please help me finish off this guy."

"I will grant you your wish." The Ancient Dragonhawk looked ferocious. Its eyes were glittering and it laughed creepily. As it flapped its wings, it turned into a streamer and dashed into Ji Xuan's body.

Swish! Swish!

The wings behind Ji Xuan instantly expanded to about 100 feet. His hands became sharp and the purple nails were like daggers. A horrifying spiritual energy windstorm whizzed in the surroundings, and tore the heavens and earth apart. The degree of the spiritual energy fluctuation had reached the Sovereign-level.

Ji Xuan could feel the power in his body and he enjoyed it. His eyes turned sharp like an eagle. He lifted up his head and smiled at Mu Chen. As he flapped the wings, a dark purple spiritual energy windstorm swept out and a peerless force shot toward Mu Chen.

Mu Chen looked grave. He clenched his fists and the Great Meru Demonic Pillar shot up and smashed down hard.

Dong!

The spiritual energy windstorm hit the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. It shook and was thrown back. Mu Chen threw out a blow, but the power shot back at him and caused severe pain in his arms. The web between his thumbs and forefingers tore apart and blood flowed out. He would have been killed if not for his tough physique.

"You are just like an ant to me now." Ji Xuan sneered at Mu Chen. Upon saying this, the wind shrieked behind him, but Ji Xuan did not bother to look. With a backhand, he threw out a blow and a space warp formed. Purple spiritual energy swirled out like a serpent.

Dong!

There was a hollow sound and two ladies were thrown back. They were Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan, who were trying to help Mu Chen. However, judging from the situation, they were no match for Ji Xuan.

Swoosh!

Ji Xuan flapped the wings and multiple afterimages appeared. Before Mu Chen could react, a sharp formidable blow landed on his shoulder.

Bam!

His body was thrown backward and blood was spewing out from his mouth.

"You are so slow."

Mu Chen had just managed to find his balance when a gloomy voice sounded from behind him. Following that, another blow landed on his body.

Pom!

Mu Chen landed heavily on the ground. He wiped off the blood from the corner of his mouth and looked pathetic. However, even if he was on the losing end, he did not show any sign of fear or have any intention of retreating.

"Brother Mu, forget it..." As the people of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy watched Mu Chen, some of the girls started to weep. Mu Chen had always been full of confidence and warmth at the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. They had never seen him in such a sorry state.

The disciples of the other Academies did not say a word. However, they were filled with admiration for Mu Chen. Regardless of the outcome, Mu Chen had gained their respect with his determination and perseverance.

Mu Chen stood among the rubble and looked extremely pathetic.

He wiped the blood from his mouth with his shivering hand. He looked savage. Even if he were to fall, he would pull Ji Xuan along with him!

"Let's see who is more ruthless..."

Mu Chen laughed bitterly. He struggled from among the rubble and stood up. As he was about to strike, his body suddenly froze. A familiar sleepy voice sounded from his heart.

"Tsk tsk, little Mu Chen, you are useless. How can you be bashed up by the shaggy bird?"

Mu Chen was stunned upon hearing the familiar voice. He could not believe his ears and started to rub them.

The voice belonged to Nine Nether, who had been evolving!

Chapter 630: The Power of Nine Nether

Mu Chen was stunned for a moment when he heard the voice. After a while, he recollected himself and muttered in disbelief, "You... Nine Nether? Have you come around?"

However, there was no reply. His heart sank. Is this an illusion?

"Hahaha, you seem to have missed me." As Mu Chen was feeling disappointed, a playful laughter sounded again.

Mu Chen rolled his eyes and heaved a sigh of relief. Nine Nether had slept for about two years, and now finally, had come around...

"You have finally awakened," Mu Chen said and smiled wryly.

"What to do? You are about to lose your life. I do not want to die with you on the day that I have completed evolving," Nine Nether said with a smile.

Mu Chen curled his lips. His relationship with Nine Nether was extremely complex. They had been bound by bloodline. To a certain degree, they had an extremely intimate relationship. Although most of the time Nine Nether was in a deep sleep, they were very close to each other.

"Looks like you are having a serious problem." Nine Nether smiled. Although they were communicating inwardly, Mu Chen could sense a picture flashing across his heart. A girl in black was sitting on a huge black egg that had cracked, gently shaking her long slender legs. She tore a piece of eggshell and put it into her mouth. She looked wild and beautiful, and was basking in her eggshells.

"It is an Ancient Dragonhawk. Its strength is at Grade Four Sovereign."

Mu Chen nodded and asked softly, "Are you able to handle it?"

Nine Nether rested her palms on her cheeks and said lazily, "It is just a shaggy bird that is unable to transform itself. It is able to reach the Sovereign-level simply because it has lived a long time. But, Spiritual Beasts are still spiritual beasts. It is unable to evolve and it basically stops here."

"Which rank are you now in the Sovereign-level?" Mu Chen asked cautiously.

"Hmm, around Grade Four," Nine Nether said and smiled.

"Grade Four Sovereign?" Mu Chen gasped and was stunned. The Ancient Dragonhawk had cultivated for so many years to reach Grade Four Sovereign. However, Nine Nether had gone into a deep sleep for less than two years, and she had advanced to such a high level. He could vividly recall that before Nine Nether had completely evolved, her strength was comparable to his.

"I am the most extraordinary talent in my Nine Netherbird Clan in these 1,000 years. My blood is the purest. Don't you ever compare me to the shaggy bird," Nine Nether said lazily. She did not find it shocking, just as a matter-of-fact.

Mu Chen kept mum. If he had said it out loud, those people who had thought highly of themselves would not have been able to take it.

"This fella is also at Grade Four Sovereign... can you handle it?" Mu Chen asked.

"Under the same rank, a divine beast triumphs over a spiritual beast," Nine Nether said casually.

"Powerful!" Mu Chen said with admiration.

"I will lend you my power for the time being. It depends on how much you can take." Nine Nether swallowed the last piece of eggshell and gently patted her hands. She formed a seal with her hands and purple flame swirled out. A terrifying spiritual energy fluctuation exploded.

Mu Chen stood motionless on the collapsed battle stage. He looked dazed as he was communicating inwardly with Nine Nether.

"It seems like you have given up."

Ji Xuan stood in the air and slanted his head to look at Mu Chen. He said with a smile, "In this case, I shall let you experience what it is like to be devastated. The confidence that you have shall no longer exist."

Upon saying this, Ji Xuan looked even more vicious and ruthless. He stepped forth and his ghostly figure appeared before Mu Chen. He laughed softly and lifted his sharp nails, which were filled with purple lights. He tore the space apart and pointed his sharp nails at Mu Chen's heart.

This was a venomous attack.

Many disciples could not bear the sight and looked away. The disciples from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy turned pale.

"It is over!" Ji Xuan laughed viciously. Purple lights were getting brighter on his fingers, and the wind that blustered around his fingers was so strong, it could tear apart anything that came in its way.

His fingers whizzed past and landed on Mu Chen's chest with lightning speed.

Swish!

There was an abrupt sound, and those who were staring at the battle stage suddenly looked stunned.

Ji Xuan, looking vicious, suddenly changed his expression. He stared in disbelief. Mu Chen had stretched forth two fingers and gently caught the ferocious fingers that were blustering with wind. The action looked weak, but it had stopped Ji Xuan from moving forward.

Someone suddenly broke out in shock and said, "How is this possible?"

Mu Chen slowly lifted his head. His dark eyes were surging with purple flame.

"You can stop your arrogance," Mu Chen curled his lips and sounded a little hoarse. In the next instant, he lashed out his leg, which was blustering with wind. It was as heavy as a hammer. Before Ji Xuan could recollect himself, the leg had landed on his chest.

Dong!

There was a muffled sound, and Ji Xuan's body flew backward like a bullet, causing a long scratch on the ground. He smashed the huge rocks along the way into powder.

There was a dead silence in the entire place.

The scene had caused many people's jaws to drop.

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan, who were about to strike, were stunned as well. They stared at Ji Xuan's pathetic figure that had been thrown out. The change was so sudden that they were unable to react to it.

Ling Xi, who was outside the battle stage, squinted and stared at Mu Chen. She looked shocked and sensed something indistinctly.

Puh.

Ji Xuan balanced himself and spewed out a mouthful of blood. He looked dazed for a while. When he came to himself, he shouted in disbelief, "This is impossible!"

Mu Chen lifted his head and looked flatly at Ji Xuan. He slowly opened up his hands and a huge Purple Fire Pillar shot forth from his body to the sky.

High temperature spread over the heavens and the earth, and the ground under Mu Chen's feet started to melt.

The purple flame was overbearing.

Everyone could feel that the spiritual energy fluctuation from Mu Chen's body was getting more powerful. Within a short period of time, he had reached the Sovereign-level...

Once again, many people were taken aback.

The Chiefs of the Academies, who were watching in the sky, were shocked. They started to look grave as they could feel that Mu Chen's spiritual energy fluctuation had seemingly reached the level of Grade Two Sovereign. He was much more powerful than Ji Xuan, who had barely reached Grade One Sovereign.

"Mu Chen also has a hidden trump card." Some Chiefs looked at one another and smiled wryly. Is this the top disciple among the Five Great Academies? He was indeed powerful, and even the Chiefs felt threatened.

Chief Tai Cang looked stunned, but he quickly recollected himself. He was elated and looked at Chief Tian Sheng, who had been smiling earlier. Chief Tian Sheng now had a gloomy look on his face.

Purple flame swirled out, and there was a pair of huge purple wings on Mu Chen's back. He slowly spread out his wings, and his dark eyes had turned purple. A clear chirping sound resounded in the heavens and the earth.

"Is this the power of the Sovereign..."

Mu Chen slowly clenched his fists. He could feel the power within his body and immersed himself in the feeling. Just one move and he could easily destroy the place.

Even the Spirit Disaster was not comparable to this power.

"It seems like you have a very strong physique since you can take on so much power," Nine Nether's voice sounded in Mu Chen's heart. She had thought that Mu Chen's limit was at Grade One Sovereign. However, he could withstand Grade Two Sovereign.

"I have not been idling these two years," Mu Chen said with a smile.

"You are indeed more powerful than before." Nine Nether acknowledged it. Mu Chen was much more powerful than before. At the least, he was able to catch up with her. It would not have been possible, previously.

Mu Chen laughed softly. He then slowly lifted his head and looked coldly at Ji Xuan, who was looking pale. Mu Chen's eyes were burning with purple flame. He stomped his feet and the purple flame raged. He then disappeared into thin air.

A voice rang out as he disappeared into the flame that had swirled out.

"It is time to end this fight."

Ji Xuan was shocked and moved back aggressively.

Swish.

A palm that was burning with purple flame pierced through the space and caught Ji Xuan by the throat.

The gap was obvious!

Chapter 631: Nine Netherworld Bird

Mu Chen's hand looked like an eagle's claw. When Mu Chen caught Ji Xuan by the throat, many people were still in a daze. They were looking at the previous spot where Mu Chen had been. They now widened their eyes at the stunning sight before them.

Mu Chen stood upright, grabbed Ji Xuan by the throat, and lifted him up. Ji Xuan, who had earlier displayed great power, was now like a vulnerable baby. He looked pathetic and weak.

The entire place was in total silence. The scene was too shocking, and no one dared to make a sound.

No one had expected such a turn of events.

Ji Xuan, who had had the upper hand a while ago, was now suppressed by Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's counterattack was direct and swift.

The onlookers were astonished by Mu Chen's strength. He had reached a terrifying level that had way surpassed Ji Xuan's, even though Ji Xuan had tapped into the power of the Ancient Dragonhawk.

What is going on?

Everyone could see that Ji Xuan's face had turned red. He struggled crazily, looking humiliated and vicious. He nearly exploded out of anger. All these years, he had been invincible and had surpassed those who were of his age. The people respected him, and he had always triumphed over his opponents. He had never expected himself to be in such a pathetic state.

This was not something Ji Xuan could swallow, given his pride. He would rather die than to be humiliated.

"I will tear you up into pieces!" Ji Xuan roared. A majestic spiritual energy fluctuation surged and swirled out like a

windstorm. It was like a ferocious dragon sweeping toward Mu Chen.

In the face of such a forceful attack, Mu Chen simply glanced at it. He flicked his fingers and a purple flame swirled out. The spiritual energy fluctuation was eliminated the moment it came into contact with the purple flame.

Swoosh!

Ji Xuan pointed his sharp, curved nails at Mu Chen's eyes.

Dong!

However, before he could plant his nails on Mu Chen, Mu Chen attacked him with a powerful blow to his chest. Ji Xuan moaned. His chest seemed to cave in and blood was spewing out. Once again, he flew backward pathetically.

Bang!

While his body was still in the air, Mu Chen appeared before him. He looked at Ji Xuan coldly and attacked him with another heavy blow. Intensely hot purple flame surged on his fists, causing a severe space warp to form.

Mu Chen's fist landed mercilessly on Ji Xuan's body. The high heat caused Ji Xuan's body to turn red, as though it were about to burst into flames.

Puh.

Ji Xuan spat out a mouthful of blood and landed hard on the collapsed battle stage. He laid down there with blood flowing continuously out of his body. His handsome face was twisted, and he looked horrifying.

He stared at Mu Chen, who was still in the air. His eyes were filled with bitterness and resentment. He looked as though he wanted to chew Mu Chen up. His body was shivering, and he muttered, "How can he... how can he have such great power?"

Ji Xuan had been about to win, but the turn of events had taken everyone by surprise.

"This power does not belong to him. Moreover, he has a stronger physique than you, which is why he can have greater power." A cold voice sounded in Ji Xuan's heart, "You have borrowed my strength, but you have barely reached Grade One Sovereign. However, he has the power of Grade Two Sovereign. Naturally, you are no match for him."

"I want to kill him. I want to kill him!" Ji Xuan's eyes turned red.

"Yes, you can. Let me control your body and I can easily kill him." The cold, scheming voice laughed.

Ji Xuan gritted his teeth. Under normal circumstances, he would not have agreed to such a deal. However, as he looked at Mu Chen, who was looking down at him with disdain, he was filled with bitterness and resentment. He had lost his mind. He should have been the one to receive the glory from the people. He would not lie down like a dead dog.

He could not lose to Mu Chen!

He had said that he would trample on Mu Chen!

Ji Xuan shivered and said in resentment, "Kill him for me!"

"Hahaha, I will grant you your wish." The eerie voice burst out in laughter.

Ji Xuan slowly closed his eyes.

His body had stopped bleeding, and the disordered spiritual energy fluctuation had gradually stabilized. He slowly opened his eyes, and they were no longer filled with bitterness and resentment. They now looked eerie.

Ji Xuan slowly stood up and twisted his neck. He was enjoying the body that was becoming familiar to him. He laughed out loud and said, "I can finally control the body..."

He lifted up his head, looked at Mu Chen, and said with a smile, "Thanks to you."

Mu Chen frowned as he looked at Ji Xuan. Although there was no strong spiritual energy fluctuation, Mu Chen felt a sense of danger. Ji Xuan seemed so strange now, and no longer looked the same.

"Are you the Ancient Dragonhawk?" Mu Chen asked.

"You are smart." Ji Xuan smiled and said, "I have promised to kill you... So sorry about that."

Boom!

The moment he said this, Mu Chen had already thrown out a blow. Purple flame swirled out, and a huge, flaming purple palm pressed down on Ji Xuan.

Ji Xuan looked at the attack from Mu Chen and said, "You only have the power of a Sovereign. You are far from being a real Sovereign." He threw out a backhand blow, and it collided against the flaming purple palm. It did not look powerful, but it destroyed the flaming purple palm when it hit.

When the people surrounding the battle stage saw it, they were stunned. They were baffled by the turn of events...

Mu Chen moved multiple steps backward. He looked grave. Ji Xuan was no longer the same. His power had reached the real Sovereign-level.

"You won't be able to escape."

A space warp suddenly formed behind Mu Chen, and Ji Xuan appeared. He smiled flatly and said, "I will let you have a taste of a real Sovereign."

He pointed two fingers in the air, and a dark purple spiritual energy fluctuation swirled out. The spiritual energy was cold and dense. It was filled with sagacity, and it was more supreme than Ji Xuan's spiritual energy.

"Form Sword!"

The dark purple spiritual energy shot forth and turned into a huge, sturdy purple sword. It tore the space apart and speedily stabbed toward Mu Chen's head.

Mu Chen backed away quickly and formed seals. A majestic spiritual energy shot forth and attacked back.

Bang! Bang!

Wherever the huge sword passed, it destroyed everything in its way. Its destructive force stunned everyone.

Mu Chen's expression changed. The huge sword was not horrifying, but it was extremely oppressive and he was unable to move.

Swoosh!

When all the attacks had been destroyed, the huge sword appeared before Mu Chen. Just as it was about to slash down on him, a tiny hand appeared from behind Mu Chen's back and gently flicked its fingers. Purple flame swirled out and burned the huge sword into ashes.

Ji Xuan was shocked and looked behind Mu Chen.

Everyone shifted their gaze and looked at the graceful figure behind Mu Chen. Although they seemed used to seeing unexpected events, they were still caught in shock.

"Who is that?"

The figure became clearer. It was a lady in black. She was pretty, and her eyes looked wild. She seemed untamable. She had a small waist, long slender legs, and she looked attractive.

As the lady in black appeared, chirping sounds resounded in the heavens and the earth. Purple flame was swirling behind her. A huge, indistinct shadow appeared. It looked like a huge black bird. Its chirping sound shook the heavens and the earth.

"That is... Nine Netherbird!"

Some of the Chiefs of the Academies muttered and looked stunned.

"It is also its actual body... Mu Chen has a Sovereign Spiritual Beast in his body as well. The youngsters nowadays are amazing."

"Are Mu Chen and the Nine Netherbird lodging as well?"

"..."

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan were shocked when they saw the beautiful, unfamiliar lady.

Wen Qingxuan glanced at Nine Nether and said, "Who is she? Why is it that I have never seen her before? Has Mu Chen been unfaithful to you?"

Nine Nether had long slender legs, and she looked beautiful and wild. Even Wen Qingxuan found her gorgeous.

Luo Li thought for a while and said softly, "I think she is Nine Netherbird. She is bound to Mu Chen by bloodline. However, she has been in a deep sleep for the past few years."

"Bound by bloodline?" Wen Qingxuan was shocked and said, "Nine Netherbird is a proud Sovereign Spiritual Beast. How can it possibly be linked with mankind? What has Mu Chen done to it?"

Nine Nether did not bother herself with people. She looked flatly at Ji Xuan and said, "I have not wanted to bother myself with you, shaggy bird. But you are too much. Since you like to stick your nose into the fights of others, I shall play along with you."

"I see that you are from the Nine Netherbird Clan." Ji Xuan looked at Nine Nether and sneered. "Judging from the lifespan of the Nine Netherbird Clan, you have not reached maturity. Do you still dare to challenge me?"

According to the Spiritual Beasts Ranking Chart, the Ancient Dragonhawk was ranked higher than the Nine Netherbird. Thus,

the Ancient Dragonhawk was not intimidated by the appearance of Nine Nether.

"How can you believe in the chart?" Nine Nether curled her lips and said. It shared the same thought as the Primordial Nine Netherbird. A purple flame formed on her fingers and she tilted her head to look at Ji Xuan. She slowly said, "Moreover, I am not a Nine Netherbird now, but a..."

Nine Nether's eyes looked wild. The purple flame darkened, and an indescribably horrifying oppression swirled out from her body. It filled the heavens and the earth, and changed the color of its surroundings.

"Nine! Netherworld! Bird!"

That was a powerful oppression from a divine beast!

Chapter 632: Mandela

Boom!

Nine Nether stood in the air, and a terrifying oppression spread out. The heavens and the earth suddenly darkened, and spiritual energy surged crazily.

Everyone's faces changed under the oppression, including the Chiefs of the Academies, who were in the air watching the battle stage. They could have been enjoying themselves, but they looked grave. They were shocked upon seeing the lady in black with the perfect slender legs.

"It is the Nine Netherworld Bird... this lady is powerful. It is amazing that she is able to completely evolve at this age."

"A Grade Four Sovereign Nine Netherworld Bird... Amazing."

"..."

The Chiefs of the Five Great Academies looked at the scene before them. Chief Tian Sheng of the Saint Spiritual Academy was expressionless, but he clenched his fists.

Chief Tai Cang was stunned for a while, but he quickly looked elated and muttered, "This fella's trump card is shocking..."

The Ancient Dragonhawk that had taken over Ji Xuan's body looked shocked. He said to Nine Nether in a hoarse voice, "You... have you advanced from Spiritual Beast to the Divine Stage?"

The Ancient Dragonhawk's voice was filled with shock and envy. It was the dream of the Spiritual Beasts to advance to the Divine Stage. Evolution was a shortcut for the Spiritual Beasts, and every Spiritual Beast with an ordinary bloodline had the chance to evolve. In the Great Thousand World, there were some ordinary Spiritual Beasts that had become famous when they broke the shackles and transformed.

Although the Ancient Dragonhawk's bloodline was not ordinary, it was not easy for it to evolve. Nine Nether had failed many times before she succeeded. No one would be able to understand the difficulties that she had gone through.

The Ancient Dragonhawk had tried before, but to no avail. It had tried to go through the Thunder Tribulation but had failed badly. It was nearly turned into ashes, but as it was well prepared, it managed to stay alive. After the Thunder Tribulation, it dared not try again. This was because the power of the Thunder Tribulation would be enhanced according to the power of the one going through the tribulations.

No one would be able to extend any help, and the individual had to depend on its own power to go through the tribulations.

When the Ancient Dragonhawk saw that Nine Nether had successfully evolved, it was envious. Nine Nether had not reached maturity, yet she could have such an achievement and surpass it...

The Ancient Dragonhawk's soul shivered—it could feel the oppression from Nine Nether's bloodline.

The oppression was from the superior to the inferior.

In the world of the Spiritual Beasts, the Divine Beasts were above them.

Nine Nether glanced at the Ancient Dragonhawk and said casually, "If I were you, I would have run away." She was like a queen, looking at her humble subjects.

The Ancient Dragonhawk fixed its gaze at Nine Nether. Its eyes were red and fierce. Although the oppression was pressing on it, the Ancient Dragonhawk possessed the bloodline of the dragon and was proud.

It would never run away. Although its opponent had successfully evolved, her strength was comparable to the Ancient Dragonhawk's. She might not have the upper hand. The Ancient

Dragonhawk had gone through many life-and-death battles and considered Nine Nether to be inexperienced.

"I have survived multiple difficulties, unlike you. You think you can frighten me off merely with a word? You are still not up to it," the Ancient Dragonhawk said slowly. Its eyes were extremely fierce.

"If you want to fight, I don't think you will see the outcome that you want."

Upon saying this, a purple light swirled behind the Ancient Dragonhawk, and a huge figure appeared. It was the Ancient Dragonhawk's actual body. A huge spiritual energy fluctuation raged between the heavens and the earth.

"Heavenly Dragon Roar!"

The Ancient Dragonhawk opened its ferocious mouth, and the heavens and the earth darkened. Its huge mouth was like a wind tunnel, and horrifying spiritual energy surged out. It then turned into the earth-shattering roar of a dragon.

Following the roar, a Heavenly Dragon appeared. It was mighty and bigger than the actual body of the Ancient Dragonhawk. An indescribable might spread out and dispersed the Might of Divine Beast exuded by Nine Nether.

The sound waves consisted of the power of a real Heavenly Dragon.

The Ancient Dragonhawk was truly powerful and not intimidated by Nine Nether, even though she had successfully evolved. His attacks were merciless because it knew that Nine Nether had reached the level of Divine Beast.

It could not underestimate this rival.

The entire heavens and earth quaked at the dragon's roar.

The Heavenly Dragon formed and shook its body. It tore the air

apart and sprang toward Nine Nether. The heavens and earth seemed to be crushed by the array.

Nine Nether looked coldly at the soundwave that Heavenly Dragon was pushing toward her. The moment she moved her body, she was standing on Nine Netherworld Bird's head.

A loud, clear chirping sound resounded in the heavens and the earth. When the Nine Netherworld Bird opened its mouth, purple flame swirled throughout the heavens and the earth.

Nine Nether sucked the purple flame into her mouth and gently blew out.

A violet flame shot out like a stream of fire.

The void burst as the stream of violet fire flashed past it. The temperature was so high, the heavens and the earth became extremely hot and even caused the spiritual energy to heat up.

"Unperishable Flame," Nine Nether shouted.

Kuk!

The chirping sound became louder, and the stream of violet fire turned into a delicate Fire Bird, about a foot tall. The Fire Bird flapped its wings and swept across the sky.

Everyone saw the Fire Bird hit directly against the Heavenly Dragon, which was a few thousand feet tall.

The violet Fire Bird looked tiny before the huge Heavenly Dragon.

Although the two were out of proportion, the outcome was astounding.

As the collision took place, the Fire Bird turned into a stream of fire. Its force was irresistible. It broke through the Heavenly Dragon's defense and pierced through its body.

A violet flame spread out from the Heavenly Dragon's body. The flame was so horrifying, it burned the huge Heavenly Dragon into

ashes.

The Ancient Dragonhawk shrieked out and roared angrily, "Unperishable Flame!"

It had been rumored that only the Ancient Undying Bird possessed the Unperishable Flame. They would not die or be extinguished. This was much sought after by the top powers. However, this flame was overbearing. Those who could not fit well with it would have their Sovereign Sea burned up if they breathed in even a bit of it.

This Unperishable Flame could only be evolved by the Divine Beasts that possessed the unadulterated bloodline of the Undying Bird. It had never crossed the Ancient Dragonhawk's mind that Nine Nether could possess such soul-flame.

Nine Nether looked calm and stretched forth her long fingers. She pointed in the sky and 10 streams of violet fire shot forth. As they intersected, they were like Flaming Pythons with a horrifying fluctuation that shocked even the Chiefs of the Academies. They then shot toward the Ancient Dragonhawk.

When the Ancient Dragonhawk saw the fire, it quickly moved back. It flapped its wings vigorously, and multiple purple dragon scales shot out and formed huge Dragon-Scaled Shields.

Swish! Swish!

The powerful Flaming Python shot forth and destroyed all the Dragon-Scaled Shields. It then blasted the Ancient Dragonhawk's body.

Bang!

The Ancient Dragonhawk's flesh and blood splattered to the ground and was burned.

Deep groans resounded throughout the area.

They were accompanied by shock.

Although Nine Nether was at Grade Four Sovereign as well, her combat force made the Ancient Dragonhawk fearful of her.

The Ancient Dragonhawk gritted its teeth and intended to admit defeat by controlling Ji Xuan's body. It was smart. It knew that as long as it admitted defeat in the Spiritual Academy Competition, Nine Nether and Mu Chen could not do anything to it or Ji Xuan.

However, just as he was about to admit defeat, cold lights flashed in Mu Chen's eyes. He had been observing the fight. Ji Xuan was extremely talented and cunning. With the help of the Ancient Dragonhawk, he would achieve much in the future. If Mu Chen let go of this chance to get rid of him, there would be trouble.

Mu Chen would not let Ji Xuan off and give him the chance to make a comeback and create trouble.

Mu Chen lifted his head and as he moved, he appeared on top of the Nine Netherworld Bird's huge body. He sat cross-legged and closed his eyes. The mysterious black sheet of paper in his aurasea suddenly shook.

Mu Chen said in his heart, "Nine Nether, lend me your power again!" In a short while, billowing power started to surge.

The mysterious black sheet of paper was the Immortal Page. It shook more and more vigorously. Purple light patterns spread out and brightened up the paper's dark surface.

Mu Chen opened his eyes and speedily formed a strange seal, like a lotus.

Purple lights exploded, and in the next instant, an extremely beautiful purple mandala flower appeared.

"The Immortal Seal!"

Mu Chen looked cold. He pointed in the air with his fingers, and the huge purple mandala flower disappeared into thin air. When it reappeared, it was on the body of the Ancient Dragonhawk.

The Ancient Dragonhawk's expression suddenly changed and looked extremely frightened.

Chapter 633: Eradication

The huge, beautiful mandala flower petals swayed, and the flower started to bloom. Purple lights were rippling quietly but had caused a terrible space warp.

The purple lights lingered around like a screen and covered the Ancient Dragonhawk.

The Ancient Dragonhawk that had seemed ferocious a moment ago was now panic-stricken. The mysterious mandala flower had a life-threatening impact on him.

The feeling was stronger than when Nine Nether had first appeared.

Dong!

The Ancient Dragonhawk flapped its huge wings and hit the purple screen. The horrifying shockwave caused the purple screen to ripple.

The Ancient Dragonhawk had lost its mind. Mu Chen looked at it flatly and changed the seal of the lotus.

Swish! Swish!

Purple vines suddenly sprang out of the beautiful mandala flower. They looked mysterious and seemed to be formed by runes that had gathered together. The vines were full of thorns.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

The purple vines swirled out and filled up the heaven and earth. They twirled around the Ancient Dragonhawk with lightning speed.

Kuk!

The Ancient Dragonhawk shrieked as the purple vines twirled around it. Its earlier horrifying fluctuation had suddenly weakened, and it seemed to have been subdued.

As Nine Nether watched the scene, she curled her lips. She knew the power of the mysterious mandala flower. When she had first hidden herself in Mu Chen's body, she had a bad experience with it.

Mu Chen was more powerful than before and with the help of Nine Nether, he could truly summon the mysterious mandala flower. The Ancient Dragonhawk was in deep trouble.

Boom! Boom!

The spiritual energy fluctuation surged vigorously, and the Ancient Dragonhawk sensed something was amiss. It struggled crazily to break free from the purple vines but to no avail. The more it struggled, the deeper the thorns pricked into its flesh, causing blood to flow out.

"Seal!" Mu Chen shouted. His face turned grave, and he speedily changed the seals.

Swish! Swish!

Multiple vines started to retract, and the Ancient Dragonhawk was pulled toward the mandala flower.

Although the movement was slow, it was extremely firm and was not affected by the Ancient Dragonhawk's struggles.

As it was moving closer to the mysterious mandala flower, the Ancient Dragonhawk became very fearful. It quickly said, "I admit defeat. I will not interfere in your feud with Ji Xuan anymore!"

Mu Chen looked calm and shook his head. It was too late for the Ancient Dragonhawk to surrender. Mu Chen would not show mercy at the crucial moment.

The purple vines moved faster and ultimately pulled the huge Ancient Dragonhawk into the purple mandala flower. The petals started to close up and turn into a bud. It totally covered the Ancient Dragonhawk.

Mysterious purple light patterns loomed on the surface of the bud like a mystical seal. It had sealed up all the Ancient Dragonhawk's fluctuations.

Dong! Dong!

Occasionally, the bud would shake vigorously. The Ancient Dragonhawk seemed to be struggling inside, but it was unable to break loose.

Many people looked at the huge beautiful bud in the sky. They were in a daze. No one had ever expected the mighty Ancient Dragonhawk to be subdued...

That was a powerful Grade Four Sovereign Spiritual Beast!

Some of the Chiefs did not have the confidence to subdue it, but it had been tamed by a youth.

Upon seeing what had happened, some of the Chiefs of the Academies who were more composed became silent. They looked at one another in shock. After a while, they looked at the tall youth with complex expressions on their faces.

This youth was extraordinary.

Mu Chen waved his palm and the huge bud shot back. The Nine Netherworld Bird opened its huge mouth and swallowed it.

Although Mu Chen was able to seal up the Ancient Dragonhawk with the power from Nine Nether, he could not refine it. He would need Nine Nether to help him with it.

Given Nine Nether's strength and the power of the Unperishable Flame, she would have no problem killing the Ancient Dragonhawk.

Ji Xuan was sitting on the ground with his eyes shut. As Nine Nether swallowed the bud, he opened his eyes. His face was pale, and he spewed out a mouthful of blood. He looked depressed and shocked.

Although the Ancient Dragonhawk had been controlling his body, he was well aware of what had happened.

He stared at Mu Chen in disbelief. Mu Chen had... defeated the Ancient Dragonhawk! Ji Xuan had been able to feel the Ancient Dragonhawk because of their lodging relationship, but now he had lost touch with it. It must have been trapped.

Ji Xuan looked pale and muttered, "How can this be..." He was no longer high-spirited and instead looked dismayed.

He could not accept his defeat!

All these years, he had been a high flyer among his peers. He had even surpassed their talents. Although he had considered Mu Chen a great rival, he had never held him in high regard. He knew that he had a powerful trump card that could suppress all of his peers!

However, he was thunderstruck by the outcome.

Every time he used his trump card, the youth would suppress it and turn the tables around.

The youth whom he had framed and caused to be expelled from the Spiritual Road had surpassed him once again.

Ji Xuan looked at Mu Chen, who was standing on Nine Netherworld Bird. Mu Chen's body was shining, and he became the center of attraction.

Ji Xuan was filled with envy and hatred. The glory and brilliance should have been his!

He was unable to accept it!

As Ji Xuan was gritting his teeth, a cold shiver suddenly ran down his spine. He saw Mu Chen looking at him flatly with a cold killing intent.

Swoosh!

In the next instant, Mu Chen disappeared.

Ji Xuan was struck dumb with amazement. He knew what Mu Chen was about to do. He wanted to eradicate him completely!

"I admit..." Ji Xuan gritted his teeth and turned pale. He had to admit defeat. If he did not do that, Mu Chen would definitely kill him, given his character.

Although Ji Xuan's pride would be hurt, he was not an impractical person. It was better to lose his pride than to lose his life. He could always make a comeback. However, if he lost his life, everything would be over.

He was confident that as long as he lived, he would make Mu Chen regret what he had done!

However, Mu Chen knew his opponent well. He would not give Ji Xuan the chance to make a comeback.

Before Ji Xuan could say the last word, Mu Chen swiftly appeared before him. A majestic spiritual energy exploded and his fingers were bursting with colorful rays. He bent his fingers and like the blade of a sword, stabbed quickly into Ji Xuan's chest.

Swish!

His fingers pierced through Ji Xuan's chest and blood splashed out. Ji Xuan's body flew backward. Mu Chen's gaze was still. He caught up with Ji Xuan and threw out another blow. He was filled with immense killing intent.

"You have gone too far!" Chief Tian Sheng of the Saint Spiritual Academy shouted angrily. He stood up in the sky and the whole place darkened. An indescribable oppression came down on Mu Chen and he was unable to move.

"Ha!"

However, Chief Tai Cang stood up as well and dispelled the oppression. He looked coldly at Chief Tian Sheng.

Mu Chen looked expressionless and was unaffected by the

intervention of the two reputable people. He took the chance and continued his attack. He delivered a powerful blow to Ji Xuan's body.

The blow was overbearing and lightning surged.

Bang!

Lightning shot past and Ji Xuan's chest caved in. He spewed out a mouthful of blood together with some smashed internal organs. His body flew backward in a pathetic state, but his look remained bitter and was filled with resentment.

Swoosh!

The bitterness and resentment were soon overtaken by fear. He saw the Nine Netherworld Bird in the sky, opening up its mouth. A stream of violet fire swirled out and engulfed him.

High temperature covered Ji Xuan's body and everyone saw him turning into ashes.

Swish.

As the ashes dispersed, a tiny light spot shot forth. It was Ji Xuan's Sovereign Sea. Although his body had been destroyed, his spirit could hide in the Sovereign Sea. As long as the spirit existed, he would be able to cultivate the body.

Swish.

However, as the light spot shot forth, purple flame landed on it and burned it up. The light spot exploded and a terrifying spiritual energy raged out.

A devastating scream resounded in the heavens and the earth.

"Scumbag!" Chief Tian Sheng roared out angrily. He waved his hand and a powerful spiritual energy current formed. It whizzed into the raging spiritual energy and caught hold of the gloomy light spot.

The current protected the light spot and retreated quickly. It

ultimately landed in the hands of Chief Tian Sheng. He looked at the light spot that was now almost illusory. It was Ji Xuan's spirit, and it had been seriously injured, almost to the point of dissipation.

Chief Tian Sheng turned pale. Ji Xuan's spirit had been seriously injured and was irreparable. Even if he could cultivate in the future, he would not be able to achieve much.

"All of you are too much!" Chief Tian Sheng looked extremely angry. He gave Mu Chen and the Nine Netherworld Bird a glowering look. His gaze was so cold, it caused the temperature of the heaven and earth to drop.

Chapter 634: Champion

"How dare you!"

Chief Tian Sheng's furious roar spread across the sky. It was as if his words alone could cause the earth to shatter. The spiritual energy all around started raging, causing an immense level of pressure, as though a seal had been formed from his speech.

This Chief Tian Sheng was indeed the Chief of the Saint Spiritual Academy. Even his bellow alone was already much more powerful than the Ancient Dragonhawk.

Under the terrible pressure, Mu Chen was like a small boat in a turbulent sea that was going to be capsized in the next second. His face was filled with solemnness.

Vroom.

In the sky, the Nine Netherworld Bird quickly shrank and a charming figure dashed down, standing in front of Mu Chen and blocking the pressure for him. She stared at Chief Tian Sheng with her cold eyes. Although she could feel that the latter had an unfathomable power, no fear could be seen in her charming eyes.

"Humph, Chief Tian Sheng, considering your current position, you actually want to fight a student. I think you are really snubbing the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy!"

Chief Tai Cang also gave out an angry roar. Stepping forward, he appeared directly opposite Chief Tian Sheng. As his burly body stood in midair, he took away all the pressure from Chief Tian Sheng.

In the entire place, all the students were too scared to speak. Even the chiefs from the other spiritual academies did not dare to interfere. After all, whether it was Chief Tian Sheng or Chief Tai Cang, their strength was among the very top in the whole place.

"Humph, you are just trying the poison the well. Chief Tai Cang,

you are giving him unprincipled protection. This boy is really ruthless. Ji Xian already lost, but he still wanted to kill him!" Chief Tian Sheng said in a cold tone, his face turning livid from rage.

"This kind of battle is meant to be dangerous. Just now when Ji Xuan attacked, he also did not show any mercy."

Chief Tai Cang sneered and said, "Also, according to the rules, as long as a person does not admit defeat, the fight will continue to the end. Chief Tian Sheng, just now you intervened without a proper reason and already broke the rules. At present there are so many chiefs here, I'm afraid you have to give an explanation!"

Chief Tian Sheng paused for a while and continued in a low tone, "Just now, Ji Xian already wanted to admit defeat. But Mu Chen was so aggressive, he did not even give him the chance!"

"Chief Tian Sheng, this is not a few kids playing around. We are having the final championship round!" Chief Tai Cang said as the corners of his mouth lifted, forming a mocking smile.

Chief Tian Sheng's face went completely dark. As his face turned gloomy, the space behind him started to distort vigorously. Clearly, because of Chief Tai Cang's sharp words, he was unable to back down with good grace.

"You are just distorting the reasons. I think Mu Chen should not get the championship," Chief Tian Sheng said with a dull look.

"Impossible!" Chief Tai Cang refused to give in. With an icy expression, the space behind him similarly started to severely distort. Vaguely, it was as if a huge shadow 10,000 feet in diameter was slowly forming outside his body.

The giant shadow was pale blue all over and seemed to be emitting a chaotic mist. As it breathed, wind and clouds formed. Meanwhile, an indescribable pressure spread and the entire space became turbulent.

"Chief Tai Cang, are you trying to challenge me?" Chief Tian

Sheng sneered. Around him, a shadow radiating holy light gradually appeared as well. The endless light filled every corner of the space.

The two chiefs actually summoned their sovereign celestial bodies. If they really started fighting, the tiny space would probably not be able to withstand the forces.

All the students were dumbstruck. Under those huge sovereign celestial bodies, they felt that even breathing became extremely difficult.

Mu Chen also looked at the two giants standing solemnly in the air. These were real sovereign celestial bodies. Once they were used, they could shatter the sky and crack the earth without much effort. Everyone would indeed long for that power.

While Chief Tai Cang and Chief Tian Sheng were standing in sharp opposition, the chiefs from the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy, Martial Spiritual Academy and Azure Sky Spiritual Academy finally frowned and said, "In front of so many students, you two still act without any composure. I'm afraid it will destroy the reputation of the Five Great Academies."

In the sky, the two sovereign celestial bodies that were sending out terrifying pressure faded and eventually disappeared. Clearly, the two also knew that it would be embarrassing if they started fighting.

Chief Tian Sheng's face gradually calmed down. He said, "Chief Tai Cang, I think it's still too early for you to be so complacent. On the stage now, there are still people not from your Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy."

Below, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan both appeared beside Mu Chen. The latter heard the speech and immediately said, smiling, "Chief Tian Sheng, do you think I have the power now to fight with Mu Chen for the championship? Also, I am very supportive towards Mu Chen getting the championship."

Wen Qingxuan was extremely smart and could clearly tell Chief Tian Sheng was saying that to Chief Tang Qiu from the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy in an attempt to provoke her. Hence, she spoke right away to prevent that from happening.

Chief Tang Qiu's face was still filled with grace, but she briefly gazed at Wen Qingxuan. Obviously, she knew what the girl was thinking. However, she could only say reluctantly, "The Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy indeed has no right to take the championship. I think we should just go according to the rules."

Chief Tian Sheng's lips twitched slightly. Eventually, he could only control his unhappiness. Waving his sleeves, he sat back. It was evident he could understand that at the moment, it would be impossible to prevent Mu Chen from getting the title.

"I quit," Wen Qingyun raised her arm and said, smiling.

Luo Li beamed as well and extended her hand.

Thus, Mu Chen became the only one left on the stage. The champion had obviously already emerged.

In the sky, the other chiefs all nodded, except Chief Tian Sheng. Looking around, all the chiefs from the other spiritual academies nodded, indicating that they were approving the final result.

"Since all of you have made your choices, let us, the Five Great Academies, announce officially that the champion for this Spiritual Academy Competition is...

"Mu Chen from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy!"

When Chief Tang Qiu's graceful voice rang out, there was an instant of silence. Then, thunderous cheers broke out everywhere.

Even the space seemed to vibrate.

Apart from some disappointed students from the Saint Spiritual Academy, most of the students from the other spiritual academies gave out overwhelming applause and cheers. Many gazes filled

with respect were directed at the slender figure on the battle stage.

Although the young man was not from the same spiritual academy as they were, the power he had displayed earlier really made them have heartfelt admiration.

He was not only the brightest person in this Spiritual Academy Competition, but probably the best in hundreds of years.

"Brother Mu is the best!"

Among the cheers all over the sky, the most excited ones obviously came from the students from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Their faces were bloated with joy and their looks were full of enthusiasm as their cheers filled the place.

This was the best result that the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy had obtained in the Spiritual Academy Competition since its establishment.

At the gathering point of the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy, Tang Qian'Er's eyes glazed as she stared at the figure glittering in the cheers. Compared to three years ago, he was becoming brighter by the day and was still gradually releasing his amazing potential.

Seeing that he was becoming more famous, she sincerely felt happy for him. However, as she looked at the three similarly bright, pretty figures standing beside him, her smart eyes dimmed uncontrollably and she bit her lips lightly.

The young man in front of her was no longer that timid young boy who would grab her hands tightly and follow her shouting, "Sister Qian'Er." In the future, he would only become brighter and one day, he might even become famous in the whole of the Great Thousand World. Towards this, she did not at all feel ridiculous or arrogant...

Because she believed in him.

"Mu Chen, carry on the good work. You are becoming more and more amazing now. If Uncle Mu knows about this, he will

definitely be overjoyed. You are the pride of the Northern Spiritual Realm." Clenching her little fist, a light, touching smile appeared on Tang Qian'Er's charming cheeks.

...

Standing on the battle stage and hearing the cheers in the sky, Mu Chen finally relaxed from his previous nervousness. The moment he started loosening up, his body trembled.

Beside him, three arms extended simultaneously, wanting to support his body. But when they saw each other doing so, their arms immediately stopped.

Mu Chen did not fall down. It was only that his face was somewhat pale. Obviously, he had depleted a lot of energy in the previous battle.

Glancing at Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan, the Nine Netherworld Bird did not start a conversation. Instead, she moved her body and turned into a beam, dashing into Mu Chen's body.

"Congratulations, champion," Wen Qingxuan said, grinning.

Mu Chen allowed himself a wry smile but did not even have the strength to reply to her tease.

Looking at Mu Chen's status, Luo Li felt rather distressed. Hesitating for a moment, she still bravely extended her hand and grabbed his palm gently. The warm feeling instantly made Mu Chen slightly more energetic. He grabbed Luo Li's hand instead and held it tightly, not willing to let go.

"Oh! Oh!"

At the gathering point of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, many students saw the scene and gave out a jealous roar. Even their eyes were filled with envy.

Luo Lu's face blushed lightly. The shy look on her lovely face even made the sky look more beautiful.

Under the countless wolf-like stares, Luo Li plucked up her courage, looked at Mu Chen and said softly, "You did it. Congratulations."

In order to reach this day, maybe he had been putting in his very best since the moment he left the Spiritual Road. Outsiders could only see him soaring in the sky but not the price that he had to pay for it, the price that made her feel distressed.

Gazing into the girl's glass-like, clear eyes, Mu Chen tightened the grip on her hand. He lifted his head and sunlight shone onto the young man's handsome face.

"Luo Li..."

"Huh?"

"Believe me... One day, I will become the strongest in the world. For you, I will turn the world over."

On the girl's elegant face, an extremely gentle smile appeared. She nodded lightly and her hand also held on to Mu Chen's tightly.

"I will wait for you."

Chapter 635: End of the Competition

At the moment when the final champion emerged, the originally tense atmosphere also quietly loosened up. The previous battle had too many ups and downs. Therefore, when the fight ended, many people heaved a heavy sigh of relief in their hearts.

The battle had already been very exciting. If it had continued, many people would probably not have been able to tolerate it...

Because of the closure of the Spiritual Academy Competition, the light screen enveloping the battle stage and the various spiritual academy zones also dissipated. At this final moment, the restriction on the students was finally weakened.

In the sky, the huge Mirror of Judgment slowly turned with light circulating on its surface. Just then, a few figures were ejected and they landed on the ground looking ragged. They were the ones who were trapped in the Mirror of Judgment earlier.

Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and Su Xuan landed near Mu Chen, after which they gave the thumbs up to the latter. Looking at this, it seemed that although they were trapped in the Mirror of Judgement, they were still able to watch the earthshaking battle.

Mu Chen grinned at them and then turned his head. Looking at Wen Qingxuan, who was stretching and did not mind at all that her actions made her perfect body even more attractive, he said, "After this, you will be going back to the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy directly, right?"

"Yup." Wen Qingxuan nodded. After the Spiritual Academy Competition ended, this space would be closed and all the students would return to their own spiritual academies. If they wanted to meet again, they would have to wait for the Academy Exchange sometime later.

"Why? Will you miss me?" Wen Qingxuan's eyes were smiling as

she looked at Mu Chen and said, "Then you can apply to join the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy. Although the academy only accepts female students, you are the champion of the Spiritual Academy Competition. I think our chief will be happy to open a back door for you."

In response to Wen Qingxuan's tease, Mu Chen could only give an awkward smile.

Wen Qingxuan pushed aside the hair on her forehead and said with a charming smile, "Don't worry, we should still be able to meet in the future. But at that time, I think that I will probably be in another position."

Mu Chen also nodded gently. By that time, he would have already left the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy in order to seek greater power. On the other hand, Wen Qingxuan's background was not weak. When they met again, perhaps both of their positions would have really changed.

"Mu Chen, if we do meet again, I hope that you will not look dispirited. After all, you are the champion of the Spiritual Academy Competition. Although the Five Great Academies are extremely tiny compared to the whole Great Thousand World, if you have lost your sharpness and confidence by then, I think that I will be very disappointed. Also, I will feel disappointed for Luo Li." Wen Qingxuan stared at Mu Chen. Although her tone was joyous, she did not seem to be saying it for fun.

Mu Chen fell into a brief silence. He knew that the path in the future would not be easy and it would be more difficult than the one in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. There, he could at least cultivate in peace. However, after he entered the endless Great Thousand World, he would need to bear much more.

Even though he was close to reaching the sovereign level, that was only the starting point on the road to becoming one of the top powers.

However, on the path to the top, talent was only secondary. A heart that would not be shaken by any external factors was the most important thing. Over these years, Mu Chen had experienced a lot, and if his heart was ever shaken before, it would be difficult for him to reach where he stood at the moment.

Lifting his head, Mu Chen stared at Wen Qingxuan's exquisite face and said gently, "We shall see."

Wen Qingxuan's beautiful face was filled with a smile. Nodding, she said, "If you do not disappoint me at that time, maybe I can consider changing my boyfriend."

As she spoke, her teasing look switched between Luo Li and Mu Chen.

Luo Li glanced at her with a helpless look.

"Brother Mu Chen, congratulations."

As they talked, Wu Ling and Wu Yingying from the Martial Spiritual Academy, as well as Wen Busheng and the other teams, came over to give their congratulations. Mu Chen also had a good impression towards them and his face was filled with happiness. All of them knew that after they parted from the place, it would be uncertain when they could next meet. That was because the spiritual academy was only a stop along their cultivation journeys. In the future, they would all enter the wonderful Great Thousand World that everyone longed for.

By then, everyone would probably have different states of mind and it would be difficult to remain as pure as they were at this moment. Thus, Mu Chen really cherished these friends whom he gained through fighting.

Wu Ling, Wen Busheng and the rest gazed at Mu Chen with complicated looks. In the first place, nobody would have imagined that the final champion of the Spiritual Academy Competition was not the most famous Ji Xuan and also not Wen Qingxuan whose

reputation had similarly spread far, but a young man who was really a dark horse...

When Ji Xuan and Xie Tianhe teamed up and caused Mu Chen to be trapped in the Mirror of Judgement, they all felt somewhat sorry for him. However, unexpectedly, the fierce young man actually made his way out and turned the fight around. In the end, he even managed to mightily defeat Ji Xuan.

In addition, the attacks Mu Chen used against Ji Xuan towards the end also made them feel slightly frightened. Although the young man usually looked harmless, when he really wanted to kill someone, he was indeed like a god killer and would not hesitate at all when attacking.

Wu Ling and Wen Busheng were rather arrogant, and even Ji Xuan did not manage to fully convince them of his superiority. But this time, towards Mu Chen, who was about the same age as they were, they had to say that they admired him.

Clearly, in the future, this young man would not be ordinary. Perhaps after a long time, he would even be reputed in the Great Thousand World.

"Hey, you still owe me a favor. Do you remember?" Wu Yingying stared at Mu Chen with her charming eyes and stood with arms akimbo. Still, she looked very proud, but the blush on her white cheeks could not be hidden.

"Missy, how do you want me to pay you back?" Mu Chen said and smiled.

Wu Yingying stared at Mu Chen for a while, after which she finally spoke hesitantly, "I haven't thought of it yet. I will tell you again when I think of something."

Mu Chen was slightly amused. This girl was clearly very adorable. He immediately nodded and said in a serious tone, "By that time, even if I have to climb a mountain of swords and plunge

into a sea of flames, I will definitely not even frown."

"Words from a man cannot be trusted, especially when it's from a pervert like you." Wu Yingying gave out a soft humph.

Mu Chen cleared his throat in embarrassment.

"But just now you were... quite handsome. More handsome than my brother. I didn't waste my effort cheering for you." Wu Yingying's face was slightly red as she spoke frankly but her big, bright eyes stared at Mu Chen without the shyness of a typical girl.

"Err... Thank you." Mu Chen scratched his head and smiled brightly. The coldness he had when he fought Ji Xuan seemed to be completely gone.

Seeing the scene, Wen Qingxuan pouted her lips gently. She walked near Luo Li and said softly, "This guy really has a lot of luck with the ladies. After you leave, he will definitely get to know a lot more girls. You are really not worried? I suggest that you may as well kick him away early and come with me."

Wen Qingxuan's voice was deliberately kept low but just high enough for Mu Chen to hear. Mu Chen's eyelids twitched uncontrollably while Luo Li could only roll her eyes, slightly displeased.

Wen Qingxuan looked at Mu Chen mischievously. While Luo Li was talking to Shen Cangsheng and the rest, she walked near Mu Chen and glanced at the direction where the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy students were. "But you have a friend at our Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy. You don't want to go and see her?"

"Sister Qian'Er?" Hearing that, Mu Chen first paused for a while, and then joy filled his eyes. He similarly looked at the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy zone, where he saw a young lady in a light green dress standing elegantly and staring at him with those intelligent eyes.

Through the years, the lady was slowly becoming more and more mature and radiant. Even though she was just standing quietly among the many fair ladies, she was still very enticing.

Noticing that Mu Chen was looking in her direction, a gentle smile appeared on Tang Qian'Er's snow white face.

Moving his body, Mu Chen dashed directly into the countless pretty ladies in the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy and went to Tang Qian'Er. Beaming, he said, "Sister Qian'Er, it has been a long time."

The young lady still had ponytails which fell gently over her thin waist. She looked at Mu Chen, grinning. With her hands at her back, her body leaned forward slightly and a mischievous smile appeared on her adorable face. "Looks like you are having a good time now."

"Sister Qian'Er, you are becoming more and more pretty. Unfortunately, you are at the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy. If you were at our Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, people would break their necks trying to chase you." Mu Chen looked at Tang Qian'Er. The lady at the moment was becoming increasingly attractive. Because her body was leaning forward unintentionally, the shape of her body was even more pronounced. Judging from her appearance and disposition, if she was in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, she would certainly have more admirers than Su Xuan.

"You dare to make fun of me." Tang Qian'Er blushed slightly as she raised her tiny fist at Mu Chen as if she were angry.

Mu Chen smiled and said, "Are you doing well in the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy?"

"No, because she kept thinking about a heartbreaker!" Off to the side, a few young ladies laughed. They seemed to be friends of Tang Qian'Er's and were staring curiously at the brightest young man in all the spiritual academies.

Tang Qian'Er's face instantly turned red. She stared at those ladies with a knife-like look and they quickly ran away, laughing.

Mu Chen gave a dry laugh. Looking at Tang Qian'Er's smart eyes, he did not know what to say.

"Congratulations." Tang Qian'Er, however, did not say anything else on this ambivalent topic. Smiling, she continued, "I think that if Uncle Mu knows about this, he will definitely feel very happy and proud."

Mu Chen also smiled warmly. He missed his father, too.

"Is she the girl that you always liked?" Tang Qian'Er said softly and suddenly turned to look at Luo Li, who was in the distance.

Staring back at Tang Qian'Er, Mu Chen nodded gently.

"She is very outstanding, very beautiful." Tang Qian'Er's long eyelashes blinked lightly as she put on a touching smile.

"Thank you." Mu Chen beamed.

Tang Qian'Er lowered her head and her thin toe gently scratched the ground. After a while, she suddenly raised her head and said, "Actually, I somewhat regret coming to the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy..."

Mu Chen scratched his head but did not dare to continue on the topic. After all, he and Tang Qian'Er grew up together and the two were extremely close. However, all along he did not take the relationship to be a romantic one.

"Mu Chen..."

Tang Qian'Er's smart eyes appeared to be particularly bright at the moment. It was as if she had figured out something. The smile on her cheeks also turned increasingly charming.

"I will work very hard in the future as well. I will catch up to you!"

The young lady clenched her fist firmly, and the deepest resolve

could be seen in the depths of her eyes. She had already regretted a decision once, and did not want to keep regretting. Thus, she had to work hard to catch up. At least in that way, she could stand beside him, just like Luo Li.

Looking into the young lady's eyes, Mu Chen eventually nodded gently. It should be a good thing that she had one more target to work towards.

"Then, I will wait for Sister Qian'Er to surpass me."

Mu Chen smiled heartily. Then, he lifted his head and looked at the space filled with many people. Taking a deep breath in spite of himself, his expression turned nostalgic and relaxed.

The Spiritual Academy Competition finally ended.

After three years of cultivation in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, he finally submitted a perfect answer script, even though he knew that his real path had just begun...

Chapter 636: Before Separation

The Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy

The excitement brought about by the Spiritual Academy Competition still showed no signs of fading almost 10 days after it ended. The whole spiritual academy was immersed in an enthusiastic and cheerful atmosphere.

The spiritual academy also did not stop the joyous celebrations among the students but instead allowed them to celebrate freely. Clearly, even the elders in the academy were equally overjoyed in their hearts. After all, the academy had not attained such good results in a long time, except during its establishment, when the academy was at its strongest.

After many years of suppression, they could finally feel proud for once.

...

In the headquarters of the Goddess Luo Association...

On a tall mountain peak, lush greenery filled the place. Looking down from the peak, one could see the entire Goddess Luo Association. The huge training field there was fully occupied with people.

The place was similarly enveloped in delight.

On the top of the peak, a young man lay quietly on the grass. The gentle wind blew over the grass and rubbed against his face. The lazy and warm feeling made him close his eyes uncontrollably.

He was enjoying the peace there. It was a luxurious enjoyment that could not be afforded in the half-year-long Spiritual Academy Competition. Only after the intense, extremely stressful competition could one understand how precious the moment was.

As the wind blew, a pleasant aroma was carried with it.

Wearing a green dress, the elegant-looking girl quietly went beside the young man. She stared at the smart face and her lips curved up slightly. Then, her slim fingers plucked out a tuft of grass and gently rubbed it against Mu Chen's face.

The itchy feeling caused Mu Chen to lazily open his eyes. Staring at the jade-like girl in front of him, he also grinned and extended his arm towards her skinny waist.

Seeing this, Luo Li, however, nimbly backed off. Her gorgeous face stared at Mu Chen mischievously and said, "The whole academy is celebrating. You are the main character and yet you are alone."

"I am really too tired." Mu Chen pushed himself up slightly and leaned against a giant rock as a somewhat resigned smile appeared on his face.

Upon seeing his smile, Luo Li, who originally wanted to tease him, felt quite sorry for him. She squatted down beside him and the look from her clear, crystal-like eyes turned gentler.

"You already did a great job. Do you know... the moment you became the champion, I also felt proud of you," Luo Li said softly. The tenderness in her eyes could melt even a man with a heart of stone.

Hearing the gentle, pleasant voice, the resigned smile on Mu Chen's face also faded slowly and was replaced by an indescribable emotion and extreme satisfaction.

In his eyes, even a thousand praises from outsiders were less than the gentle stare from the girl before him.

"Luo Li..."

"Hm?" the girl replied, beaming.

"Let's hug." Mu Chen smiled and extended his arms.

Luo Li's face blushed slightly and she shook her head. "No."

"But I want to!" Mu Chen immediately jumped up. His arms quickly seized the girl's slim waist and he forcefully pushed her onto the grass, holding her down beneath his body.

Looking at the familiar face right before her and smelling the breath blowing against her face, Luo Li's face turned completely red. She raised her fist and patted him in embarrassment. "Pervert."

Mu Chen did not do anything else. Instead, he lowered his head and quietly stared at the pretty, delicate face. Unknowingly, the girl was also starting to become increasingly beautiful. Her temperament was even more shockingly charming, which caused Mu Chen to be slightly dazed. While he was growing, the girl in front of him was also gradually transforming.

Maybe sooner or later, the immaturity of the girl would disappear completely and she would become the real queen of the billions of citizens in the Luo God Clan. By that time, she would perhaps be reputed in the whole Great Thousand World.

She had advantages that ordinary people could not compete with. Her talent was not weaker than anyone else's and in addition, there was the entire Luo God Clan behind her. Sometimes, even Mu Chen could feel the difference between her and himself.

Although he had an extremely strong mother, that did not bring any substantial benefits to him but rather, many threats.

However, Mu Chen did not once complain about this because over the years, he had relied only on his own efforts to progress. He knew from a long time ago that if he just relied on such blessings, he would never become a real sovereign.

Luo Li, who had already closed her eyes and was waiting for Mu Chen to mess about, realized that the latter did not show any signs of acting indecently. Only then did she open her eyes and stare at the handsome face.

His look was somewhat dazed and changing quietly. But eventually, he still smiled warmly, his smile filled with confidence.

Seeing this smile, Luo Li bit her red lips lightly and showed a rare sight of behaving like a sunny teenage girl. That was because the vigor and confidence that Mu Chen had just displayed was what she liked the most.

"Luo Li, you should be leaving soon, right?" Mu Chen's finger slid across Luo Li's white face as he said in a soft tone.

The girl beneath him trembled a little and her glass-like eyes also instantly dimmed. She did not say anything about it, but Mu Chen was still sensitive enough to notice it.

Gazing at Mu Chen's face, she said softly, "This time, my grandfather only gave me two years. Now, the period has already been exceeded..."

Her eyes were growing more dim. She knew that once they parted, it would be uncertain when they could meet next. Although she had always wanted to be with Mu Chen, she could not do so because she was not alone. She was the future queen of the Luo God Clan, and she also had the countless members of the clan who had guarded the place for many years.

"Mu Chen... I'm sorry..."

Luo Li bit her lips tightly and her eyes were slightly red because she knew that while Mu Chen might try to catch up with her in the future, the path was filled with challenges and obstructions. She understood well that in order for an ordinary man to rise in the endless Great Thousand World, he had to pay a painful price.

There were too many geniuses in the world, and the Great Thousand World was really very vast. Many a time, some so-called geniuses disappeared before they could even be noticed.

Those who could stand out in the Great Thousand World were the ones who had undergone intense training again and again.

However, many people lost their original selves in the many challenges.

Thus, if it were possible, she would prefer Mu Chen to stay ordinary. At least in this way, his face would always be covered in that sunny smile, and not be injured while trying to follow her steps.

At such times, she should have stayed beside him, but...

Looking at Luo Li's slightly red eyes, Mu Chen, however, smiled and said, "Although I want to keep you at my side, that would be too selfish. I know that you care about me, but... if you can temporarily put down the Luo God Clan and come to my side just for me, what reasons do I have to not work hard for you?

"Luo Li, I like you. Although the Luo God Clan may be too far away from me now, and I cannot make your grandfather and clan members recognize me—they may even suspect your taste and think that you only fell in love with an ordinary kid with good luck—but..."

Mu Chen stared at Luo Li's emotional eyes and said softly, "Trust me. One day, I will go to the Luo God Clan. By then, I will let everyone know that what you have found is not a usual stone in the desert, but a diamond brighter than all the other stones.

"And for that day... I will put in everything I have."

Luo Li's hand covered her mouth, and her charming eyes were starting to turn watery. However, the depths of her eyes were only filled with affection and joy. She nodded hard.

"Alright, don't just think about me. In the Luo God Clan, it will also not be easy for you. But no matter what happens, you must remember, wait for me!" Mu Chen said with a smile as he wiped away the tears on Luo Li's delicate face with his fingertips.

"I will definitely go to the Luo God Clan and find you. I will use this as a promise."

Mu Chen pulled Luo Li's hand away and lowered his head slightly, kissing her rosy lips.

They were as cool and smooth as jade.

As the gentle wind blew, the girl, full of emotion, also reached out her thin arms and held them around the young man's neck and offered her bright lips. The blush on her extraordinarily beautiful face became the nicest view on the peak.

...

In the few days that followed, Mu Chen and Luo Li stayed together like peas and carrots. At the moment, they were the most eye-catching couple in the entire Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Whenever people saw them, their eyes would be filled with admiration.

However, they did not notice that as the days passed, Luo Li's originally brisk smile turned unknowingly somewhat dull.

Even though she also wanted to look happy, it was difficult for her to keep calm.

This slight unhappiness continued until the eighth day.

On the training platform at the Goddess Luo Association headquarters...

Mu Chen and Luo Li sat back to back on the tall rock, looking leisurely at the association members below cultivating and training. Seeing the intimate behavior between the two, everyone had heartfelt admiration for them.

Luo Li's hand was holding Mu Chen's lightly and a smile could be seen on her face. They kept in this position, until the sun began to set and its red light shone on the ground.

Suddenly, Luo Li's hand trembled slightly.

Mu Chen felt something.

Turning her head, Luo Li did a rare act of actively kissing Mu

Chen's face in front of everyone. Then, she stood up and lifted her head, staring at the sky in the distance.

The space there suddenly started to distort violently and eventually turned into a huge space vortex. Everyone saw that inside the vortex, a huge shadow traveled across space. A burly figure slowly appeared in the sky, stepping out as if it could cover the entire sun.

The whole Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy was covered under that godlike figure.

Looking at Luo Li's face, Mu Chen already knew that the figure should be the ruler of the Luo God Clan, who was also Luo Li's grandfather and a superbeing who had reached the Earthly Sovereign level.

Luo Tianshen.

Chapter 637: Luo Tianshen

The space was torn apart and a huge space vortex was formed as if it were connected to another world. A burly figure appeared before the dark, frightening space vortex.

At first, the figure was incredibly large but when it appeared, it had changed to a normal size. Everyone in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy stared at the scene in awe.

It was an old man in black robes. His hair was completely white and his face was somewhat aged, but a fearsome pressure came from him. The pressure even caused the space around him to vibrate slightly.

It was as if the whole world submitted to him.

An indescribable pressure enveloped the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, causing the originally joyous place to immediately turn silent. Even some of the Elders, not to mention the students, watched the figure as their faces turned pale. They had never experienced that level of pressure. Even the strongest in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, Lord Northern Sea, never had such a suffocating pressure.

Who exactly was this person who appeared suddenly? He was actually so strong.

In the distance, the space vortex wriggled. After the godlike old man in black robes emerged, some light spots appeared in the vortex, followed by some low, beastly roars.

After that, everyone saw that about a hundred giant cranes, which were silver all over their bodies and had violent thunderbolts circling around them, flapped their lightning wings and passed through the space vortex, eventually floating quietly behind the man in black robes.

Only at that moment did everyone notice that on each lightning

crane, a knight in silver armor sat holding a silver spear in his hand. Although they were all silent, a solemn bloodthirsty aura spread from them like they were going to war. That pressure caused countless students to turn pale. Clearly, these knights on the lightning cranes had undergone many life and death fights. It was a real army, not one made up of undisciplined, disbanded soldiers.

If this group of lightning crane knights started to attack, even sovereigns would find it difficult to defend.

Mu Chen also stood up and stared at the old man in black robes and the lightning crane knights behind him with a serious expression. Those lightning cranes should be the Lightning-Devouring Cranes which were ranked 24th on the Beast Record. At the moment, so many appeared, it was sufficient to show how terribly strong the Luo God Clan was.

After the mysterious group appeared, the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy was obviously shocked for a while. However, the academy also quickly recovered from the surprise. Immediately, the sound of people traveling through air could be heard throughout the sky. One by one, the Elders in the academy flew over hurriedly, cautiously looking at the group in front.

After these Elders arrived, those in the Punishment Hall also started to be on high alert.

However, against the alerted Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, the group did not move at all. The old man in black robes standing at the front only scanned around briefly, after which his eyes locked onto a particular direction.

There, an increasingly beautiful girl elegantly stood, looking at him with a calm face.

Seeing the girl, a very slight, kind smile appeared on his dignified face. Then, his eyes turned to Mu Chen who was standing beside Luo Li.

Although they were quite far away, at that instant, Mu Chen still felt a terrifying pressure penetrating the space and engulfing him. That pressure even caused tiny cracks to appear in the huge rock on which he was standing.

However, the range of the pressure was perfectly controlled. Apart from where he was standing, the pressure did not affect other places at all.

Luo Li seemed to have sensitively noticed something. Immediately, she frowned gently and wanted to stand in front of Mu Chen.

Mu Chen extended his hand and held her jade-like wrist. Shaking his head, he knew that if he needed Luo Li to stand in front of him for their first encounter, this ruler of the Luo God Clan would be totally disappointed in him, even though he might never have expected anything much from Mu Chen in the first place.

Mu Chen's face was calm. Only Luo Li, whose hand he held, could feel that his palm was trembling slightly. Sweat seeped out from his back, dampening his clothes.

The pressure from an Earthly Sovereign was really too terrifying.

If Luo Tianshen had a killing intent, he would be able to kill Mu Chen with a snap of his fingers.

However, no matter how much pressure his body was under, Mu Chen's face was still calm. Even though the pressure only continued for less than two minutes, it caused his body to be somewhat numb.

Therefore, when the pressure suddenly retreated like the tides, Mu Chen realized that his body could not move at all. Because his hand was using too much force, it caused a ring of marks around Luo Li's white wrist.

In the distant sky, Luo Tianshen withdrew his gaze slowly and said tonelessly, "Seems to have some endurance. Not as bad as I

had imagined."

Behind Luo Tianshen, there were two Lightning-Devouring Cranes that were closest to him. Two men were sitting on top of them. They were about 27 to 28 years old, each wearing silver armor. Their looks were quite handsome and their temperament seemed to be unusual.

Clearly, the two had quite a high status. However, they did not stand too near to each other and conversation between them was seldom. It seemed that their relationship was not too close. However, aggression was hidden in their faces and they were like demons which had closed their eyes.

Looking at the backs of the two, heartfelt respect could be seen in the eyes of the lightning crane knights behind. Obviously, the two men were not that simple.

Hearing the toneless voice from Luo Tianshen, their originally motionless eyes moved slightly and looked towards that direction, their expressions turning somewhat strange.

Vroom!

In the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, a shadow soared into the sky. Chief Tai Cang appeared and looked at Luo Tianshen solemnly. Before he could speak, a familiar laughter spread throughout the sky.

"Ha, a rare guest we have here. I really did not expect that the Luo God Clan would actually come to our Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. We did not prepare a warm welcome. Our mistake." Beside Chief Tai Cang, a humpbacked old figure appeared. It was the Northern Sea Dragon from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

When the many students saw the Northern Sea Dragon appear, they all heaved a sigh of relief. In the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, clearly this was the real pacifier.

When the Northern Sea Dragon appeared, Luo Tianshen also looked towards him. Surprise appeared in his eyes as he became aware of the level of the former.

They were both Earthly Sovereigns.

"You must be Lord Northern Sea from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. I am Luo Tianshen. I came here without prior notice. I hope that you will not blame us for that," Luo Tianshen said and smiled briefly.

"Oh, you are Clan Leader Luo from the Luo God Clan. I have heard a lot about you." The Northern Sea Dragon also smiled as he bowed with his hands folded in front. Obviously, he had restrained his playful attitude and became much more serious. Although he was also promoted to Earthly Sovereign, he understood that there was still a significant difference between him and Luo Tianshen. After all, the latter had become an Earthly Sovereign a long time ago while he only broke through one year ago.

While Luo Tianshen was already famous, he only had an ordinary reputation.

"Clan Leader Luo, may I know what is your purpose in visiting the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy?" Seeing the Northern Sea Dragon, Chief Tai Cang also heaved a sigh silently, after which he folded his hands and smiled politely.

"I'm here to fetch my granddaughter home. I think that you two will not stop me, right?" Luo Tianshen smiled and said.

Chief Tai Cang and the Northern Sea Dragon looked at each other, and then at the direction where the Goddess Luo Association was. In the whole Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, only that girl could possibly have some connection to the Luo God Clan. However, they did not expect Luo Li to actually be Luo Tianshen's granddaughter. That meant that she would be the next queen of the Luo God Clan...

"Students in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy have their freedom. As long as it is not against the academy rules, they can come and leave as they wish. We will not intervene unnecessarily," Chief Tai Cang said and smiled.

"Thank you so much." Luo Tianshen nodded and stepped forward, disappearing into thin air. The moment he vanished, the two men right behind him disappeared as well.

In the sky above the Goddess Luo Association...

The space vibrated and three figures emerged directly. Then, under the stares of countless many, they appeared in front of Luo Li and Mu Chen.

Luo Tianshen looked at the girl in front who was becoming more and more outstanding. His dignified, old face seemed to be pleased. Smiling, he reached out his dry hand and said, "Li'Er, come home with me."

Staring at the old man in front of her, Luo Li bit her rosy lips tightly. Turning her head and glancing at Mu Chen, she nodded gently but with difficulty.

She started walking with extremely slow and heavy steps. A pitiful look filled her clear yet dim eyes.

Although Mu Chen was prepared for it, when he watched her back, his nose still twitched and the hands in his sleeves clenched tightly, uncontrollably. If he was sufficiently strong at the moment, maybe no one could bring her away from him.

He was still too weak.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen understood at the moment that he needed greater power, because he would not want to experience the scene in front of him for a second time.

Luo Li's steps suddenly stopped. Then, she turned around quickly and ran to Mu Chen. Her thin arms held around his waist firmly and she bit her lips so hard that even some blood could be seen.

Mu Chen also firmly held onto the girl in front of him.

This scene caused every member in the Goddess Luo Association to feel touched.

Luo Tianshen only watched the scene in silence. The look of the two men behind him fluctuated as they glanced at Mu Chen. Then, they turned their eyes slightly away from the scene.

Gradually letting go of Luo Li, Mu Chen lowered his head and spoke softly into her ear, "Next time, I will not let anyone take you away from me. Anyone!"

His voice was soft and slow but firm. It sounded so unquestionable that anyone hearing it would be moved.

Tears started to form in Luo Li's adorable eyes. She knew that for this one goal, the young man in front of her would pay a painful price, many times over. However, she did not say anything but only nodded heavily.

She backed off and finally turned around resolutely. Then, she walked past Luo Tianshen and did not hold his dry hands; obviously, she was still feeling resentful.

"Young Clan Leader."

The two men standing behind Luo Tianshen smiled at Luo Li. Bowing, they clenched their fists and put them at their chest, and said, "Your knights await your return."

Waving their hands, three bright Lightning-Devouring Cranes flew towards them from the distance, one of which was slimmer and more elegant-looking. Moving her body, Luo Li sat on the crane.

As Luo Li sat on the Lightning-Devouring Crane and was about to leave, Luo Tianshen looked at Mu Chen directly for the first time. His old face was emotionless.

Meanwhile, Mu Chen also raised his head and stared at the old

man who was supporting the last few brilliant years of the Luo God Clan. His face was extremely young and calm.

He was fearless.

Chapter 638: Conversation

In the sky, a gentle wind blew. Layers of clouds floated lazily by, projecting large patches of shadows on the ground.

Mu Chen and Luo Tianshen were in the shade. Their clothing swung lightly in the gentle breeze. At the moment, their whole surroundings fell into silence, and countless people gazed at them.

Even those who did not really know what was happening could vaguely feel that the atmosphere was somewhat strange.

In the distant sky, Chief Tai Cang watched the scene and frowned slightly. Afterwards, he glanced at the Northern Sea Dragon, who was also staring in that direction. The latter squinted a little, and waving his hand softly he said, "Don't worry. Mu Chen is a student in our Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Although it is not advisable to offend the Luo God Clan, I will not let him be bullied by outsiders in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

"However... It is difficult for us to interfere with the event happening now. After all, Luo Tianshen is Luo Li's grandfather. It is perfectly justifiable for an elder to review the person whom his granddaughter likes."

Chief Tai Cang gave a bitter smile and said, "I'm afraid the old man will try to separate the affectionate couple."

"If things really go that way, it is not necessarily bad for Mu Chen," the Northern Sea Dragon said. He knew that Mu Chen was like an uncut jade. In order to become an exquisite jade, he needed some grinding.

Chief Tai Cang sighed lightly. Just as he was about to speak, his eyes suddenly turned and looked at a quiet green peak in the distance. There, spiritual light was blinking and a streamer flew directly towards Mu Chen.

On the two Lightning-Devouring Cranes were the two men who

greeted Luo Li previously. One of the men's expressions changed slightly and as he moved, he appeared instantly on the path where the streamer was approaching.

"Please stop," he smiled and said loudly, as his long, black hair danced in the wind.

Vroom!

The streamer, however, showed no signs of stopping. Instead, its speed increased and it flew directly forward.

The long-haired man squinted slightly and the aggression hidden in his face suddenly burst out. Closing his palm, a spear blinking with silver thunderbolts appeared all of a sudden. In the next instant, he stabbed out with the spear.

Bang!

In the sky, a thunderous noise broke out, and the entire space actually started to crack. A giant spear shadow penetrated the space directly and flew towards the figure in the streamer like a lightning bolt.

The figure paused slightly, after which she reached out her hand, and star-like light flickered at the tips of her slim fingers. As she flicked her fingers, the stars flew out and a very huge spiritual array instantly unfolded. In the spiritual array, a giant volcano actually appeared out of nowhere.

Bang!

The volcano erupted, and violent spiritual energy swept across the sky, eventually colliding with the large spear shadow.

Loud noise spread, and the two terrifying powers collided and raged in the air.

Brief surprise could be seen in the eyes of the long-haired man. As he was about to attack again, his face suddenly turned solemn because the space around him started to turn dim. The space

distorted, and formed a mysterious and sophisticated spiritual array. The array was filled with frightful spiritual energy fluctuations, trapping him inside.

The charming figure flew forward, past the long-haired man's interference, and appeared in the sky above the Goddess Luo Association's headquarters. However, she only stood in the air, and did not move close to where Mu Chen and Luo Tianshen were, even though everyone could tell that she came for Mu Chen.

Crash!

A shocking spear aurora swept across and finally tore the mysterious spiritual array apart. Breaking free from the spiritual array, the long-haired man stared with surprise at the beautiful woman in a white dress and smiled. "You are a spiritual array grandmaster. I misjudged you."

The person who came was obviously Ling Xi. However, she did not look at the long-haired man, but rather stared at Mu Chen and Luo Tianshen.

Ling Xi's appearance startled Mu Chen for a second. He looked into the emotionless eyes of the former, feeling somewhat touched. He knew that Ling Xi had appeared at that moment only because she did not want him to endure too much pressure from Luo Tianshen.

Although she was also significantly weaker than Luo Tianshen, she showed no signs of hesitation.

Tweet!

While Mu Chen was moved in his heart, a clear, loud sound suddenly came out from his body. Then, everyone saw a purple light ascend from Mu Chen's body into the sky. The light diffused and actually turned into a huge black bird. A purple flame appeared on its body and soared into the sky.

It was the Nine Netherworld Bird.

She stayed in the sky and flapped her wings in the clouds, bringing about a terrifying hurricane. However, she similarly hovered in the sky and did not do anything else.

"Nine Netherworld Bird?"

The two men who had followed Luo Tianshen and who were clearly extraordinary changed their expressions again. They glanced at Ling Xi, and then at the Nine Netherworld Bird in the sky, and finally at Mu Chen.

For the first time, some surprise could be seen in their eyes. The youngster, whom they considered to be still too weak, indeed had something unusual. At least such a team would not appear beside an ordinary young man.

"Spiritual array grandmaster... Nine Netherworld Bird..."

Luo Tianshen also lifted his head to look at the scene, after which he smiled lightly. Turning and staring at Mu Chen, he said, "If you want to demonstrate your powers using these, maybe your means are still too insufficient."

"If I want to demonstrate my powers, I will do it myself in the future. They are only my friends," Mu Chen said calmly.

Luo Tianshen stared at Mu Chen, who was still composed. After a while, he nodded slightly. He was not too disappointed by their first encounter. If the young man in front of him could not even leave a good first impression, he would not give the man any chance, even if Luo Li would hate him for life.

"What's your name?"

"Mu Chen," he said softly.

"I think that based on your relationship with Luo Li, she should have told you about things in the Luo God Clan," Luo Tianshen said slowly. "Therefore, you should be very clear how important she is to the Luo God Clan."

Luo Tianshen glanced at Mu Chen and said, "In the nearly three years that Luo Li was away, the Luo God Clan has fought hundreds of wars of varying sizes. We lost tens of millions of citizens."

Mu Chen fell into silence. It was as if he could smell the scent of blood in the air and see the flowing sea of blood. That kind of war was definitely extremely cruel.

Luo Tianshen turned his head and looked into the distance. There, Luo Li sat on a Lightning-Devouring Crane and stared at them. The old man heaved a sigh resignedly and said, "I stayed back to talk to you alone, but it's not to force you to give up Luo Li.

"You see those two?" Luo Tianshen glanced at the two men who had received Luo Li previously.

"One is called Luo Qingya. He is a rare genius in the younger generation of the Luo God Clan today. Furthermore, he does not have the arrogance that any genius should have. Over the years, he started training from the lowest level in the army and experienced many life and death situations. Eventually, at such an age, he has become the commander of the Lightning Crane Army. Even among the four great armies in the Luo God Clan today, he has quite a high reputation.

"The other one is called Luo Xiu. He is from an external branch of the Luo God Clan royal family and did not have a high status. When he was young, people even called him trash. During a war, his father threw him onto the battlefield. Back then, he was only ten years old. In that war, his father died, but Luo Xiu eventually climbed out from the mountain of corpses.

"Now, he has also become one of the best in the younger generation of the Luo God Clan. His future is very promising."

Mu Chen was silent. The two men were certainly not ordinary, and would definitely be among the best in the future. He could feel it; the two before him were even more dangerous than Ji Xuan.

"They are Luo Li's knights. Similarly, they also like Luo Li," Luo Tianshen said and stared at Mu Chen.

Frowning, Mu Chen looked at Luo Tianshen directly and said, "Clan Leader Luo, you are asking me to quit in the face of difficulties?"

"Not asking you to quit, but to let you know that all those who like Luo Li are very impressive. If you don't have the abilities to stand beside her, it will not be a good thing for either you or her," Luo Tianshen said slowly.

"She is way too outstanding, so if you stand beside her in the future, there will always be people who dislike you. By then, you will be despised or humiliated because you are too weak. At that time, do you expect her to block those annoying people for you?"

Mu Chen went into a brief silence. Just when Luo Tianshen thought that he had stirred up Mu Chen's feelings, the latter raised his head and smiled without any signs of overexertion.

He stared at Luo Tianshen and said in a serious tone, "Clan Leader Luo, although you may think that I am arrogant and ignorant, I still want to say that..."

Mu Chen glanced at the two men in the distance who were so extraordinary, that all the geniuses in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy seemed to be overshadowed. In his black eyes, a sharp look burst out. "...by the time I am the same age as them, they will be far exceeded by me."

Luo Tianshen was stunned for a moment. He looked at the young man's bright, maybe even dazzling, eyes. Mu Chen's dashing spirit and confidence surprised him. The young man was quite brave.

"Seems like you don't agree with my theory. That being the case, I will not say much. We will verify everything with time. Whether Luo Li has chosen an ordinary stone or a brilliant diamond, I think we will all know someday in the future." Luo Tianshen did not say

anything else. He knew how strong the dashing spirit of young people was. Over the years, he had seen too many geniuses, but in the end, most of them died young.

When the young man in front of him had been sharpened enough by reality, he would fully understand the difference between him and Luo Li.

By that time, maybe Luo Li would still persist, but he would give up quietly.

Luo Tianshen's voice paused for a second. He hesitated but still said in the end, "Maybe Luo Li did not tell you about this. She should be very opposed to me telling you this, but I still have to say it.

"The West Heaven War Emperor from the Great Western Kingdom... I think you may have heard of him, and should know what this means. After all, he is a real top power in the Great Thousand World. Once, he wanted Luo Li to enter the Great Western Kingdom. By doing that, the Luo God Clan would be protected by the West Heaven War Emperor and at that time, all the crises faced by the Luo God Clan would be automatically gone. It is just that Luo Li rejected it..."

Luo Li's eyes narrowed slightly. The West Heaven War Emperor was a superbeing in the Great Thousand World who was as famous as the Flame Emperor in the Endless Fire Territory, and the Martial Ancestor in the Martial Border.

That level was too far away from him at the moment.

The young man's face finally became much more solemn. Next, he took a deep breath and his black eyes stared at Luo Tianshen evenly. He said in a low and hoarse tone, "Clan Leader Luo, today you take Luo Li away from my hands. In the future, I will take her back from your hands. By that time, nobody will be able to stop me."

In the young man's eyes, it was as if blood was flickering, like a madman.

By that time, whether it was Luo Qingya, Luo Xiu, or the West Heaven War Emperor, he would be completely fearless!

Chapter 639: Separation

The wind blew and the clouds moved, but the rigid atmosphere could not be blown away.

With his eyebrows furrowed, Luo Tianshen stared at the young man in front of him. He was somewhat surprised at the frightful stubbornness and madness that could be seen in the blood-red eyes of the latter.

The young man indeed had a very strong confidence. Furthermore, the confidence did not just appear blindly, but instead came from his bones or even his bloodline.

At the moment, Luo Tianshen finally understood why her granddaughter, who was so outstanding and had so many admirers, would like this young man.

Compared to other young people, he was indeed quite extraordinary.

However, even though that was the case, Luo Tianshen still laughed off Mu Chen's words. He shook his head, and a faint smile appeared on his stern, old face. "My first impression of you is not too bad. If you want to do so in the future, I hope that you will do more than just talking. Luo Li is my granddaughter, and as long as I am alive, I will not allow her to be bullied at all. If you want to take her away from my hands, next time, use your actions to speak for you.

"Also, it is not possible for Luo Li to wait for you forever. So, if there is a time when you feel that you really cannot catch up to her, then just give up. It should be good for both you and her."

Mu Chen also smiled and said softly, "Then, Clan Leader Luo, please help me to take good care of her. I think that, one day, you will change your opinion of me."

"Hope so. I look forward to our next encounter."

Luo Tianshen smiled faintly and finally spoke no more. He waved his hand at Mu Chen, and then he turned and left by stepping in the air.

The young man had a stubbornness and persistence beyond his expectation. It seemed that he would not be able to dissuade Mu Chen, but that did not really matter, as time would prove everything. Time would also gradually let him understand the distance between him and Luo Li. By that time, he would no longer be that stubborn.

Watching Luo Tianshen depart, Mu Chen's fist clenched slowly but uncontrollably. Finally, he lifted his head and took a deep breath. Although the conversation was short, he felt an immense amount of stress from Luo Tianshen. Even though Luo Tianshen did not sting him with any biting words, there was still a vague feeling that the two were very distant.

Obviously, he did not think that Mu Chen could really reach a level that he would need to pay attention to.

Actually, Mu Chen did not feel any resentment towards this. After all, with Luo Tianshen's experience, he must have seen many geniuses in the past. At the moment, no matter how firm Mu Chen's words were, he would definitely not be able to change Luo Tianshen's mind.

In the distant sky, Luo Li watched with some anger as Luo Tianshen approached, and even her voice became much colder. "What did you say to him?"

"Why? You are afraid that I would threaten him? If some threatening can cause him to give up, I really doubt my granddaughter's taste," Luo Tianshen said, laughing.

"I have promised you that after I go back this time, I will start to gradually accept the inheritance of the Luo God Clan, and also take over the managing of the clan. No matter how difficult it is, I will persist to the end."

Luo Li's eyes looked down slightly and she said in a soft voice, "However, I hope that you will not interfere with his decision. He is the first person I have ever liked, and will also be the last. Even if in the future, he does not accomplish as much as you would expect, at least..."

She raised her head and stared at Luo Tianshen directly. The expression that burst out on her face suddenly like a crystal actually had the dignity of a queen. "...there's still me!"

Luo Qingya and Luo Xiu, who were standing behind Luo Li, blinked at her statement. They glanced at each other with complicated looks, and stared at the young man in the distance who was gazing at them. Their expressions became unfathomable.

On the other hand, Luo Tianshen stared at Luo Li. The resolve in her eyes caused him to fall silent. He had underestimated the affection between Luo Li and Mu Chen.

After remaining silent for a while, Luo Tianshen eventually smiled bitterly and said, "I really don't know what's so good about that kid that can actually make you protect him so much."

"If it's not for him, I will not have the courage to bear the burden of the Luo God Clan," Luo Li said softly.

"Then it seems that I have to thank him instead."

Luo Tianshen smiled, after which he walked up, gently patted the girl's soft shoulders, and said, "I do not object to your feelings towards him. But sometimes, what a man needs is not protection. In addition, I can see that although this kid is gentle on the surface, the pride in his bones is no less than anyone else's. I actually want to see if there will be one day in the future when he really can take my good granddaughter back from my hands."

"I think that grandfather, you will lose," Luo Li said and gave a faint smile.

"We shall see then." Luo Tianshen did not take it seriously. Then,

he said, "Let's go?"

Luo Li stared at the figure in the distance who had been looking in her direction the whole time. Her eyes turned slightly red again. Biting her lips tightly, she finally nodded resolutely. Her hand pulled on the lightning feather of the Lightning-Devouring Crane and the latter gave out a thunderous roar. Flapping its wings, it dashed quickly towards the huge space vortex.

Gazing at Luo Li as she was about to leave, Mu Chen took a sudden, deep breath and shouted, "Luo Li, wait for me. When I become one of the top powers, I will come find you and defeat all the bastards who dare to bully you!"

Enveloped in strong spiritual energy, his voice spread throughout the place like thunder. All the students in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy were dumbstruck.

"This kid..." The Northern Sea Dragon and Chief Tai Cang were also both stunned. In the next moment, they laughed in spite of themselves, their eyes filled with commendation.

"Ha!"

Even Luo Li laughed as she was about to enter the space vortex, although her eyes turned more red. Her hand covered her mouth and she did not turn around. Instead, she only nodded firmly, and eventually dashed into the space vortex and disappeared.

Behind her, the Lightning Crane Army immediately followed.

Luo Tianshen was the last to leave. He first looked at Mu Chen with a weird expression and then an unnoticeable smile appeared on his stern, old face. However, in the end he still gave Mu Chen a cold humph. Finally, he folded his hands towards the Northern Sea Dragon and Chief Tai Cang, after which he turned and entered the space vortex.

Shmm.

The space vortex rotated slowly and eventually dissipated bit by

bit. The sky was once again calm.

As they left, the pressure enveloping the entire Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy was finally gone. This caused all the students to heave a sigh of relief and wipe away their cold sweat.

Mu Chen still stood in silence. His eyes were locked onto the spot where the space vortex disappeared, and he did not move for quite a long time.

Many nearby members of the Goddess Luo Association looked at him, but none went to disturb him. Ye Qingling and the rest also heaved sighs and asked everyone to leave so that nobody would disturb Mu Chen.

Mu Chen stood in silence for nearly an hour. Eventually, he slowly sat down on a tall rock. Then lying back, he spread out his hands and closed his eyes.

Ling Xi quietly appeared behind Mu Chen. She glanced at Mu Chen but did not say anything to distract him.

The Nine Netherworld Bird in the sky also descended and transformed into a slim, beautiful figure. Seeing Mu Chen's appearance, she frowned and said, "You are becoming dispirited just like that? If this is the case, it is really very disappointing."

"If your understanding of him is only so shallow, your bloodline bond is really too useless," Ling Xi said tonelessly and glanced at Nine Nether.

"Huh?" Nine Nether raised her eyebrows and turned to look at the beauty who was in a white dress and appeared to be somewhat icy. She smiled, but only coldness and danger could be felt from her smile. "Seems like you have a lot of opinions on our bloodline bond."

"If I have the ability, I will definitely unlock the bond. I don't want Mu Chen to be affected for some reason just because he was tied up."

"Unlock the bloodline bond? You are overestimating yourself," Nine Nether said and curled her sexy red lips.

"In that cause, do you need me to try it?" Ling Xi said in a cold voice.

"You can come and try it!"

The two stared at each other and neither was willing to compromise. For some unknown reason, their first face-to-face encounter was filled with the smell of gunpowder, even to the extent of being aggressive.

"Enough!"

However, just when there were vague signs that they were going to fight instead of talk, a roar finally sounded off abruptly. Mu Chen suddenly opened his eyes and stared at them with a dignified look.

However, the dignity was completely useless towards the two in front of him.

"Little one, you are very prestigious, huh?" Nine Nether moved her perfectly slender legs and walked towards Mu Chen, the smile on her face looking dangerous. She closed her palm gradually and a crack sound was actually produced.

Ling Xi also looked at Mu Chen emotionlessly and star-like light blinked at her slim fingertips.

"Ahem... You two continue." Mu Chen quickly stood up and gave a dry laugh. A wise man knows when to retreat. According to the powers of the two women in front of him, either one could defeat him easily.

Seeing Mu Chen's reaction, Nine Nether and Ling Xi both lifted the corners of their red lips in spite of themselves. However, when they looked at each other, they both gave out a humph and turned away again. They were actually unable to get along with each other at all.

"You are ok now?" Nine Nether asked.

"I am not that weak." Mu Chen laughed and raised his head again, staring at the place where the space vortex vanished. A smile appeared on his handsome face.

"Now, I am really anticipating the day that I go to the Luo God Clan. For that day, I will try my very best.

"Nobody can stop me!"

Looking at the familiar, confident smile on Mu Chen's face, Nine Nether and Ling Xi gently heaved sighs of relief and felt somewhat glad.

Mu Chen stretched. It seemed that the time he would stay in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy was soon to end. But... before that, he must make a real breakthrough.

Only when he got promoted to the Sovereign-level, would he have the right to graduate from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy!

Chapter 640: Primitive Celestial Body

Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, back hill.

The area was enveloped in dense spiritual clouds. Majestic and vast spiritual energy whizzed through the air, and the sound of waves could be vaguely heard.

Mu Chen stood on a lush mountain peak, on which there was a stone lotus platform. It was connected to the only Eighth Rank Spiritual Convergence Array in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, and was considered to be the place in the academy where the spiritual energy was the strongest.

Generally speaking, this kind of place would not be open to students in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. However, at the moment, Mu Chen, to some extent, had exceeded three grades of the Spirit Disaster, and was already half a leg into the Sovereign level. His powers had far surpassed those of ordinary students.

In addition, he won the championship of the Spiritual Academy Competition for the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. At present, Mu Chen's status in the academy had reached an extremely high level that normal people were unlikely to obtain. The Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy would definitely fulfill his requests, as long as they were not too unreasonable.

Thus, opening the cultivation platform that was connected to the only Eighth Rank Spiritual Convergence Array was justifiable.

Mu Chen took a deep breath, and dense spiritual energy entered his body through his nose, bringing about a relaxing sensation. He sat down cross-legged. A light ray dashed out from his body and turned into a pretty figure beside him.

Nine Nether looked at Mu Chen and said, "You have basically opened up your sovereign sea today. However, your sovereign sea is empty and lacks spiritual energy. It is only a decoration."

Mu Chen nodded. When he was fighting with Ji Xuan, he could use such an enormous power only because he filled his sovereign sea with the aid of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. As for his own spiritual energy, even if all of it entered the sovereign sea, it would be a drop in the bucket.

Therefore, after the power of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar dissipated, his sovereign sea became empty. What he needed to do at the moment was to condense spiritual energy, and fill the sovereign sea completely. In that way, he would be really considered as having entered the Sovereign level.

Nine Nether sat down beside Mu Chen. Her perfect, slim legs curled slightly and she placed her chin on her knee. Then, she looked at Mu Chen and asked him in a low voice, "After you promote to the Sovereign level, what are your plans? I think that the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy will not be able to provide much help to you now. If you continue to stay here, you will probably never in your life be strong enough to go to the Luo God Clan."

Mu Chen nodded slightly. Naturally he would know that if he really wanted to become stronger, he must not stay at the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

"We are bloodline bonded. You should also know some of my secrets... for example, this." Mu Chen closed his hand. When he opened it, a piece of mysterious black paper appeared in his palm and began glowing faintly.

Seeing the mysterious black paper, Nine Nether's body tightened uncontrollably. After all, she had suffered greatly in the past because of the black paper.

"Have you heard of the 'Primordial Immortal Body?'" Mu Chen gazed with a scorching look at the Immortal Page in his hand and then smiled.

The Primordial Immortal Body.

When these four words appeared, Nine Nether raised her head abruptly and shock could be seen in her eyes. After a while, she slowly calmed down, but still said in a surprised tone, "The Primordial Immortal Body which was ranked fourth among the legendary 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies in the world?"

Mu Chen nodded gently. Although the secret was extremely important, he totally trusted Nine Nether. After all, their lives were tied together.

"If I can obtain and successfully learn it, do you think that... I can become one of the top powers?" Mu Chen asked softly.

"Impossible!" Nine Nether said without hesitation.

"I can't?" Mu Chen was stunned.

"No... I mean, it is impossible for you to learn the Primordial Immortal Body..." Nine Nether immediately shook her head. She stared at Mu Chen with a weird look and said, "Do you know what the Primordial Immortal Body means?"

This time, it was Mu Chen's turn to feel puzzled. He only knew that the Primordial Immortal Body was ranked fourth and should be incredibly powerful, but did not know much about its other details.

"The Primordial Immortal Body is ranked fourth among the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies. But you probably do not know that it was one of the ten 'Primitive Celestial Bodies' in the ancient times," Nine Nether said slowly.

"The ten 'Primitive Celestial Bodies?'" Mu Chen was dazed, as he did not know what that was.

"These ten 'Primitive Celestial Bodies' are the strongest Sovereign Celestial Bodies in the world. You cannot imagine their powers. In the ancient times, there was a crisis brought about by an 'extraterritorial race.' At the start, the Great Thousand World retreated in defeat again and again, and countless lower planes

were occupied by the extraterritorial race, until ten sovereign masters who cultivated the ten 'Primitive Celestial Bodies' appeared, and turned the defeat into a stable situation. However, when the catastrophe ended, the ten sovereign masters almost all passed away, and five 'Primitive Celestial Bodies' were totally destroyed. Even their cultivation methods were lost. Thus, only five 'Primitive Celestial Bodies' remained. Those are the top five Sovereign Celestial Bodies in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies. Even so, I have never heard of anyone obtaining them. Therefore, the top five Sovereign Celestial Bodies have only existed as legends.

"The Primordial Immortal Body you have mentioned is one of them."

Mu Chen was dumbstruck. He did not expect the Primordial Immortal Body to have such an incredible origin.

"If you can really cultivate the 'Primordial Immortal Body,' then congratulations, you can become one of the top powers in the Great Thousand World."

Suddenly, Nine Nether stared at Mu Chen doubtfully and said, "But why are you so confident that you can obtain the cultivation method for the 'Primordial Immortal Body?'"

Mu Chen smiled gently and waved the piece of mysterious black paper in his hand, and said, "You know the legendary 'Immortal Catalog?'"

"Divine Law of the Ancient Antiquity, Immortal Catalog?" Nine Nether said and opened her rosy lips slightly in shock.

Mu Chen was surprised by Nine Nether's knowledge. However, he was relieved after thinking about her background. The Nine Netherbird Clan had a deep heritage and should have a lot of ancient books as well. Naturally, Nine Nether would also know a lot of ancient secrets.

"This piece of black paper is a piece from the Immortal Pages,

which is also part of the 'Immortal Catalog.' From the information I know, the 'Immortal Catalog' has been divided into three pieces of 'Immortal Pages.' If I can get the remaining two Immortal Pages, I will get the real 'Primordial Immortal Body,'" Mu Chen said in a soft tone.

Nine Nether stared blankly at the vaguely glowing black paper in Mu Chen's hand. After quite a while, she took a deep breath to suppress the astonishment in her heart. She then gazed at Mu Chen with a complicated look. She did not expect Mu Chen to actually have such a heavy treasure.

"You... are so lucky!" In the end, Nine Nether could only heave a sigh and say in a jealous tone, "If one day, you can really gather the three pieces of 'Immortal Pages' and cultivate the 'Primordial Immortal Body' successfully, even Heavenly Sovereigns could not defeat you, not to mention that old man."

Mu Chen smirked but then said in a troubled tone, "However, the world is so large. It is kind of impossible to find the other two 'Immortal Pages.'"

Nine Nether also pondered slightly, after which she hesitated and said, "Actually, I have a suggestion."

"Yes?" Mu Chen's eyes glittered.

"Your Five Great Academies have a special divine artifact... that thing can penetrate any barriers and sense everything in the world. Maybe, it can be used to detect traces relating to the 'Immortal Catalog.'"

"The Mirror of Judgement?!" Mu Chen's eyes grew brighter and he was somewhat excited. Although he could not know the results, it indeed seemed to be a method worth trying.

As for how to use the "Mirror of Judgement," maybe he could ask Chief Tai Cang for help.

"But now, I suggest that you stop thinking about it. With your

strength now, even if you get the Immortal Catalog, it would be a disaster," Nine Nether said tonelessly.

Mu Chen smiled and did not deny it. At the moment, if he obtained the "Immortal Catalog," he would not have the ability to keep it. However, he also did not expect to obtain it in a short time. After all, even for the "Great Solar Undying Body" recorded on the Immortal Page, he could only stare at it because the materials were incomplete.

At the moment, he should wait until he got successfully promoted to the Sovereign level.

Mu Chen took a deep breath to pacify his swirling emotions. Gradually, his mood calmed down. Then, he turned his palm and kept the "Immortal Page" in his body.

"Guard me for a while," Mu Chen said softly. After that, his hands formed a cultivation seal and he slowly closed his eyes.

As Mu Chen closed his eyes, the dense spiritual clouds in the surroundings started to fluctuate and rush towards him at a shocking speed, eventually continuously entering his body.

Mu Chen's mind started to focus on the interior of his body. At the moment, waves of spiritual energy were whizzing over him with a speed far greater than that of previous experiences. Hence, in only an hour, Mu Chen's aurasea was filled with an impressive amount of spiritual energy.

The spiritual energy was so strong, that even his aurasea felt a faint pain, the feeling that it could not tolerate much more.

A sharp pain came, but Mu Chen showed no signs of stopping. Using his mind, the speed at which he was absorbing the spiritual energy became more and more violent.

Spiritual energy gushed in crazily and the aurasea soon reached its limit.

Mu Chen's face also turned extremely serious at that moment,

because he knew that the next step was the most important one. Only after the aurasea was completely cracked could he replace it with the sovereign sea.

If this step failed, his situation would be very dangerous.

"Just be cracked. My sovereign road starts now!"

Suddenly, Mu Chen opened his eyes and a sharp look could be seen. Breathing in with his mouth, spiritual energy turned into a torrent and gushed into his body, eventually into the aurasea which had already reached its limit.

Due to the pressure, the spiritual energy there finally totally exploded.

The aurasea instantly cracked!

Chapter 641: Advancement to Sovereign

Boom!

When the aurasea exploded, Mu Chen's body seemed to have been thunderstruck as well. He started to shiver now and then, and cold sweat flowed down from his forehead.

His body was in severe pain, and it nearly made him lose his sanity.

Fortunately, Mu Chen was well prepared. He took a deep breath and quickly calmed himself down. After the aurasea exploded, he could feel the majestic spiritual energy that had been kept within rushing out crazily like an unbridled wild horse.

Without the constraint of the aurasea, Mu Chen lost a bit of control over the spiritual energy that he had cultivated.

If one was unable to restrain the spiritual energy, even the meridians would be damaged, resulting in a serious situation.

Mu Chen would not allow such a thing to happen.

Come back!

Mu Chen shouted out in his heart and suddenly, a tiny light spot shimmered amid the aurasea. The light spot was so tiny that it was unnoticeable. However, it exuded a powerful suction.

Whoosh.

The suction spread out and covered Mu Chen completely.

The spiritual energy that had been raging suddenly slowed down. It then surged speedily toward the tiny light spot.

Swish. Swish.

The tiny light spot was the Sovereign Sea that Mu Chen had previously opened up. It shimmered gently and accepted whatever came to it. It seemed to be bottomless and sucked in all the

spiritual energy that flowed to it.

After two hours, the spiritual energy in Mu Chen's body stopped raging. The light spot, formed by the Sovereign Sea, hung in his body. It was brighter than before.

His thoughts moved and entered into the Sovereign Sea. A vast sea appeared before his eyes and spiritual energy was surging in it. The scale was much greater than the power of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

Mu Chen opened his eyes.

Nine Nether, who was watching him from the side, heaved a sigh of relief. She knew that Mu Chen must have completed the step of shattering the aurasea. The Sovereign Sea had successfully replaced the aurasea. Mu Chen would then have to fill up the Sovereign Sea with spiritual energy.

This would require some time, and it was the crucial step for him to advance from the Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster to the Sovereign-level.

"If you can refine the Sovereign Pill that you have gotten from the Spiritual Academy Competition, you should be able to attain the Sovereign-level. It can save you a bit of time," Nine Nether said.

Mu Chen hesitated for a while and then shook his head. He said softly, "I would like to perfect the Sovereign Sea myself."

Nine Nether was shocked upon hearing this and said with a frown, "Are you not refining the Sovereign Pill or the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid? If you don't do that, you will need a long period of time to cultivate the Sovereign Sea."

One would need a large amount of spiritual energy to fill up the Sovereign Sea. If one depended solely on his own cultivation, he would need a long period of time. Most people would choose to refine the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to speed up the process.

"I have all the time in the world. The Sovereign Sea is the foundation of the Sovereign-level. I think it will be best to cultivate it myself in order to perfect it," Mu Chen said with a smile.

Nine Nether did not refute this but looked at Mu Chen in a special way. She smiled and said, "I never knew you had such insight."

Nine Nether complimented Mu Chen. His decision was shocking. Many people could not wait to refine the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in order to advance to the Sovereign-level and have a taste of real Sovereign power. Although there was no harm to it, the spiritual energy was not as powerful as that of one who had achieved it based on his own cultivation.

The Sovereign Sea was the foundation of the Sovereign-level, thus it was extremely important. It was not easy for Mu Chen not to be tempted by power and choose the easier way of building up his Sovereign Sea.

Mu Chen looked up at the spiritual clouds in the sky and muttered, "This is because I am very ambitious."

"I know you are aiming for matchless mastery..." Nine Nether curled her lips. She looked at Mu Chen and said, "This path is not easy. You will realize that there are lots of talents in the Great Thousand World."

"No matter how tough it is, I will have to press on."

Mu Chen put on a big smile and said to Nine Nether, "This is a promise made by a man to the girl whom he likes."

Nine Nether was stunned as she looked at him. After a while, she smiled. This youth had grown up.

"I will need your help."

Mu Chen smiled at Nine Nether, and before she could reply, he shut his eyes and started to cultivate.

"You are too much. You really take me as your bodyguard!" Nine Nether gritted her teeth and waved her fist at Mu Chen. In the end, she just glared at him and sat cross-legged nearby.

As Mu Chen went into the state of cultivation, a powerful suction surged from his body. Spiritual clouds started to seethe and suddenly, they whizzed down like a windstorm and covered Mu Chen up.

A majestic spiritual energy flowed into his body and after being refined, it went into the Sovereign Sea. The Sovereign Sea was like a bottomless pit. It devoured the continuous flow of the spiritual energy...

At this moment, Mu Chen understood why Nine Nether had said that if he depended on his own cultivation, it would take a long time to fill up the Sovereign Sea.

After cultivating for a whole day, there was no increase in his Sovereign Sea. The spiritual energy that he had refined seemed insignificant.

At this rate, Mu Chen would need to take at least three months to fill up the Sovereign Sea.

This rate of refining is too slow, Mu Chen muttered in his heart. He pondered for a while and suddenly, he had a thought. He put his hands together and formed a seal.

Mu Chen had been completely covered by the spiritual clouds on the lotus platform. The spiritual clouds gathered together and surged toward him like a stream.

At that instant, the spiritual energy in the heavens and the earth fluctuated vigorously. Nine Nether was nearby and sensed it. She quickly lifted her head and gazed at the sky.

A black light tower formed outside Mu Chen's body. When it appeared, it exuded a horrifying suction that caused the spiritual clouds within a lofty radius to surge toward it. They were like huge

spiritual cloud dragons that were entering into the light tower.

Roar!

As the huge spiritual cloud dragons flooded into the black light tower, the lifelike Ancient Golden Dragon on top of the tower flew up. It then turned into a golden flame and entered the tower.

Swish. Swish.

When the majestic spiritual cloud dragons came into contact with the golden flame, they speedily evaporated. Ultimately, raindrops floated up and landed on Mu Chen, who was sitting cross-legged in the tower.

Although the fine raindrops were not as powerful as the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, the spiritual energy was condensed. It was pure and easy to absorb.

"What a domineering flame."

Nine Nether was stunned as she looked at the golden flame. She was good at using fire, and she used to possess the Nine Nether Flame which had become the Unperishable Flame. However, the golden flame that was before her was no ordinary thing.

After activating the Pagoda, Mu Chen's speed in refining the spiritual energy became faster and reached an incredible level. Even some of the elders in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy could indistinctly feel the vigorous spiritual energy fluctuation.

Mu Chen immersed himself in the state of cultivation. He instinctively refined the spiritual energy that he had absorbed and was oblivious to any disturbance.

He did it for one whole month.

During that month, he never rested. He had refined and absorbed large amounts of spiritual energy. The energy coming from the back hill was becoming so great, not only could the elders in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy sense it, but many disciples

could also feel the vigorous spiritual energy fluctuation.

Fortunately, everyone knew that Mu Chen was cultivating, and Chief Tai Cang had given instructions that he not be disturbed. The disciples were shocked by the spiritual energy fluctuation.

One month passed by quickly.

At the back hill...

Nine Nether, who had been conserving her energy with her eyes closed, suddenly opened her eyes and looked at the cultivation platform. The black light tower suddenly surged and started to disperse.

Afterwards, a figure sat cross-legged in the air.

There was nothing within a hundred feet around the figure. There seemed to be an invisible shield that not even spiritual energy could enter.

The figure sat quietly in the air, and there was no spiritual energy fluctuation. However, an inexplicable oppression spread out.

Mu Chen, who was sitting like a rock, finally opened his eyes slowly.

Boom!

The radiance in his eyes caused a space warp to form. He moved his body and appeared swiftly in the sky. He slowly opened up his hands and swifty rose into the sky!

Boom!

It sounded like thunder, and a huge spiritual energy light beam gushed out of his body. The light beam bound the heavens and the earth, and an oppression spread out.

Many disciples of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy looked stunned and stared at the huge beam. They could feel a familiar oppression coming out from the light beam...

It was the oppression from a Sovereign Master!

Mu Chen had successfully entered into the Sovereign-level!

Chapter 642: Loaning of the Mirror

A huge light beam shot up into the sky. It could be clearly seen within the radius of a hundred miles. Everyone could feel a familiar horrifying oppression from the light beam. They had felt it from their elders when they had advanced to the Sovereign-level.

This meant that the one who possessed the light beam had successfully advanced to the Sovereign-level.

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were on one of the mountains in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. They lifted their heads and looked perplexed as they watched the light beam.

"This guy is abnormal," Shen Cangsheng said with a wry smile. He was filled with admiration for Mu Chen, but at the same time, he could not take it lying down. When he had first met Mu Chen, Mo Xingtian was seeking to kill him. Within three years, Mu Chen had way surpassed him and entered the Sovereign-level before he did.

Li Xuantong nodded in agreement. He felt more deeply about Mu Chen's progress than Shen Cangsheng. In order to get out of the three rounds with Li Xuantong when they first met, Mu Chen had to put in a lot of effort. He had thought that Mu Chen was not good enough for Luo Li back then.

However, within three years they had seen with their own eyes how outstanding Mu Chen was and how rapidly he had progressed. Li Xuantong had to agree that Luo Li had good taste. Previously, when Luo Li had left with Mu Chen, Luo Tianshen was not very pleased with him. Now that Li Xuantong had seen his progress, he knew that one day, Luo Tianshen would change his view of Mu Chen, just like he had.

This youth was able to surprise people with his wonders.

"I don't think Mu Chen will stay in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy for long," Shen Cangsheng suddenly said. He sounded a bit sad. He had known Mu Chen for some time, and he had a good impression of him.

Li Xuantong looked at Shen Cangsheng and asked, "What about you?" He knew that Shen Cangsheng was proud, and he would not be tied down and stay in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy for long.

"I will go into seclusion so that I can enter the Sovereign-level. When I have attained it, I will wander around the Great Thousand World as well. Who knows? I may meet Mu Chen there. I would like to spar with him, given the opportunity, and see who is more powerful," Shen Cangsheng said with a smile. He was looking forward to the day he could spar with Mu Chen.

Li Xuantong smiled and said, "Let's do it together. I think I may advance to the Sovereign-level earlier than you."

"Hahaha, it is not easy to surpass me. Do you think that you are Mu Chen?" Shen Cangsheng burst out into laughter.

"We will see." Li Xuantong smiled and looked at Shen Cangsheng warmly. He had considered Shen Cangsheng an opponent with whom he could measure his strength and improve himself. As for Mu Chen, he was a scoundrel. It would be best to get rid of him. Li Xuantong did not want to keep receiving blows from him.

...

In the main hall of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, Northern Sea Dragon, Chief Tai Cang, and Hall Master Mo You lifted their heads and looked at the huge light beam. They looked pleased with Mu Chen. His achievements during the past three years were a rare case in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Hall Master Mo You said with a sigh, "This boy is powerful. It will be good if he can continue to stay in the Northern Heaven

Spiritual Academy."

Northern Sea Dragon looked angry and scolded Hall Master Mo You. "You are short-sighted and ruining his future."

Hall Master Mo You's face darkened after being scolded. He said awkwardly, "It was just a casual remark."

Chief Tai Cang laughed upon seeing this. He looked amused and said, "Mu Chen has great potential, but the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy is not able to help him develop it. He belongs to the Great Thousand World.

"If Mu Chen continues to stay with us, his strength will definitely increase, but he will not become a real Sovereign. Mo You, do you believe that in the future when Mu Chen returns, not only us, but Brother Northern may not be match for him?"

Upon hearing this, Mo You's face changed. He had not expected Chief Tai Cang to think so highly of Mu Chen.

Northern Sea Dragon stroked his beard and looked calm. He knew what Chief Tai Cang had said could be possible. This youth... had great potential. Most importantly, he possessed the desire of a top power to pursue after the path of cultivation.

Determination, perseverance, and holding fast to one's conscience...

What was most important to a Sovereign was not his talent, but having the desire of a Sovereign.

This youth would have a great future.

...

"Sister Ling Xi, has Brother Mu Chen successfully made a breakthrough?" You Jing asked happily and looked at the huge light beam in the distance.

Ling Xi sat on her heels in front of the Bamboo House. The sitting position showed her breathtaking curves. However, no man had

the privilege to see them. Ling Xi held the jade pot and poured a drink for herself. She glanced at the huge light beam and nodded casually, "I think so."

Sun'er pouted her lips and asked, "Sister Ling Xi, don't you care for Brother Mu Chen?" She was unhappy with Ling Xi's attitude.

"I don't have to worry about him. There is a beautiful woman helping him now," Ling Xi said flatly.

"Oh..." Sun'er smiled at Ling Xi and teased her, "Sister Ling Xi is jealous of the pretty sister!"

"Is she pretty?" Ling Xi raised her eyebrows and stared at Sun'er.

"She is as pretty as you... No, you are prettier!" Sun'er blurted out. However, when she saw that Ling Xi had raised her eyebrows, she realized that she had made a mistake and quickly changed her words.

"Ha." Ling Xi lightly snorted. She lifted up her face and looked at the spiritual energy light beam in the sky. She gritted her teeth and thought of the time when Mu Chen went into seclusion. She had taken the initiative to ask him if he needed her help to protect him, but Mu Chen had rejected her offer. He was unpardonable!

Sun'er stole a look at Ling Xi and was baffled. Although Sister Ling Xi treats people coldly, she is kind-hearted. She gets along well with Sister Luo Li. Why does she dislike Sister Nine Nether?

She had heard that in Goddess Luo Association, it was known that Sister Ling Xi and Sister Nine Nether were the most popular matured ladies... Although she did not know what matured ladies meant...

As Sun'er was scratching her head, Ling Xi stood up. She gazed at the huge light beam, and was pleased and proud. Mu Chen was indeed Aunt Jing's son. He should be as outstanding as Aunt Jing in the future.

When the day came, she might fall for him.

Ling Xi blushed at this thought and quickly put it out of her mind.

...

The huge light beam covered the heavens and the earth for a few minutes before disappearing into thin air. Before it disappeared, two streamers flashed across the horizon and appeared above the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Many of the disciples looked in that direction and saw a youth standing in the air. He looked the same as before, and the strong spiritual energy fluctuation that had surrounded him earlier had dissipated. Everyone would have thought that he had failed to break through if not for his disposition in the air.

Nine Nether stood gracefully beside Mu Chen. She drew everyone's attention, even more so than Mu Chen. She was tall and slender, and had a graceful neck like a swan. She had delicate collarbones and a voluptuous bosom. Her long, flawless legs were especially pleasant to the eyes. Her eyes were beautiful and wild, and they sent out a message that it would be difficult to tame her.

Mu Chen looked at the people staring at them and smiled. He heaved a sigh of relief and gently clenched his fist. He could feel a horrifying spiritual energy surging in his body like a volcano. The Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster were not even comparable to the power of the spiritual energy.

He could now easily suppress a few hundred masters at the Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster.

The difference was not a matter of numbers.

The power contained pure spiritual energy. Once Mu Chen successfully cultivated the Sovereign Celestial Body in the future, it would be even more powerful.

What a fascinating power...

Mu Chen was enjoying the feeling, and after he came to himself,

he brought Nine Nether to the main hall.

"Hahaha, Mu Chen, congratulations," Hall Master Mo You and the other Chiefs said with a smile as they saw Mu Chen.

Mu Chen cupped his fist and looked hesitantly at Chief Tai Cang.

"Why are you hesitating? Just tell me what you want," Chief Tai Cang said gently with a smile.

Mu Chen looked nervously at Chief Tai Cang and asked cautiously, "Chief, I would like to... use the Mirror of Judgment. Can I?" This was extremely important to him. If he was unable to use it, it would be difficult for him to locate the Immortal Catalog.

Chief Tai Cang and the other Chiefs were taken aback by Mu Chen's request. They looked grave and their eyebrows furrowed.

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen's heart sank.

Chapter 643: Dispute

"You wish to borrow the Mirror of Judgment..."

Chief Tai Cang and the other Chiefs frowned upon hearing Mu Chen's request. After quite a while, Chief Tai Cang looked at Mu Chen and said, "The Mirror of Judgment is jointly controlled by the Five Great Academies. One Academy alone cannot grant the use of it. The Five Great Academies have to vote. If more than three people agree, you can then use the Mirror of Judgment."

Mu Chen scratched his head and smiled wryly. He knew that it was not easy to borrow the Mirror of Judgment. However, he had to depend on it to get information about the Immortal Catalog.

Chief Tai Cang continued, "Among the Five Great Academies, the Saint Spiritual Academy is unlikely to agree to it. However, there might be a chance that the other Three Great Academies will agree."

Northern Sea Dragon, who had been keeping mum, slowly said, "Let me make a trip to the Three Great Academies. They may show me some respect and assent to my request."

Upon hearing this, Chief Tai Cang and the other Chiefs were stunned. Northern Sea Dragon had seldom interfered with the matters of the Academy. He made an exception for Mu Chen.

Mu Chen was stunned as well. He looked gratefully at Northern Sea Dragon and said softly, "Thank you, Senior Northern."

Mu Chen knew that it was difficult to get an Earthly Sovereign to speak up for him. Given Northern Sea Dragon's pride, he rarely took the initiative to ask for favors from others. Mu Chen did not reject the offer. He knew that if he did, the eccentric old man would ignore him immediately. Mu Chen just had to remember his kindness.

"If you had not performed well in the Spiritual Academy

Competition, the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy would not have retained our title. What is my dignity compared to this?" Northern Sea Dragon looked at Mu Chen and smiled, which was rarely seen.

"I am and will always be a disciple of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy," Mu Chen said with a smile.

"Great. Since you have said this, it makes it worthwhile for me to lay down my dignity." Northern Sea Dragon smiled and looked pleased. He waved at Chief Tai Cang and the other Chiefs and said, "I will make a trip to the Three Great Academies. Mu Chen, you will stay in the Academy and wait for my news."

Having said that, Northern Sea Dragon stepped forth and entered the space warp before him. The space tore apart and he disappeared within.

As Mu Chen looked at Northern Sea Dragon, he was filled with gratitude towards him.

Chief Tai Cang patted Mu Chen on his shoulder. After pausing for a moment, he said, "After this has been settled, I believe that you will be leaving the Academy?"

Mu Chen nodded.

"Might as well. You will not go far if you continue to stay in the Academy. You belong to the Great Thousand World."

Chief Tai Cang gave him a big smile and continued, "I would like you to remember what I have told you before. As long as you do not do anything against the Academy, you will always be our disciple. No matter what trouble you get into out there, as long as you come back to the Academy, we will not allow anyone to bully you."

Mu Chen looked at Chief Tai Cang, who was smiling, and he was moved. He did not say a word but just nodded.

He would forever remember this place.

After chatting with Chief Tai Cang for a while, Mu Chen left with Nine Nether for the courtyard where Ling Xi lived.

When he entered the courtyard, he saw a lady in white sitting on her heels in front of the Bamboo House. When the lady saw him, she smiled at him. However, when she saw Nine Nether behind Mu Chen, she raised her eyebrows.

"Congratulations. You have finally advanced to Sovereign," Ling Xi said with a smile.

Mu Chen smiled and sat opposite her. He looked at her beautiful face and after a while said, "Sister Ling Xi, I might be leaving the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy soon."

Ling Xi was pouring herself a drink, and her hand shook upon hearing this. She looked at Mu Chen and nodded lightly.

"Sister Ling Xi, will you be going with me?" Mu Chen asked softly.

Ling Xi remained silent for a while before shaking her head and saying, "I will leave the Academy after you. But, I will not go with you. I have other things to settle."

"Other things?" Mu Chen was stunned. He looked at Ling Xi, who was biting her lips, and said with a frown, "Are you going to look for my mother?"

Ling Xi nodded lightly. Her expression turned slightly cold as she said, "My memory has been sealed, but I can still indistinctly sense bits and pieces of it. I intend to check it out alone. We need to know where Aunt Jing is."

Mu Chen's expression changed, and he said in a grave voice, "No, you must not do it alone. It is too dangerous! I will go with you!" Although he had not dealt with the Mysterious Clan before, he could sense that they were horrifying. His mother's strength was comparable to a Heavenly Sovereign's, but she had been captured by them. Ling Xi was only at Grade Four Sovereign. If she were

found out by the Mysterious Clan, she would be in danger.

"Don't be silly." Ling Xi smiled gently and said, "Aunt Jing would rather miss you than put you in danger. How can I let you risk your life with me?

"You don't have to worry about me. I know what to do. I will not be rash. I will only be checking secretly. When I have some clues, I will get in touch with you."

Mu Chen looked at Ling Xi. She was suddenly very gentle. She smiled and spoke softly, but her tone was filled with determination.

"After all, you will have to look for Aunt Jing in the future. You will need to be familiar with the surroundings. I will set out in advance and see if I can collect some useful information for you."

She looked straight into Mu Chen's eyes and gently shook her head to signal him not to dissuade her anymore.

After staring at each other for some time, Mu Chen's heart sank. He gritted his teeth and said, "In that case, make one Spirit Seal for me. If not, I will not let you go alone."

A Spirit Seal was made from separating a small part of one's spirit to form a seal. The Spirit Seal would be connected to its owner. If the owner was in danger, there would be a reaction in the Spirit Seal.

However, as the Spirit Seal contained a small part of the spirit, if the Seal was damaged, the owner would be injured. Unless they had a close relationship, no one would hand their Spirit Seal to another person.

Mu Chen and Ling Xi shared a special relationship.

Ling Xi looked at Mu Chen's determined look and finally gave in. She looked a bit helpless and felt cherished at the same time. She smiled and said, "You are really stubborn... All right."

She extended her hand and lights gathered on her fingertips. A golden light glittered and gradually formed a golden seal about the size of a palm. It was small and delicate, like a mini Ling Xi. It even carried her elegance.

"Here, take it." Ling Xi smiled at Mu Chen and passed the Golden Spirit Seal to him.

Mu Chen took the Golden Spirit Seal and played with it curiously. He stroked mini Ling Xi on her cheek and saw Ling Xi blushing and staring angrily at him.

She was connected to the Golden Spirit Seal. Because they were close, she could feel it as Mu Chen stroked the Seal. His action was disrespectful to her. If it had been anyone else, Ling Xi would have killed him.

Cough... Upon seeing this, Mu Chen coughed and quickly stowed the Golden Spirit Seal. He then said seriously, "Sister Ling Xi, no matter what happens, you must promise me not to be rash. I will take care of it in the future. I will protect you and mother."

"Wait 'til you surpass me." Ling Xi smiled. Although she was angry earlier, upon hearing what Mu Chen said, she became happy.

"By the way, even though you have advanced to Sovereign, you must not neglect cultivating your spiritual array. With your talent, you will be able to find the secret to the Spiritual Array Grandmaster. This is an extremely powerful skill. It will be dangerous in the Great Thousand World, unlike the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. It will be better if you can know an additional skill." Ling Xi looked stern and warned Mu Chen.

Mu Chen smiled and nodded. Ling Xi had suddenly become sentimental and he felt warmth in his heart.

"One more thing..."

Suddenly, Ling Xi turned and glanced at Nine Nether, who was

standing aside. Nine Nether looked calm and did not go near her or speak to her. For no reason, the two ladies could not seem to see eye to eye.

"Although you are bonded by bloodline, it should be possible to break the bond."

Nine Nether raised her eyebrows and looked coldly at Ling Xi.

Ling Xi did not avoid her gaze but said flatly, "Don't look at me that way. Mu Chen did not know as he is still young. Do you think I don't know what you are thinking of?"

"What are you trying to say?" Nine Nether said coldly.

"You must hold a high position among the Nine Netherworld Birds since you are able to evolve at such a young age and possess the Unperishable Flame." Ling Xi sneered.

Nine Nether lifted up her chin and said, "So?"

"The Nine Netherworld Birds are extremely stubborn. If you hold an important position and they know that you are bonded by bloodline with a human being, they will be angry. Given your character, they may force Mu Chen to break the bond. If this happens, Mu Chen will be seriously injured," Ling Xi said and looked coldly at Nine Nether.

"No one can force us to break the bloodline bond."

Nine Nether stared at Ling Xi and emphasized each word, "No! One! Can! Do! That!"

As the two ladies looked coldly at each other, the atmosphere was nearing the freezing point!

Chapter 644: Search for the Immortal Catalog

The courtyard was enveloped in a tense atmosphere as the two women stared at each other coldly. The imposing auras they emitted resulted in howling gusts of wind, causing the leaves in the courtyard to blow violently.

Afraid to get embroiled in the imminent conflict, Sun'er quietly hid behind a large tree as she secretly watched the confrontation between Nine Nether and Ling Xi.

Upon witnessing the scene, Mu Chen felt a headache developing. He could not understand why the two women in front of him were always fighting as soon as they saw each other, or why their conflicts were laced with overwhelming resentment towards the other party.

Ling Xi stared at Nine Nether as she stated coldly, "Everyone knows how to say pleasant words of reassurance. If I find out Mu Chen was hurt because of the Bloodline Bond, I won't let you off—even if you are a member of the Nine Netherbird Clan."

Nine Nether raised her eyebrow as she scoffed coldly, "How arrogant of you! I would really like to see how capable you are of backing up your threatening boast!"

"Oh really?" Ling Xi's expression turned chilling as sparks of light shimmered in her slender hand.

"Hmph."

Nine Nether hmphed in disdain as a cold glint flashed in her eyes. A massive shadow that could engulf the heavens and earth emerged behind her back, emitting a terrifying aura.

However, just as the two women were about to engage in combat, Mu Chen finally shouted in anger as he grasped Ling Xi's hand, fury apparent in his expression. "Stop it, both of you! Haven't you

both caused enough trouble?!"

Ling Xi and Nine Nether glanced at Mu Chen. He had not merely interrupted them this time. Instead, he was truly enraged. His usually gentle eyes became unusually harsh.

Upon witnessing Mu Chen's true fury for the first time, Ling Xi and Nine Nether's auras weakened, and with a light hum, both restrained their spiritual fluctuations.

Mu Chen looked at the two women, who looked away from each other, and rubbed his forehead in exasperation.

"Sister Ling Xi, the Bloodline Bond between Nine Nether and I was formed when we were both in perilous situations. Hence, even if there is a way to unravel this Bloodline Bond, I won't choose to do so. Nine Nether has helped me a lot over the years. If it wasn't for her, I might not have made it here.

"No matter what danger I will encounter in the future because of this Bloodline Bond, I am willing to shoulder the risk. As long as Nine Nether disagrees, then I will not let anyone get rid of our Bloodline Bond without permission." Mu Chen's voice rang out in the courtyard. Although his timbre wasn't low or deep, the determination and steadfastness in it was moving.

Nine Nether and Ling Xi's cold expressions gradually eased. Ling Xi shifted her gaze as she looked at the youth's determined and serious expression, and then quickly glanced away. Somehow, she was suddenly in a better mood.

Ling Xi stared at Mu Chen as she sighed lightly. "Since you have already said so, I shall not say anything more."

She then smiled brightly as she teasingly glanced at Mu Chen. "However, I didn't think that young Mu Chen would be so responsible. You have truly grown to be a man."

Mu Chen gnashed his teeth as he retorted, "How am I young? You are just older than me by merely two or three years!"

Ling Xi smiled nonchalantly as she lifted her head to look at Nine Nether. Her tone gradually softened.

"I'm not targeting you specifically, but you should also understand that what I am talking about is an underlying concern. After all, if the Nine Netherbird Clan catches wind of this matter, I'm afraid they would be unwilling to take things lying down."

Nine Nether said calmly, "I'm already of age, so this is my own matter. Even my parents have no say in it. If there is truly trouble in future, I will protect him."

The corners of Mu Chen's mouth twitched as he commented, "I'm not interested in relying on women."

However, Nine Nether ignored his protests as she took her leave. She told them only to take their time to chat as she left behind her beautiful silhouette.

"What a prideful girl. Mu Chen, it seems that you still have a long way to go if you want to subdue this proud little sparrow."

Ling Xi looked at Nine Nether's beautiful silhouette as she smiled. She then lazily stretched her arms, and the curves beneath her white robes immediately became increasingly apparent.

Mu Chen shrugged helplessly.

"Come to me when you have time these days. Don't neglect your Spiritual Array Cultivation. Before you leave, I will try to teach you everything I know."

Mu Chen smiled and nodded. "Alright."

...

For the next few days, Mu Chen remained quietly in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Most of the time, he was in the Spiritual Courtyard where Ling Xi was located, as he communicated with her about Spiritual Array Cultivation. When he finished practicing, he would celebrate and have fun with

everyone in the Goddess Luo Association. Prior to this, when he was in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy he spent most of his time cultivating, but now that he would be leaving soon, he began to feel reluctant to part with everyone.

He liked the pure and innocent smiles of the members of the Goddess Luo Association. They could ignore their identities and status because in that moment, they were all just members of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Perhaps when he began to explore the Great Thousand World in the near future, it would be difficult to see these kinds of purely innocent and happy smiles. After all, he would no longer be in a worry-free ivory tower.

Every day when the night came, Mu Chen would sit alone on the mountain and look up at the starry sky. Once upon a time, a young girl would sit quietly beside him, and she would gently lean her head on his shoulder. He loved the feeling of being relied on so much. During those times, he felt as if he had become her world, supporting her...

But now that the girl he loved was no longer beside him, that kind of feeling could only exist in his memory.

Mu Chen slowly laid on the grass. His eyes gently closed as he gradually clenched his hands tightly into fists.

Luo Li, wait for me.

...

Over the next ten days, Mu Chen remained quietly in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy awaiting the return of the Northern Sea Dragon.

Upon receiving news of the Northern Sea Dragon's return, Mu Chen rushed to the main hall immediately. He saw a smile etched on the Northern Sea Dragon's ancient features.

Seeing his smile, Mu Chen heaved a sigh of relief.

"As expected, among the Chiefs of the Five Great Academies, Chief Tian Sheng of the Saint Spiritual Academy—that old humbug—didn't agree to it. Thankfully, the three other Chiefs did agree, so that fellow couldn't say anything." The Northern Sea Dragon looked at Mu Chen as he smiled.

At this moment, even with Mu Chen's usual calm focus, his heart was filled with excitement.

"When would you want to access the Mirror of Judgment?"

"Can I do it now?" Mu Chen asked, as he couldn't restrain his excitement.

"Alright. Now, then."

The Northern Sea Dragon nodded with a smile. He was not surprised by Mu Chen's urgency. With a wave of his palm, the void in front of him tore apart as a spatial crack appeared. He then stepped forward.

"Follow me."

Mu Chen nodded and immediately followed. Nine Nether also followed behind him.

As Mu Chen stepped into the spatial crack, changes immediately emerged before his eyes. The space seemed to be small, but it was a mass of chaos. Within this small space, a huge ancient bronze mirror approximately 1,000 feet tall was suspended quietly in the air. An indescribably terrifying wave rippled subtly, so that the space was in constant shock and motion.

There was a stone staircase in the space extending all the way out until it reached the ancient bronze mirror. The Northern Sea Dragon led Mu Chen and Nine Nether to this point, and then handed a copper seal to Mu Chen.

"Trigger this item, and you will be able to access the Mirror of Judgment. However, you are unable to use it to attack, as you are incapable of activating this Divine Artifact with your current

ability. If you were to misuse it, you would get severely injured with the backlash."

Mu Chen nodded as he received the copper seal.

"I will take my leave first then."

The Northern Sea Dragon smiled as he vanished. He did not insist on staying, although he was curious why Mu Chen had asked to borrow the Mirror of Judgment. However, he did not probe. After all, everyone had their own secrets.

With the Northern Sea Dragon's departure, the space became silent. Mu Chen lifted his head to look at the massive Mirror of Judgement as his spiritual energy surged into the copper seal in his hand.

A faint beam of light shot out of his palm and directly into the dusky surface of the Mirror of Judgment.

Buzz.

Tiny ripples moved across the mirror, and the Mirror of Judgment gradually became clear. However, the surface of the mirror had a fathomless depth, as if it were the night sky, and emitted a mysterious aura.

Mu Chen took a deep breath as he spread out his hand. Amid the flickering lights, a page of the mysterious Immortal Pages appeared in a flash.

With a snap of his fingers, the page from the Immortal Pages fluttered out, finally stopping in mid-air in front of the Mirror of Judgment.

Buzz.

As the surface rippled, streams of light flickered and transformed into a beam of light. It surged out, enveloping and entering a page of the Immortal Pages.

Buzz.

As the light engulfed it, the Mirror of Judgment suddenly quivered violently, and the ripples on its surface showed signs of losing control.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether looked on anxiously. The Immortal Catalog was indeed terrifying, even though they had used a page of the Immortal Pages as a priming source, the Mirror of Judgment nearly lost control.

Their eyes were fixed on the surface of the Mirror of Judgment, but minutes passed and there was still only darkness.

Seeing this, Mu Chen's eyebrows knitted together tightly.

"Is the Immortal Catalog that formidable, that even the Mirror of Judgment is unable to detect its trace..."

Nine Nether sighed. Indeed, it was worthy of being the legendary Primitive Celestial Body.

Mu Chen remained silent, but he stared at the scene unblinkingly.

A few more minutes passed as the disappointment in Mu Chen's eyes grew. Nine Nether could only pat his shoulder lightly in consolation.

However, just as Mu Chen and Nine Nether thought that all hope was lost, the surface of the mirror, which had remained still all the while, finally rippled violently as a blurry picture began to appear on the dark surface.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether brightened in surprise as ecstasy surged in their eyes. Had the mirror finally detected something?

Chapter 645: Ancient Celestial Palace

Ripples fluctuated on the ancient bronze mirror, and the deep and mysterious dark colors faded away like the tide. The blurry picture began to appear indistinctly.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether gazed at it intently.

In the huge bronze mirror, it seemed that there were endless continents. The mountains spread out seemingly without end. The overlooking point of view seemed to be from a high altitude, as if the sight were still rising...

Mu Chen stared blankly at the strange continents. He had no idea what godforsaken places they were.

Nine Nether, however, stared seriously at the outline of the mountains and terrain. Her eyebrows knitted together as though she were pondering something.

The pictures continued to emerge and finally seemed to transform into a continental map. The continent had an indescribable, overwhelming vastness.

Mu Chen stared at the strange terrain map and could only laugh bitterly. The world was too vast, and there were countless continents. Thus, it was not easy to tell where it was by a mere terrain map.

Furthermore, the Mirror of Judgment did not reveal to them the exact location of the Immortal Catalog. Were they going to search fruitlessly like headless flies on such a vast continent?

The odds of finding it were impossibly low.

Just as Mu Chen could not help but to force a smile, light faintly converged onto the Mirror of Judgment once again. It became an ancient palace above which the sun and the moon were suspended, and the light shone as if it had shrouded that vast continent.

Nine Nether looked at the ancient palace with the sun and moon hovering above it. Her body shook with surprise as astonishment surged in her eyes.

The picture did not last long and slowly dissipated. The surface of the Mirror of Judgment became dark again, and the light enveloping the Immortal Page also dissipated.

Mu Chen stretched out his palm as the Immortal Page landed on it and was swiftly absorbed into his body.

"We don't have any leads at all." Mu Chen sighed softly. He had no clue about the strange continent or the ancient palace.

"Not necessarily." Nine Nether, who had been staring at the Mirror of Judgment, smiled suddenly.

Upon hearing this statement, Mu Chen was stunned. Surprise surged in his heart when he understood the meaning of Nine Nether's words. Had she discovered something?

"If I'm not wrong, the continent that appeared within the Mirror of Judgment should be the Tianluo Continent, one of the ten supercontinents in the Great Thousand World."

"One of the ten supercontinents in the Great Thousand World... the Tianluo Continent?" Mu Chen muttered to himself.

"In the Great Thousand World, the most renowned would be that of the ten supercontinents, which are considered the core regions in the entire Great Thousand World. These regions are incomparably prosperous with countless powerful people, as many as the stars in the sky.

"I'm afraid that when compared with Tianluo Continent, your Northern Heavens Continent where your Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy is located cannot even match up to a firefly. In the Tianluo Continent, any top powers are no weaker than the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy."

Upon hearing this, Mu Chen clicked his tongue in shock. Even

though he had known that the Northern Heavens Continent was nothing in this Great Thousand World, he did not expect it to this degree. After all, no matter what, the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy could be regarded as the ruler of the entire Northern Heavens Continent, but in comparison to those supercontinents, it was merely insignificant.

"You seem to be especially familiar with Tianluo Continent?" Mu Chen started at Nine Nether in surprise.

"Do you know where I came from before I failed to pass the tribulation?" Nine Nether smiled.

Shock and disbelief was written on Mu Chen's face as he replied, "It's this Tianluo Continent?"

"Bingo." Nine Nether nodded seriously.

"The Nine Netherbird Clan was also in the Tianluo Continent?" Mu Chen asked in astonishment.

"The Nine Netherbird Clan is not in the Tianluo Continent. I just went to the place when I first began my cultivation. Besides, I have my own territory there." Nine Nether smirked with self-satisfaction.

"You even established an influence and have your own forces?" Mu Chen was really astounded at this point.

"I didn't set up forces, but I was invited by an elder to join one of the top forces. After all, life would be very difficult if one had no background when journeying in the vast world, especially in the Tianluo Continent where there were many hidden top powers."

"Oh? There was actually a top force that you deigned to join?" Mu Chen smiled.

"At that time, I had not been successful in evolution, and I didn't even have the power of the Sovereign. The strength I had was simply insignificant in the Tianluo Continent. The top force I was in was called the Daluo Territory, but you should not

underestimate it. It was one of the top forces in the Tianluo Continent, and I'm afraid that its overall strength would only be stronger than that of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Moreover, I am also ranked as a senior leader in the Daluo Territory." Nine Nether smiled gleefully.

"You didn't even have the ability of a Sovereign-level then, and you could become a senior leader?" Mu Chen asked doubtfully.

"Heheh. Well, I do have strong support to back me up." Nine Nether's smirk grew increasingly proud.

Mu Chen was exasperated. So she got the rank of senior leader by pulling strings? He shook his head as he glanced at the Mirror of Judgment.

"If what appeared in the Mirror of Judgment was the Tianluo Continent, then what about the silhouette of the palace with the sun and the moon that appeared later? What does that mean?"

Nine Nether's eyebrows knitted together as she pondered for a moment before stating slowly, "I have heard a rumor in the Tianluo Continent, that there is an Ancient Celestial Palace hidden there. Its owner is said to be a Sovereign Existence who could move heavens and earth in primordial times, and even the Heavenly Sovereign could not compare to this figure."

Mu Chen's expression changed in shock. Even the Heavenly Sovereign could not match up to this person? How terrifying is this figure?

"Rumor has it that within the Celestial Palace, there is the existence of a Divine Artifact that the Earthly Sovereign, even the Heavenly Sovereign, would desire. After so many years, however, it seems like no one has even caught a glimpse of the Ancient Celestial Palace, so it has always remained as a rumor."

Nine Nether ruminated over it, as she stated softly, "If the Immortal Catalog is indeed in the Ancient Celestial Palace, I think

it is highly possible that this Sovereign Existence could be one of the ten Sovereigns who had control over the Primitive Celestial Body in primordial times. This person might even be the first master of the Primordial Immortal Body."

Mu Chen listened solemnly to Nine Nether's analysis. It made sense though. Perhaps the Immortal Catalog really had some links to the Ancient Celestial Palace, but this information brought him a headache, regardless of whether the Ancient Celestial Palace actually existed or not. Even if it did appear, it would certainly cause a great uproar, and if he wanted to obtain the Immortal Catalog from countless top powers, it was akin to snatching food from a tiger and was extremely dangerous.

However, come what may, he would not give up easily now that he had obtained some clues after going to all this trouble.

"Looks like we have a goal next," Mu Chen stated softly.

"Make our way to the Tianluo Continent? That is a good place to advance your cultivation." Nine Nether smiled.

"My goal now is to become strong enough to be able to protect the people I want to protect. The Tianluo Continent is one of the supercontinents, so I think it would be more exciting and dangerous than the Northern Heavens Continent."

The Tianluo Continent was indeed a good place, as he could practice his cultivation and ask around to collect information about the Ancient Celestial Palace. In that case, if there was an opportunity at that time, he would be able to have an edge over the others.

Of course, before doing this, he still must enhance his own strength. Otherwise, even if the Ancient Celestial Palace appeared, his limited ability would not qualify him to compete against the rest.

"I didn't expect to be able to go back to the Tianluo Continent,

but I do miss it." Nine Nether sighed, feeling sentimental. When she left the Nine Netherbird Clan, she went directly to the Tianluo Continent. Later, due to passing the tribulations, she instead stumbled upon the small Northern Spiritual Realm after several turns of events. Under strange circumstances, she even forged a Bloodline Bond with Mu Chen.

Furthermore, what was even more coincidental was that Mu Chen now needed to go to this supercontinent. Destiny was truly unpredictable.

"Let's go. When we arrive at the Tianluo Continent, I'm counting on you, a local who is familiar with the place." Mu Chen smiled.

"Just give my name, and I guarantee you can do anything you want in the Tianluo Continent." Nine Nether smiled.

Mu Chen rolled his eyes as he ignored her. Despite how strong the Daluo Territory was that Nine Nether belonged to, it was but one of the top forces in the Tianluo Continent. Although Nine Nether was one of the senior leaders, it was impossible for her to do anything she wanted in the Tianluo Continent.

Mu Chen turned around and swept straight down the long stone staircase before stepping towards the spatial crack. Although he did not get specific information this time, the result was already quite satisfactory. At least he had a general direction, instead of having to go around and search aimlessly like a blind man.

Two figures appeared from within the spatial crack as spatial fluctuations rippled. They appeared directly in front of the main hall of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. In front of them, the Northern Sea Dragon smiled as he glanced at them.

"Is everything in order?"

Mu Chen nodded as he returned the copper seal to the Northern Sea Dragon and gave his sincere gratitude.

"Thank you, Elder Northern Sea."

With a flourish of the Northern Sea Dragon's sleeve, the spatial crack gradually dissipated. He glanced at the youth before him, his expression softening as he said, "You would be leaving soon?"

"Three days from now." Mu Chen took a deep breath as he suppressed his feelings of longing.

The Northern Sea Dragon nodded lightly, and a smile appeared on his wizened face.

"I look forward to hearing news about you. I believe you will astound everyone by then.

"You are the pride of our Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. I do not wish for our ace disciple to be overshadowed by the countless talents in the Great Thousand World."

"I will do my best."

Mu Chen smiled brightly as he turned his head to glance at the familiar Spiritual Academy which had always been filled with vitality. In the lingering rays of the setting sun, countless silhouettes flitted across the sky towards various areas of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Goddess Luo Association... Lightning Territory... Spirit Convergence Array... Spiritual Values Hall...

In the dimming afterglow of the setting sun, the familiar locations began to fade away in his field of vision.

Mu Chen stretched out his hands, a smile pulling at the corners of his mouth. He couldn't bear to leave this place, but he also looked forward to the future journey. This was not his end, but only his starting point.

Farewell, Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Chapter 646: Leaving

Three days flashed by in the blink of an eye.

When the morning light of the third day tore the darkness of the night apart and shone on the earth, the whole Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy was once again full of vitality. However, the atmosphere of the Academy was slightly different from the past.

Countless disciples lifted their gazes and converged at the top of the peak in the center of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, where the silhouette of a slender and tall figure could be vaguely seen.

All the disciples had already received news that Mu Chen was about to leave Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Their gazes were filled with admiration and adoration as they glanced at the figure in the morning light, the most outstanding person in their Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy who had won glory for them in the Spiritual Academy Competition.

Although young people were always a little arrogant, they always showed true admiration and respect from the bottom of their hearts towards Mu Chen.

In the headquarters of the Goddess Luo Association, tens of thousands of members looked dejected. Mu Chen and Luo Li were considered the main pillars of support in their Association. Now that both were leaving, it was a severe blow to the Goddess Luo Association.

However, they also knew that Mu Chen was no longer suitable to remain at the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. He needed a larger stage to develop and perform, and the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy was too small for him.

Hence, despite feeling sorrowful, they were very understanding.

On the training ground, Ye Qingling, Yu Xi, and Su Ling'er all

lifted their heads. Yu Xi's eyes were red with tears, as she could not help but cry like a little kitten when she heard the news that Mu Chen was about to leave.

Her little button nose sniffled as tears welled up in her huge doe eyes again.

"It's okay, don't cry." Ye Qingling patted her head gently as she smiled.

"Mu Chen mentioned that you would be the pillar of support for the Goddess Luo Association when he left. This is the mission he left for you, you can't do it badly."

Yu Xi rubbed her eyes, as she nodded solemnly.

"Don't worry, Sister Ye, I won't let the Goddess Luo Association down. I will definitely win the championship at the next Spiritual Academy Competition!"

"You have ambition," Ye Qingling smiled gently before lifting her gaze and staring at the figure. She murmured in her heart softly, "Have a smooth journey, Mu Chen."

Atop the mountain peak, Mu Chen also looked down at the enormous Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. As he registered the countless gazes directed at him, sentimental feelings of departing welled in his heart.

Behind Mu Chen, Ling Xi approached, a gentle smile blossoming on her usually calm face as she lightly and neatly smoothed his clothes.

"Now that you are leaving the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, be careful in everything you do."

Mu Chen glanced at the beautiful face which was close to his, feeling touched by her kind words. He stretched out his arm and held Ling Xi's slender waist, gently hugging her before swiftly letting go.

"Be careful too, Sister Ling Xi. If you meet with any danger, do give up. I promise that I will definitely rescue Mother. By then, no matter how dangerous it is, I will always protect you and Mother."

Ling Xi's slender figure stiffened momentarily at Mu Chen's actions, but her eyes reddened at his words. She was touched by Mu Chen's concern.

She nodded gently before turning to glance and smile at Nine Nether.

"Nine Nether, I was wrong before when I picked at your faults. I'm hope you don't take it to heart."

Nine Nether froze. She clearly did not expect Ling Xi to take the initiative to apologize to her. She was bewildered, and her pretty face was slightly flushed as she waved her hands and said, "It's alright."

"Please take care of him in the future," Ling Xi said softly.

Nine Nether nodded.

"My life is linked together with his. Naturally, I won't let anything happen to him."

The Northern Sea Dragon and Chief Tai Cang appeared at this moment. They smiled while looking at Mu Chen.

"The Transfer Spiritual Array has been completed. It will transport you out of the Northern Heavens Continent. If you need to travel to other places, you will have to search for the major cities in the other continents and use the Transfer Spiritual Array located there."

"Thank you so much, Elder Northern and Chief."

Mu Chen glanced at the sky, where a huge Transfer Spiritual Array stood.

The Tianluo Continent was very far away. Without the Transfer Spiritual Array, even a Sovereign would have to spend more than

half a year travelling to arrive—and that was if the journey had no obstructions.

Between the major continents, besides the vast sea, there existed all kinds of natural disasters that even Sovereigns feared. Some continents were isolated from the flow of space, and if one wanted to pass through, even the most powerful Sovereigns would find it extremely dangerous.

Mu Chen took a deep breath, and despite the longing in his heart, he did not hesitate as he turned to Nine Nether and said, "It's almost time, let's move!"

Nine Nether nodded in response as the two moved and appeared in the Transfer Spiritual Array.

"Mu Chen, don't bring dishonor to the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy in front of outsiders. After all, you're the most outstanding person in our Academy!"

From a near distance, a clear voice rang as Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong stood in the air, looking at them.

"Mu Chen, if we ever have the chance to meet again, don't get dragged down by us again. We won't go easy on you by then."

A smile surfaced on Li Xuantong's suave features.

Mu Chen nodded lightly in response.

"Brother Mu, take care!"

In the headquarters of the Goddess Luo Association, suddenly countless voices rang out in sync, as numerous members of the Association stood up and bowed gently in Mu Chen's direction.

This was their respect for the founder of the Goddess Luo Association.

As Mu Chen witnessed the scene before him, his nose scrunched up as he was deeply moved. However, he did not say anything as he glanced at the Northern Sea Dragon and nodded lightly.

The Northern Sea Dragon sighed and with a curl of its finger, a beam of spiritual energy shot into the Transfer Spiritual Array. Within the Spiritual Array, light glistened as the space violently distorted.

As his gaze blurred, Mu Chen knew that the transfer was imminent. He glanced at the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, which was becoming increasingly indistinct, and murmured in his heart, "Farewell, everyone. Take care, and may we meet again."

Whoosh!

The light of the Transfer Spiritual Array gradually reached its strongest potential as the space twisted into a whirlpool. With a surge of the suction force, Mu Chen and Nine Nether turned into streams of light rushing into the space whirlpool, and disappeared in the blink of an eye.

The Transfer Spiritual Array in the sky gradually faded, and the originally violent space fluctuations completely calmed down. The sky returned to its usual serenity, but the two silhouettes had disappeared entirely.

Silence loomed over the entire Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy due to the somber atmosphere.

Looking at the scene, Chief Tai Cang could only smile helplessly. It was not as if a famous disciple had never left before, but there had never been an occasion where someone leaving could actually make the entire Spiritual Academy so dejected.

"Is that fellow... that charismatic?"

Chief Tai Cang smiled and shook his head, but did not deliberately try to lighten up the atmosphere. He knew that this downcast atmosphere would only dissipate with time.

Perhaps, when another stunning student emerged in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen's impact would begin to fade. Although... would it be possible to see an appearance

of a disciple who was able to surpass Mu Chen?

At the thought of this, Chief Tai Cang could only sigh in regret. However, with regrets, there was also a trace of anticipation in his heart. He would like to know how much the young man who walked out of their Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy would achieve in the future...?

Perhaps, as he had expected, the day the boy returned to the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, his power would shake the entire Great Thousand World.

Ling Xi stood quietly on the top of the mountain as she looked in silence at the place where Mu Chen and Nine Nether had disappeared. Chief Tai Cheng and the others did not disturb her as the crowd quietly dissipated.

Ling Xi stood for a whole day, and as night came and enshrouded the sky, she then reacted and glanced down at the vast Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. It was the same scenery, but somehow, something seemed to be missing. It was boring, as if one were chewing something tasteless.

She turned to go back to the courtyard where she resided, and came to the closed bamboo house. She pushed the door open and entered. In the neat bamboo house there hung a picture scroll depicting the back of a quiet and gentle lady.

Gazing at the scroll, she smiled and whispered, "Aunt Jing, Mu Chen has left. He is very outstanding, truly worthy to be your child. However, I can no longer stay by his side. Aunt Jing, I will come to look for you."

"No matter who it is, the person who sealed my memories, I won't let him off!"

Ling Xi clenched her fists tightly, cold murderous intent surging in her eyes.

"Aunt Jing, I will definitely rescue you!"

Ling Xi slowly stepped forward, and carefully put away the scroll. She then walked out of the bamboo house, gazing at the place where she had lived for a long time.

"Sister Ling Xi." Sun'er's timid voice rang out as she stood in the courtyard and glanced at Ling Xi, her eyes red with tears.

"Are you leaving too?"

Ling Xi stepped forward and embraced Sun'er as she smiled.

"Yes, Sister Ling Xi has some things to do. Sun'er, after I leave, you cannot neglect your cultivation. If you do, I will punish you when I return."

Sun'er hugged Ling Xi tightly and nodded.

"Sister Ling Xi, will you return like Brother Mu Chen in future?"

Ling Xi gently pressed her delicate chin on Sun'er's small head as she said softly, "Don't worry, we'll both be back."

Sun'er remained silently obedient as she burrowed herself in Ling Xi's embrace. As moonlight shone down on them, the lady donned in white robes looked up slightly. The moonlight formed a light arc on her beautiful face, forming the most beautiful night scene in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Starting from tonight, the disciples of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy would soon discover that Ling Xi, a beautiful young lady who charmed the hearts of many and held the role of an elder at a young age, had silently left.

She did not alarm anyone, and when she left, only the silhouette of her departing figure was left behind, which was stunning as always.

Chapter 647: The Sagacity of Spiritual Energy

It was a vast, blue ocean, endless, as if it had no boundaries. From time to time, spiritual beasts taking the forms of fish sprang out, splashing amid the great waves.

Whoosh.

Above the sea, the space suddenly became distorted, raging with the spread of violent spatial fluctuations. A space whirlpool formed, before two silhouettes emerged from within the whirlpool, appearing over the sea. As soon as the pair appeared, they glanced at each other, then shifted their gazes toward the vast ocean, as they were momentarily stunned.

"Where is this?" Mu Chen scratched his head, then asked in bewilderment.

Jiu You was clearly more experienced than Mu Chen, as she slowly took out a scroll with flickering lights on it. She then spread the scroll out, only to see that it was filled with complex patterns of light. It seemed to be an indescribably large map.

She scanned the map, then pointed a slender finger to an area on the map. As she pointed gently, the map rippled, beginning to enlarge, and becoming clearer, until finally, a spot of light appeared in that area.

"There, here we are. This is the sea beyond the Northern Heavens Continent. If we continue onward, we will enter the Southern Hills Continent, and can use the Transfer Spiritual Array located there to head to other continents." Jiu You smiled.

Mu Chen stared at the map, his eyes full of wonder, as he could feel that there were substantial spiritual energy fluctuations within it.

"This is a Spiritual Artifact?" Mu Chen asked in astonishment.

"Yes, this is a Spiritual Map, which is used specially for recording maps in the Great Thousand World. Travellers would normally prepare one, and this particular map was one that I had prepared in the past. Without it, it would not be easy for us to get to the Tianluo Continent." Jiu You smiled, nodding in confirmation.

"I have nothing to worry about, as long as you are here." Mu Chen smiled, as he buttered Jiu You up with flattering words. However, he also meant these words sincerely. He knew that, if he had travelled solo, he would not have known what to do, unlike Jiu You, who was extremely well-prepared.

Jiu You rolled her eyes at him, and at his obvious flattery.

"How long more before we reach the Tianluo Continent?" Mu Chen asked.

the Tianluo Continent, we have to traverse through at least a dozen continents, and use the teleportation of the Transfer Spiritual Array to transport ourselves. Hence, even if we journey continuously, it will take us nearly two months to get there," Jiu You stated calmly.

"Two months..." Mu Chen twitched his mouth in response.

"And, in these two months, don't think you can get off easy!" Jiu You glanced at Mu Chen, her expression turning solemn. "Mu Chen, you should be aware that you have currently left Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, and the places that we will be heading are no longer ivory towers. In this Great Thousand World, only power is respected. If you do not have enough power, wherever you go, no one will even look you in the eye."

"Moreover, the "Daluo Territory" that I have been in was no peaceful place, as the politics and power struggle there cannot be compared to that of the playful fights and little squabbles at Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Although, I will try my best to protect you there, but I know that with your character, you won't want me to." Jiu Yu continued her warning.

Mu Chen gave a slight smile upon hearing her words, as he softly said, "Rest assured, I have understood all of these principles long ago."

Daluo Territory was unlike the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, where people would do their best to assist in his cultivation. Here, if he couldn't accomplish anything himself, others would trample on him brutally.

Jiu You nodded lightly in response, then said, "Despite having entered the Sovereign level successfully, you are not even close to being a First Grade Sovereign."

"Is that because I haven't cultivated the Sovereign Celestial Body yet?"

Mu Chen stated this question calmly, as he could actually cultivate the Sovereign Celestial Body at this current stage. However, the Sovereign Celestial Body that he would have cultivated would be mediocre, as he had no other method of cultivating it besides that of the Great Solar Undying Body.

Furthermore, he did not wish to waste the precious Sovereign Spiritual Liquid on cultivating a mediocre Sovereign Celestial Body. He understood that, after he gathered the last two remaining ingredients needed for cultivating the Great Solar Undying Body, he would then require immense amounts of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. Also, if he wanted to cultivate, he would never take the usual route.

"That's only one reason." Jiu You nodded her head slightly, as she continued. "The other reason why the Sovereign Master is revered as being the supreme of the art of cultivation, and why he is differentiated from the rest, is mainly due to his spiritual energy, apart from the Sovereign Sea and the Sovereign Celestial Body. The spiritual energy possesses sagacity, which is a form of intelligence, and that far surpasses the power of ordinary spiritual energy."

"Sagacity?" Mu Chen's eyebrows knit together quizzically.

"Many Sovereign Masters possess spiritual energies, which have unique attributes. Some people's spiritual energies are cold in nature, and some are blazing hot. This is because their spiritual energies have their own sagacities, so that power, likewise, is extraordinary."

Mu Chen pondered these things thoughtfully, as he vaguely remembered that, when he was in the Northern Heavens Continent, the Demonic Dragon Palace had engaged the help of the Infinity Ancestor. His spiritual energy had been extremely strong, and with a single blow, chilling and dark waves of the sea surged and swept forth. The sea was, in fact, a manifestation of his spiritual energies, as they were overwhelmingly powerful, to the degree with which ordinary spiritual energy could never match.

"How do I let my spiritual energies develop sagacity?" Mu Chen asked.

"Remember how your spiritual energy in the past could merge with my Nine Nether Flame? Back then, your spiritual energy was slightly stronger than ordinary spiritual energy, and in a way, there were similarities between the two. However, it is nothing when compared to spiritual energies that possess sagacity."

Understanding dawned on Mu Chen. This so-called sagacity, simply put, was basically the merging of another material into one's spiritual energies, causing it to undergo metamorphosis and become more powerful.

However, although this sounded easy in theory, it was challenging in execution. Not just any kind of material was suitable to be fused with one's spiritual energy, and once repulsion forces occurred, not only would the spiritual energies be unable to evolve, but such a situation would result in a backlash, which would severely injure the practitioner.

"What material should I choose to merge with my spiritual

energies, then?" Mu Chen asked.

Most Sovereign Masters would choose to absorb those peculiar energies in either extremely cold, or extremely hot, places, so that they could fuse these energies together, which is the simplest method. However, the magnitude of increasing the power of one's spiritual energies was also limited.

"You once merged with the Nine Nether Flame. Hence, your spiritual energy is more attuned to materials with the attribute of fire. You also cultivated the Thunder God Physique, so thunder would be suitable as well," Jiu You stated thoughtfully.

"If using materials with the attribute of thunder, you will be unable to procure a source of thunder powerful enough to carry out the fusion. Thus, we have to find other alternatives. As for fire... My Unperishable Flame would be a good choice."

Mu Chen's eyes lit up. This was not only a good choice, but in fact, it was perfect. He was no longer an amateur, so he was aware of how powerful the Unperishable Flame was. Most importantly, the Unperishable Flame possessed a mysterious and profound attribute: the attribute of being "Unperishable".

Naturally, this was not to say that one would not die with the Unperishable Flame. Instead, the Unperishable Flame possessed a strong healing power, and no matter how seriously injured one was, as long as one's spirit was not destroyed, the Unperishable Flame would be able to heal the wounds gradually. With the Unperishable Flame, when one was engaged in combat, it would increase one's durability, which would then give them the upper hand.

Mu Chen's eyes lit up momentarily, but then he thought of something and turned to Jiu You, smiling with a grimace.

"But if we do this, it would cause harm to you, wouldn't it?" he asked, concerned.

Although Jiu You possessed the Unperishable Flame, it did not simply appear out of thin air. Rather, she had to expend immense amounts of energy and time, before she could cultivate the Unperishable Flame.

If Mu Chen wanted to transform the spiritual energy in his body completely, the amount of Unperishable Flame required would be rather significant. This was a great burden for Jiu You to bear.

Jiu You hedged, as her long and narrow eyes glanced at Mu Chen.

"Although there will be some obstacles, it isn't that much of a problem," she assured.

"But..." Mu Chen began to protest, still unconvinced.

"From today onwards, we will continue to travel without rest during the day, while we attempt to merge with the Unperishable Flame at night. My ultimatum is that you have to complete the transformation of your spiritual energy before we reach the Tianluo Continent!" Jiu You didn't give Mu Chen a chance to retort, as she stated calmly.

"If you fail..." A dangerous smirk curled on Jiu You's ruddy mouth. "Then don't blame me for being ruthless!"

With a casual blow of her palm, the sea beneath them broke apart, as a massive spiritual beast, which had just leapt up, fell over with the impact. Mu Chen's mouth twitched in fear, as he looked on and wiped the cold sweat that was gathering on his forehead. He was clear about Jiu You's personality, and if things got to that stage, it was likely that she would beat him severely. This sister was really too violent.

"Do you have any problems?" Jiu You smiled, as she glanced at Mu Chen. It was supposed to be a beautiful sight, but it caused Mu Chen to break out in another cold sweat, as he shook his head hurriedly.

"That's good, let's go then." Jiu You nodded satisfactorily.

"Fly over this sea?" Mu Chen was stunned momentarily, before replying.

"How about you revert to your actual form, and then I can ride on you as we fly over. Isn't that a lot faster...?"

However, as soon as he had spoken, he felt a sense of dread, for Jiu You raised her willow-like eyebrows, gave a bright smile, and glanced at Mu Chen. The smile was charming, as she walked forward, a blush on her beautiful face.

"Little Brother Mu Chen, do you want to ride on an elder sister so much?" she teased.

Mu Chen laughed hollowly, before turning to escape.

Boom!

He didn't make it too far, before a torrential wave of spiritual energy in the space above enveloped him, as a huge Cloud Wing flapped towards him, and with a "Bong", fanned him straight into the sea. Mu Chen emerged from the sea, as a slender figure flew past in the sky, followed by sweet giggles ringing in the air.

"You're not allowed to come out, as swimming out of this sea is also part of your cultivation."

Jiu You felt great indignation, as he gnashed his teeth, murmuring that a wise man would not fight when the odds are against him, he just had to endure for the time being, and when his ability was stronger than hers, he would definitely press her on his thighs and spank her bottom.

"Jiu You, just you wait!" Mu Chen shouted, as he continued to swim forward with all of his might, roaring in his heart.

Chapter 648: An Arduous Journey

The journey to the Tianluo Continent was long and arduous. However, what was supposed to be a monotonous and boring journey, actually turned out to be a painful one, especially after Jiu You had assigned her task. It was not a simple task, this completion of the transformation of their spiritual energies, even to a Sovereign Master.

Although Mu Chen had successfully integrated the Nine Nether Flame with his own spiritual energies in the past, in comparison to transforming one's spiritual energies, the degree of difficulty could be said to be like the huge gap between the light of a firefly and the glow of the moon. Not to mention, the Flame that he was going to integrate this time was no longer the Nine Nether Flame, but the Unperishable Flame, which was countless times more powerful!

Jiu You's method of cultivation was extremely straightforward, but also very brutal. She did not resort to the use of any tricks, but instead, by mobilizing the Unperishable Flame in her body, and directed it straight into Mu Chen's body, the Unperishable Flame finally locating the Sovereign Sea that was hidden in his body, as it surged in.

The Unperishable Flame roared in the Sovereign Sea, as the boiling temperature was close to burning Mu Chen's Sovereign Sea. The sensation of one's spiritual energies burning up inflicted unbearable pain to Mu Chen, such that even the Sovereign Sea seemed overwhelmed by it, as if it were about to be broken.

However, every time his endurance was about to reach its limit, Jiu You would withdraw the Unperishable Flame entirely, waiting for the spiritual energies in Mu Chen's Sovereign Sea to revert to a calm state, before repeating the process again.

In this never-ending cycle of feeling his spiritual energies burn, Mu Chen could only use four words to describe how he felt: fate

worse than death.

According to Jiu You, the Unperishable Flame was, after all, overwhelmingly strong, and something that the Nine Nether Flame could never match up to. Hence, if Mu Chen started out by merging it directly with his spiritual energies, there would only be one result: his spiritual energies would be thoroughly burned by the Unperishable Flame, and even his Sovereign Sea would be affected.

Such a situation meant that, if he wanted to integrate the Unperishable Flame, he would have to allow his spiritual energies to get accustomed with the Unperishable Flame. But, how would he do this? The answer was simple, as he just had to burn his spiritual energies with the Flame repeatedly.

In Jiu You's words, it was akin to being beaten up, as the more you get beaten up, the more you get used to it. After Mu Chen's spiritual energies have reached a sufficient stage of being burned, it would then be accustomed to the Unperishable Flame, so that the next step of integration could then occur.

As such, Mu Chen had no choice but to persevere with this anguishing method of cultivation. In the first ten days of travel, whenever night came, Mu Chen and Jiu You would take a brief respite, during which time, the daily nightmare of Mu Chen would begin...

However, Mu Chen gritted his teeth and persevered, despite having to go through the sheer agony of this method of cultivation. He had known long ago that there was no power that came easily in this world, so if he wanted to attain a complete transformation of his spiritual energies, he would have to put in an equally immense amount of effort.

Moreover, he could feel that, whenever the practice was over, Jiu You's cheeks would turn slightly pale. After all, she had worked so hard to cultivate the Unperishable Flame. With such heavy

exhaustion of the flames every day, even if she had successfully evolved, it would still be unbearable.

Faced with this situation, if Mu Chen said he could not persevere, he would not be worthy enough to be a man. With that in mind, the agonizing cultivation continued. Amid the excruciating cultivation every night, the speed of their journey was not affected, and in just half a month, they travelled across vast continents.

At the beginning, the boy, who had undergone his first experience in the Great Thousand World, expressed curiosity at many things. But, he soon began to adapt, until finally, he began to shift most of his attention to cultivation.

Besides travelling and cultivation, when Mu Chen and Jiu You passed by some continents, they would specially inquire about any information regarding the two spiritual treasures, "Great Solar Void Fruit" and "Undying Divine Leaf", as these were the last two key ingredients needed for Mu Chen to cultivate "The Great Solar Undying Body."

However, the inquiries were to no avail, as the rarity of these two ingredients were beyond Mu Chen's imagination. After all, even Sovereign Masters desired these two spiritual treasures immensely.

In particular, the " Great Solar Void Fruit ", if obtained, could be refined into the Sovereign Sea. What made it intriguing, was the fact that the Great Solar Void Fruit could turn into a scorching sun within the Sovereign Sea, constantly shining on the spiritual energies within it. This would strengthen the spiritual energies greatly by fusing it with the power of the scorching sun.

For this marvellous artifact that could strengthen the power of the spiritual energies, which supreme would not regard it as being the ultimate treasure?

As for the "Undying Divine Leaf," it was also extremely rare. This

legendary treasure, was also named the "Substitute Leaf", which meant that, if one met with a truly life-threatening disaster, the "Undying Divine Leaf" could save one's life. This basically meant that one would have an extra life.

Of course, a rumor like this was often exaggerated. After all, if the attack, had been terribly strong, even the " Undying Divine Leaf " would be utterly destroyed. However, possessing such a treasure would still be a perfect safeguard for one's defense.

After knowing about these two kinds of precious, rare spiritual treasures, it finally dawned on Mu Chen how incredibly fortunate he was to have received the "Nine Suns Zoysia" in the Spiritual Academy Competition. After all, this item, was comparable to the two former precious treasures.

As it were, however, it seemed that it would be a long way to go before they could gather these two ingredients together.

...

They continued to hurry along with their journey. In the blink of an eye, it had been nearly a month that had passed, within which time, Mu Chen and Jiu You had crossed dozens of continents. The sheer distance of the journey so far, was an amount of miles that Mu Chen found hard to even imagine.

Some of the continents they had passed through were not large, and could not even be compared to the Northern Heavens Continent. However, some of them were exceptionally vast, and though they still could not match up to the Tianluo Continent, their power was still far greater than that of the Northern Heavens Continent.

In just one month, Mu Chen's experience had soared, and he had even seen some of the other races in the Great Thousand World, which was somewhat eye-opening. Of course, other than widening his exposure, Mu Chen's cultivation also began in earnest, getting him onto the right track.

After undergoing the torment of having his spiritual energies burnt repeatedly, Mu Chen's spiritual energies in his Sovereign Sea began to adapt to the Unperishable Flame, and the pain subsided, at least in comparison to the excruciating pain at the start. It was this subtle adaptation that made Mu Chen heave a sigh of relief, as he saw some encouraging results from the previous period of torturous cultivation.

The moon hung high in the sky. On a mountain, Mu Chen sat cross-legged quietly. In the distance, a magnificent city could be seen in the far distance, its bright lights were as if it was daytime.

The scale of the city was not small. Even at this time, there was still light and shadow that were piercing through the night sky and into the city.

The city was named Blazing Flames City, and the continent that Mu Chen and Jiu You were on was the Blazing Flames Continent. A large portion of it was occupied by deserts, and the spiritual energies of the heavens and earth seemed to be more hot and dry here than elsewhere.

This city had a Transfer Spiritual Array that could transport them to the next continent, but Mu Chen and Ji You did not enter the city. Instead, they chose to stay outside of the city, as Mu Chen's cultivation at night was of immense importance. He could start to feel the spiritual energies within his Sovereign Sea developing in an intriguing manner, and that sensation was indescribable, but extremely crucial.

Mu Chen took a deep breath, his eyes bright. He knew that his psychic powers had reached a tipping point.

Mu Chen turned his head to look at Jiu You, who was by the fire, and whispered, "This time I'm going to integrate the Unperishable Flame."

Jiu You's hand, which had been fiddling with the fire, froze, as she lifted her head, staring at Mu Chen with surprise in her eyes.

She then knit her eyebrows together and said, "It has only been a month, isn't it too hasty?"

She had intended to give Mu Chen two months to complete the cultivation of his spiritual energies, but now he had already brought forward the process by half. It was a very dangerous thing to integrate the spiritual energies completely with the Unperishable Flame. In the case where both the energy and the Flame got out of control, they would not be able to control it.

"I'm not being hasty, I really feel that it's time." Mu Chen smiled slightly.

If Mu Chen didn't grasp that wonderful feeling, he was afraid that he didn't know when it would happen again, so he didn't want the opportunity to slip away.

Jiu You stared at Mu Chen, as the latter had an earnest look in his eyes, which made it clear that he was not joking with her. She remained silent for a moment, then nodded lightly.

"Very well then."

"It has been hard on you."

Mu Chen smiled gratefully, and then gradually closed his eyes. With a motion of his mind, he entered the Sovereign Sea, where the vast spiritual energies roared like the ocean. However, Mu Chen's spiritual energies within his Sovereign Sea were slightly different than they were a month ago, for his energies now seem to be mixed with a hint of purple. This was the reason why Jiu You had burned his spiritual energies for a month using the Unperishable Flame.

Whoosh.

On the surface of the Sovereign Sea, a clear and crisp sound of water trickling rang out suddenly. Then, a shadow slowly emerged, the silhouette looking exactly like Mu Chen, as it was his soul.

After successfully cultivating and condensing the Sovereign Sea, Mu Chen's soul had been hidden within the Sovereign Sea. The soul sat cross-legged on the surface of the sea, as he lifted his head and murmured, "Let us begin."

On the mountain, Jiu You sat cross-legged in front of Mu Chen, her face solemn. A month of gruelling torment was what had been required for this seemingly simple step.

She let out a huff of fragrance gently, as she stretched out her finger, lightly placing it between Mu Chen's eyebrows. Purple flames suddenly emerged from Jiu You's fingers, then immediately turned into small pillars of fire, which surged directly into Mu Chen's body. As the purple flame poured into his body, Mu Chen shivered with a fierce tremor, and with his teeth clenched tightly, he remained silent.

Within the Sovereign Sea, Mu Chen's soul lifted his head to look up, his eyes somber. His vision filled with a purple glow, although that was not of his own doing. Rather, it was due to the sea of purple flames in the air above the Sovereign Sea, as it swept through with a terrifying momentum.

This time, the Unperishable Flame began to reveal its true ferocity. This experience would determine whether or not Mu Chen's excruciating cultivation within the past one month would see results.

Chapter 649: Integrating the Unperishable Flame

As if from a different space, the vast sea of purple fire swept through with a fierce aura of devastation above the Sovereign Sea.

Mu Chen had experienced a bitter month of suffering. However, the majestic spiritual energy of the Sovereign Sea was now boiling hot. A kind of indescribable heat surged as if it aimed to burn him.

What an overwhelmingly fierce Unperishable Flame...

Mu Chen's spirit gazed solemnly as the scene unfolded before him and the Unperishable Flame revealed its true extent of extraordinary power. He finally realized how Nine Nether had been letting him off easy in the previous month of cultivation.

If Nine Nether had murderous intent towards him in this moment, his Sovereign Sea would have been instantly burned to nothing.

No matter how brutal you are, I will thoroughly integrate you today! Fierce determination flashed in Mu Chen's eyes as he immediately took a deep breath and waved his palm.

Boom!

In the vast Sovereign Sea, tumultuous waves roared, turning into waves of ten thousand feet as they surged continuously towards the purple sea of fire descending from the sky.

It was a majestic sight to behold.

Whoosh!

However, what seemed to be a powerful offensive attack of spiritual energy wilted in the instant of contact. A massive amount of spiritual energy was evaporated by the purple flames, transforming into curls of white mist as they rose in the Sovereign Sea.

Boom!

As Mu Chen began his attacks, the sea of purple fire also began to show its fierce power. The sea of purple fire condensed and turned into pillars of fire as it burst downwards, resembling fire meteors that could engulf the heavens and earth.

Bong! Bong!

Purple pillars of fire rushed directly into the Sovereign Sea, splashing torrential waves.

Whoosh.

As the purple pillars of fire landed, the entire span of Sovereign Sea gurgled instantly, as if it were boiling. In this boiling heat, Mu Chen could feel the spiritual energy within the Sovereign Sea being gradually evaporated.

The Unperishable Flame was no longer restraining its true power now. If Mu Chen truly wanted to integrate it completely with his own spiritual energy, he would have to conquer it.

There was no shortcut to be taken.

Let's see who can persist until the end then.

Mu Chen's expression was solemn and his gaze cold as he waved his hands without any hesitation. Turbulent waves of approximately ten thousand feet surged in the Sovereign Sea as the majestic spiritual energy transformed into massive water whirlpools that completely surrounded the purple flames.

Two kinds of forces collided harshly.

Whoosh.

There was no violent impact at the moment of contact, but every time the spiritual energy was stained with the purple flame, it was evaporated instantaneously. Even so, Mu Chen still remained calm as he manipulated the spiritual energy to continue flowing.

The spiritual energy continued to evaporate.

The surface of the vast Sovereign Sea bubbled constantly as it boiled. Beneath the surface of the sea, deep purple permeated through it, and in the depths, curls of purple flames burned brightly.

The sea level of the Sovereign Sea descended layer by layer.

Due to the high temperature, even the space of the Sovereign Sea was beginning to distort, as if it were about to be destroyed.

On the mountain in the outside world, Mu Chen's body had become scarlet red, and his clothes had long been reduced to ashes. His face was extremely distorted. It was obvious that he was suffering from great pain, and his sweat evaporated immediately the moment it formed.

The ground Mu Chen had been sitting cross-legged on also began to crack, with the cracks spreading at an alarming rate.

Nine Nether removed her finger from Mu Chen's forehead. She looked at Mu Chen who had turned completely red, and she couldn't help but bite her red lips. At this point, she had done everything that could have been done. As to whether Mu Chen could truly integrate the Unperishable Flame, that would depend on his own perseverance...

Nine Nether clenched her fist slowly as she murmured silently in her heart, All the best, Mu Chen.

Within the Sovereign Sea, a terrifying heat continued to permeate it.

Time seemed to pass very slowly in that space as the boiling water endlessly burst, and the mighty spiritual energy constantly evaporated.

With the evaporation of spiritual energy, Mu Chen could also sense a faint feeling of weakness quietly surging up.

On the surface of his spiritual form, ripples formed constantly. As his rationality began to blur, the fierce Unperishable Flame was

not only burning his spiritual energy but was also gradually eroding his spirit.

Once his rationality was completely overwhelmed, the Sovereign Sea would be turned into nothingness in the burning of the Unperishable Flame. Not only would Mu Chen fail in integrating it, but his spirit would be scorched and destroyed.

To integrate such a domineering substance was, of course, a danger unimaginable to ordinary people.

Mu Chen's rationality blurred increasingly, but he hung onto a last thread and kept a clear mind. He knew that once his rationality was submerged, the price he would have to pay would be near destruction.

It was a price he could not afford to pay—he had promised the girl, thus he could not stop here.

With the slow passage of time, the space in the Sovereign Sea was completely distorted due to the high temperature. As the fog obscured the sight, people were unable to see Mu Chen clearly.

In the boiling Sovereign Sea, Mu Chen's spirit quietly sat cross-legged. His spirit had become much dimmer than before as he continued to close his eyes tightly.

At this moment, he was too blurry to be able to sense any external interference. However, in the innermost of this blurry vagueness, there was still a trace of clarity left.

The trace of clarity was like a light boat in a turbulent sea. With the ups and downs of the waves, it seemed it would soon overturn but despite the odds, it never fell down, and neither did his tenacious will.

In the face of such a fierce Unperishable Flame, Mu Chen had no means of retaliation but to retreat and defend. His only advantage was his persistence that developed through experience as he refused to admit defeat.

He knew that victory would belong to the party who could persist longer.

Mu Chen had unwittingly forgotten the concept of time. He could only rely on his lingering thread of clarity to recall that he seemed to have spent a long time, maybe a hundred years...

In this seemingly long time, Mu Chen's rationality seemed to have become somewhat confused, and in the end, he was vaguely immersed in that confusion, unable to wake up.

What am I doing?

Am I in the process of cultivation? Did I fail?

I wish I could just sleep like this...

In his blurry thoughts, confused waves of fluctuations rang. Even Mu Chen's lingering clarity was floating precariously in the dark, facing danger as it was uncertain when it would be swallowed up.

At the peak of the mountain, Nine Nether stood in the sky as she stared anxiously downwards. The mountain was now red, and the grass and trees had turned to ashes long ago. The source of destruction was Mu Chen, who was sitting cross-legged at the top of the mountain.

She could see that the pain on Mu Chen's face had disappeared and seemed to be replaced by confusion. Instead of letting her heave a sigh of relief, it had produced a more intense fear and worry in her eyes.

She knew that if Mu Chen could not rely on his clarity to snap out of the trance, then he would probably be immersed in that mental realm of confusion, unable to find his true self.

Nine Nether gritted her teeth as she lifted her hands but ultimately put them down. In the short duration of a day, she wanted to intervene with powerful means countless times, but she was afraid it would inflict heavy damage on Mu Chen.

Nine Nether closed her eyes as she murmured in her heart silently, Mu Chen, you promised her that you would become a top Sovereign...

In Mu Chen's confused mind that was desperately trying to regain lucidity, fluctuations began to ripple as a voice seemed to ring in its deepest depths.

It was so far away but utterly sobering.

"I promised her that I would become the top Sovereign...

"So, how could I be defeated here?

"Wake up now."

As the last three words sounded quietly, the ripples surfacing deep in his heart spread as threads of clarity expanded and occupied his entire heart and soul.

The prior confusion was swept away in that instant.

On the Sovereign Sea, the spirit shivered as its tightly shut eyes slowly blinked open.

He gazed quietly at the Sovereign Sea shrouded with thick fog and purple mist, and then stood up slowly. His sleeve robes swung gently, and the raging wind blew away the purple mist.

The mist dissipated, and the vast sea unfolded in a clear display.

The Sovereign Sea had become purple, and on its surface, purple flames floated gently, the original boiling sea quietly calming down.

Beneath the surface of the sea, turbulent purple flames lurked silently.

Mu Chen's spirit gazed at the calm Sovereign Sea, and a faint smile appeared on his face.

Have I succeeded...

He slowly spread out his hands and saw the magnificent spiritual

energy pouring in from his feet. The silhouette of the spirit, which had shrunk quite a bit, immediately recovered to its original state, and the surface of the spirit's body had traces of purple light flowing on it with purple flames rising in its eyes.

The spirit appeared to be more refined than before.

Mu Chen stretched out his palm as he saw an overwhelmingly purple spiritual energy within the Sovereign Sea sweep out and finally gather in his palm. Indistinctly, it seemed to transform into a ray of purple flame. It was an indescribably strange force that rippled and spread.

Mu Chen gazed at this ray of purple flame, a smirk tugging at the corners of his mouth.

He could feel that although there had not been any surge in the spiritual energy within his Sovereign Sea, it was now several times as strong as it had ever been!

He had successfully integrated it with the Unperishable Flame!

Chapter 650: The Continent of Trade

A figure quietly sat cross-legged atop the parched mountain peak. His flushed crimson skin gradually reverted to normal as the terribly high temperature dropped.

Nine Nether landed, heaving a quiet sigh of relief as she took in the scene before her. A touch of surprise flitted across her eyes. Seeing what had happened, Mu Chen seemed to have succeeded.

Just as Nine Nether landed, Mu Chen's tightly shut eyes twitched before slowly opening. Purple flames flickered in his black eyes and emitted an unsettling aura.

Mu Chen lifted his head and glanced at Nine Nether. She stood beside him, her svelte legs looking even more shapely and slender from that angle.

He grinned and said in relief, "I succeeded."

As he spoke, he rose to his feet. The moment he moved, his clothes disintegrated into dust.

Nine Nether's face blushed crimson and her delicate ears flushed with heat as she glared at Mu Chen in shy embarrassment before hurriedly looking away.

Mu Chen's expression was full of embarrassment as he hastily pulled out clothes and put them on.

Nine Nether waited for a few moments before turning back, her expression calming down. However, she could not hide her shy embarrassment and annoyance in her eyes as she glared at Mu Chen.

"It was unintentional, just an accident," Mu Chen said with a grimace. If Nine Nether thought he had been flirting and toying with her and gave him a beating, it would be an undeserved calamity.

Nine Nether snorted coldly. It was too much effort to pick on him. She stated nonchalantly, "Have you succeeded in your cultivation?"

Pleasant surprise was written on Mu Chen's face. He nodded as he clenched his fist. There was purple spiritual energy coalescing in his palm. Purple flames could be seen flickering within the depths of the purple spiritual energy.

With a casual wave of his hand, the purple spiritual energy surged out and struck a nearby mountain.

Boom!

The entire mountain shattered into pieces as the spiritual energy raged. A horrifying heat swept across the mountain, burning the grass and trees, reducing them to ashes in an instant.

Mu Chen looked at the crumbling peak as even the rocks melted. The scene shocked him. Despite his spiritual energy remaining at the same level as before, his combat power had far surpassed that of his past.

Furthermore, he could also control and manipulate his spiritual energy more skilfully and at will as naturally as moving his limbs. In addition, even if the spiritual energy became separated from his body and the link between them broke, his spiritual energy would not dissipate immediately but would instead continue to attack with a lingering will.

This aspect was particularly frightening.

Previously, if spiritual energy left the body and was cut off by an opponent, it would gradually dissipate because it could not be manipulated. However, now circumstances had changed. Even if the spiritual energy was out of Mu Chen's control, it would continue to attack in accordance with Mu Chen's intention and will until it had exhausted its power.

Once it resided within someone, this miraculous power would

require a great consumption of energy if others wanted to drive it out. The Unperishable Flame hidden within Mu Chen's spiritual energy was especially mysterious and powerful. If one wanted to erase it, one would have to expend exponentially greater spiritual energy to do so, and by the time it was successfully erased, the perpetrator's body would have been destroyed.

As Mu Chen felt the change in his spiritual energy, he couldn't help but gasp in wonder. Only after truly ascending to the Sovereign-level could he fully appreciate and grasp the extent of the Sovereign Master's power.

The Mu Chen of the past could never imagine and fathom that there were so many changes and mysteries hidden within the art of harnessing spiritual energy.

Nine Nether nodded as she said, "The spiritual energy within your Sovereign Sea came from your hard work and effort, and you did not rely on external assistance. Now that your spiritual energy has integrated with the Unperishable Flame, when it comes to your degree of power within the First Grade Sovereigns, if it is merely a battle of spiritual energy, not many people would be your match.

"Of course, that is if the opponent does not employ the Sovereign Celestial Body."

"The Sovereign Celestial Body..." Mu Chen couldn't help but gasp. The Sovereign Celestial Body was the signature combat symbol of the Sovereign Master, and it had such terrifying power, it could wipe out mountains in the blink of an eye.

If I manage to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body successfully in the future, who knows how powerful I could become, Mu Chen thought in great anticipation. He had a hunch that the power of the Great Solar Undying Body would far surpass his expectations.

However, anticipation could only go so far. Mu Chen was all too

aware that the last two ingredients needed to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body were hard to obtain. In the past month, they had traversed dozens of continents and visited countless trading and auction houses, but had never chanced upon the Void Great Solar Fruit and the Undying Divine Leaf.

Nine Nether glanced as Mu Chen's gaze changed. She laughed as if she knew what he was thinking and said, "Rest assured, even if we didn't get news of the two kinds of natural treasures along the way, we should be able to find them when we reach the Tianluo Continent. After all, it is a supercontinent, and the continents we had passed before could not compare to it."

Mu Chen nodded as he heaved a sigh of relief in his heart.

"Also..." Nine Nether paused as she continued, "There is a Daluo Golden Pool in the Daluo Territory. This golden pool is extremely wondrous, and even on the Tianluo Continent, it is considered a treasure.

"The Daluo Golden Pool possesses the Divine Power of gods and spirits to refine the Sovereign Celestial Body, making it more perfect. If luck is on your side, you could even cultivate the Infinite Golden Light with the Sovereign Celestial Body."

"Infinite Golden Light?" Mu Chen asked in bewilderment.

"The Sovereign Celestial Body is already powerful on its own, but with the Infinite Golden Light, it is akin to giving a tiger wings, thus increasing its power. Most importantly, the Infinite Golden Light has a very strong defense, so it can also render the Sovereign Celestial Body indestructible.

"However, it is very difficult to cultivate the Infinite Golden Light. As far as I know, in the many years that have passed there are very few people on the Tianluo Continent who have been able to cultivate the Infinite Golden Light in the Daluo Golden Pool."

Mu Chen clicked his tongue in shock. Who would have thought

that there would be such a wondrous place that could strengthen the Sovereign Celestial Body? There must be many Sovereign Masters who were eyeing it.

"When you follow me into Daluo Territory, you must enter the Daluo Golden Pool," Nine Nether stated solemnly.

"There must be some conditions required?" Mu Chen pondered.

Since the Daluo Golden Pool possessed such a wondrous ability, it was apparent that not just anyone could enjoy it.

Nine Nether nodded lightly. "The Daluo Golden Pool in Daluo Territory can only be enjoyed by people holding the rank of Commander, and only once every three years, with a quota of people allowed."

Nine Nether glanced at Mu Chen, and her eyes narrowed. "So after entering Daluo Territory, you have to fight for the position of Commander."

"Commander?" Mu Chen asked in disbelief.

"In the Daluo Territory, there is a Dominator. However, this Dominator comes and goes like a specter, and it is hard to get a trace of his whereabouts, so he's a mysterious existence in the Daluo Territory. The main affairs of the Daluo Territory are controlled and managed by the Three Kings under the Dominator.

"Under the Three Kings are the Nine Lords... and I'm one of the Lords." Nine Nether smiled. "Under the Nine Lords are the Commanders. Generally speaking, one has to attain the Sovereign-level before they can fight for the position of Commander."

"The starting point is the Sovereign-level..." Mu Chen laughed bitterly. He wasn't even considered to be a First Grade Sovereign in his present state, thus it would be difficult for him to vie for the position of Commander. No wonder Nine Nether forced him to complete his spiritual energy cultivation in the shortest time possible.

"Not confident?" Nine Nether asked nonchalantly.

Mu Chen smiled, but this smile was much brighter. He stretched lazily as he said, "Well, let me see exactly how strong the Sovereigns are in this Great Thousand World. My journey will not be hindered by a small challenge to become Commander."

A satisfied smile bloomed on Nine Nether's beautiful face upon hearing Mu Chen's words.

"Thank you," Mu Chen said softly as he turned to glance at Nine Nether.

Perhaps when they had just left the Northern Heavens Continent, Nine Nether had already begun to make plans for him. Although he did not know what the Daluo Golden Pool represented in the Daluo Territory, if Nine Nether was one of the Nine Lords, it was likely that she did not have much say in making decisions.

Hence, he felt touched.

"Oh please, just don't lose disastrously and utterly embarrass me." Nine Nether pursed her lips and harrumphed, but there was mirth in her tone.

"It's time to leave. We should get going."

She didn't give Mu Chen time to blabber on. With a wave of her hand, her silhouette surged out in a flash of light.

Mu Chen smiled and glanced at the slender shadow, and as he clenched his fists, fighting spirit and will ignited in his heart. He owed much to Nine Nether. Now it looked like he would have to become a Commander in the Daluo Territory.

...

In the next month, they were still on their way, traversing the continents without much rest. In their rush, the Tianluo Continent was getting closer and closer.

One day, Nine Nether and Mu Chen gradually slowed down in

their journey.

They were now on a continent named the Continent of Trade. This continent possessed a Spiritual Transfer Array that could bring them to the Tianluo Continent directly, hence it was considered the last stop of their arduous journey.

This continent had some of the grandest trade and auction houses among the dozen nearby continents, with countless natural treasures and Divine Artifacts. Many Divine Arts circulated here through a variety of channels.

Despite some of the channels being shady and dubious, no one cared because everyone knew that they could buy anything on this Continent of Trade.

One could buy anything as long as they had sufficient Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

It was here that Mu Chen's weary heart felt excitement for the first time in a great while. He finally got the last two materials he needed to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body: the Void Great Solar Fruit and the Undying Divine Leaf.

Chapter 651: The City of Trade

The Continent of Trade.

As the name implied, this was a trade-oriented continent, where there are numerous auction houses with great fame. Although this continent was not vast, it had a resounding reputation within the Great Thousand World.

The source of this fame came from the countless natural treasures gathered there, treasures from all around the world, which would be circulated to all of the major auction houses. Thus, the slogan promoted by the Continent of Trade was that, as long as one had enough Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, they could buy anything they desired. The slogan was arrogant, but one could see the essence of the Continent of Trade through it.

In this continent, even though it was not vast, there was an extraordinarily eclectic mix of people, ranging from hooligans to the rich. There were countless forces of varying degrees of power, and most of the auction houses had a strong background backing them. Hence, although there were countless treasures there, few people dared wreak havoc.

It was said that, hundreds of years ago, there had been a magnate of top power, who was interested in a Divine Artifact, but had failed to win the bid for it. He apparently then resorted to snatching it in the auction house. This figure even had killed the manager of the auction house, as well as the competitors who had also bid for the Divine Artifact, before leaving with the artifact himself.

This incident had shocked the Continent of Trade, causing them to respond immediately. In just over ten days, the top force in which the magnate was located was encircled and attacked by many powerful forces, resulting in heavy casualties. Even the magnate was severely injured.

In the end, he had to return the Divine Artifact in a state of embarrassment. He also had to pay an extremely large sum of compensation, as terms of reconciliation. Since then, no one has ever dared ignore the rules of the Continent of Trade, nor killed people to snatch the treasure in auction houses.

It was because of the perfectly comprehensive rules of the Continent of Trade that had first allowed it to gain fame in the Great Thousand World over the years, with countless treasure collectors rushing there to seek their coveted treasure. It was also where Mu Chen had first obtained news of the "Void Great Solar Fruit" and the "Undying Divine Leaf".

...

The City of Trade, the main city of the Continent of Trade, was the most majestic city on the continent, in terms of scale, and it was the hub of the whole continent. When Mu Chen appeared outside of the Continent of Trade, he lifted his head to stare at the majestic city, as if it had been crafted by the gods. A shocked expression flit across his face.

The walls of the city were hundreds of feet high, their dark surfaces glinting with a cold sheen and extended out so far that there was no sign of any corners. On the walls, massive light symbols could be seen flickering.

A terrifying spiritual energy fluctuation quietly rippled, one that would cause people's heart to skip a beat. In the sky above the city, a huge light column soared to the sky, forming a light barrier that enveloped the entire city.

The only way to enter the city was to pass through the city gates, and anything that descended from the sky would trigger the city's great battle array, causing it to immediately be attacked as an intruder.

"What a terrifying battle array." Mu Chen gazed solemnly at the vast light array above the city, which was so large that it shone

with countless light rays, then coalesced into an extremely complex Spiritual Array.

"It was said that this was a Spiritual Array that was set up by a Spiritual Array Ancestral Master, and that, even a Sovereign like the Earthly Sovereign would not be able to overcome it in a short period of time," Nine Nether smiled and said, as she stood beside Mu Chen.

"Spiritual Array Ancestral Master." Mu Chen quietly clicked his tongue. This figure was a powerful existence, one comparable to the Earthly Sovereign. The City of Trade was very powerful, since they could invite such a figure to set up a defensive spiritual array for them.

"Let's enter the city, as the two objects you want should be auctioned in the City of Trade today. However, I'm not sure if you can get them." Nine Nether smiled and shrugged, as the "Void Great Solar Fruit" and the "Undying Divine Leaf" were extremely rare natural treasures, and one would have to pay a considerable price to obtain either in the auction houses.

Moreover, success was not guaranteed. This was because most people who came to the Continent of Trade to hunt for treasure had outstanding amounts of wealth, or came from illustrious backgrounds.

Mu Chen nodded, as he touched the Mustard Seed Bracelet on his wrist and sighed. Luckily, he had Nine Nether had broken the seal slightly on the "Spiritual Condensing Bowl" which he had obtained on the Continent of Ruins. Thus, he managed to obtain some amounts of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. On the whole, this was not a small number, but he did not have much confidence as to whether he could get the two key natural treasures he needed.

However, no matter what, it had not been easy for him to get news of them, so he would not give up easily. Mu Chen gritted his teeth. After all, he had even obtained the method of cultivation for

The Great Solar Undying Body, so he wouldn't allow the lack of ingredients to cultivate it to stop his tracks!

Nine Nether patted Mu Chen's shoulder, and with a step of her slender legs, entered the city, attracting a lot of attention along the way. Her figure was tall and svelte, and her face was absolutely gorgeous. Her narrowed eyes gave off a charming aura, but also one that was full of untamed wildness. This aura gave men a strong desire to conquer her at times.

Aware of these heated gazes, Nine Nether knit her eyebrows together, as she suddenly held Mu Chen's arm and dragged him along. The softness of Nine Nether's hand on his arm stupefied Mu Chen for a moment, as he felt unfriendly glances being cast at him.

With this enviable beauty, the two walked into the city of extraordinary grandeur, and the moment they entered the city, Nine Nether immediately loosened her grip on Mu Chen, not giving him a chance to take advantage of her.

"How cold," Mu Chen commented sardonically.

Upon hearing this, a smile blossomed on Nine Nether's beautiful features, as she approached Mu Chen, stating teasingly, "Do you want to take advantage of me so much? Sure, when your capabilities surpass me someday, even if you want me to warm your bed, I would agree. However, before you even mention this request, you have to make sure that your small frame can take it."

Mu Chen rolled his eyes, as he thought: "This senior sure is bold."

Losing in the bickering match, he began to look at the magnificent city. He could tell that they had arrived just as the city's popularity was reaching a terrifyingly high degree.

Its unusually wide and vast streets were filled with people. On both sides of the street, were all kinds of shops, from which emanated powerful spiritual energy, as the artifacts present were clearly not mediocre objects.

Upon seeing this scene, Mu Chen gasped in astonishment. If the mere shops were already so extraordinary, what superior quality would the auction houses have?

"Let's go straight to the auction houses." Mu Chen glanced at Nine Nether, as he couldn't wait to see the two natural treasures he had been coveting for such a long time.

"Sure." Nine Nether did not object as she nodded, and the two squeezed into the crowds to make their way into the city center.

The shops along the way were filled with a wide variety of dazzling objects, all with strong spiritual energy, which Mu Chen were drawn by. Some of these treasures even tempted him greatly to purchase them. If not for the sake of preserving money and for the sake of competing for the two great natural treasures, he would have given in to the temptation.

In the distance, there was an extremely large auction house, the largest in the city center. That was also the largest auction house in the City of Trade.

Looking at the silhouette of the auction house far away, excitement filled Mu Chen's heart, as he eagerly quickened his pace. But suddenly, he heard the noise of rioting coming from beside him. He turned his head to look, seeing a shop. A plump man, who was mostly like the boss and owner, roared, his face turning red with agitation.

"How dare you mess in the City of Trade! Are you tired of living, you little rascal?"

In front of the now bellowing plump man, stood a young man in white, who was holding a folding fan. His face was as fair as jade, and he was very handsome.

He nonchalantly replied, "Why are you making such a fuss, as I merely ate a Century Spiritual Fruit of yours..."

When he spoke, his voice seemed particularly crisp and pleasant.

Then, as Mu Chen looked at the young man closer, in disbelief, he soon found that it was a lady cross-dressed as a young man! The slender figure and the delicate features made a very clever little beauty.

"Then pay up! That Century Spiritual Fruit is worth two hundred Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, so you better pay up! " The plump man roared, as his expression twisted with rage. He previously looked at this "guy" in front of him, who had an extraordinary demeanour, and had thought that he was the young master of a certain sect. But then, suddenly, the "boy" took out the Century Spiritual Fruit, looked at it, and ate it directly!

The lady in white robes, who was really cross-dressed as the "boy", blushed with embarrassment, as she said, "I... I forgot to bring Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. I'll give it to you when I return next time."

The people around couldn't help but twitch their mouths in response, and the plump boss nearly fainted. Mu Chen couldn't help but laugh, as he thought that this girl was pretty amusing.

"If you are unable to give the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid today, then forget about leaving How dare you wreak havoc in the City of Trade? You must be tired of living!" The plump boss roared in rage, as guards rushed out aggressively after a wave of his signaling hand.

Upon seeing this, the girl dressed in white robes raised her eyebrows, exclaiming, "Don't you dare! Believe it or not, my father would destroy this rundown place of yours!"

The boss laughed, as his rage reached its tipping point. To dare speak such audacious words in the City of Trade, this little girl must not know her place.

However, just as he was about to command the guards to take action, Mu Chen, who had been watching in the crowd, threw out a jade bottle, announcing, "Here's two hundred Sovereign Spiritual

Liquid."

The boss was stunned. He took over the jade bottle and scrutinized it carefully, a flattering smile appearing on his plump face. He then glared at the indignant girl, as he said, "Count yourself lucky this time!"

"A**hole!" The girl dressed in white stomped her foot in anger, as she gnashed her teeth. She had never endured such humiliation in her entire life.

Mu Chen smiled as he glanced at her. He had no intention of striking up a conversation, so he turned to leave with Nine Nether. The only reason he had helped was because of his compassion. After all, this little girl might not be aware of how much trouble would come if she offended someone here.

"Hey!"

Mu Chen and Nine Nether had only taken a few steps, before a crisp sound rang out behind them. It was the girl dressed in white, quickly chasing after them, her pretty face flushed red.

"Uhh... thank you," she managed to stammer.

Mu Chen shook his head as he smiled. "You're bold indeed, to be a freeloader in the City of Trade," he commented.

"I left the house in a hurry and forgot to bring it. It was just an accident... That Century Spiritual Fruit...was too fragrant. I couldn't resist having a bite of it..." The girl dressed in white remarked in a huff, but the longer she spoke, the more guilty her tone became.

"Hey, you helped me this time, and I won't owe people a favor. What is your name, as I will definitely return you the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid." The girl dressed in white glanced at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen was about to decline, but as he saw the serious gaze of the girl, he smiled and relented, then replied, "Mu Chen."

He then turned to leave, without saying anything more.

The girl dressed in white waved, then called out, "My name is Lin Jing."

Chapter 652: Lin Jing

On the crowded street, Nine Nether looked back and then said to Mu Chen abruptly, "That girl seems to be unusual."

"Huh?"

Mu Chen was puzzled.

"She should be slightly younger than you, but probably no weaker." Nine Nether squinted her lovely eyes partially and said softly, "Also, since she has accomplished so much at this age, she has definitely been receiving perfect guidance. This means that her family background should be extraordinary."

Surprise flashed in Mu Chen's eyes. He did not actually notice that the girl in white clothes had hidden herself so deeply. He also did not ponder it much. He was in the Great Thousand World where many powerful people remained in concealment. Without any family background, such a girl who was lacking in social experience would not dare to go outside and act freely anyway.

"I didn't think that much," Mu Chen said and smiled. Indeed, when he went forward to help previously, he did not think; he just did not want to see such a delicate and pretty girl get into unnecessary trouble.

After all, he had already heard some time ago that there were many hidden talents in the Continent of Trade. Even if that girl in white did have some background, she would not be able to get past that kind of conflict easily.

Nine Nether smiled faintly and did not say anything else.

The two walked past a few streets and then turned a corner. Immediately, the view before them broadened up. In front of them, a hall as large as a mountain stood in silence. A tremendous amount of spiritual energy emanated from it and actually formed a column of light that soared up into the clouds.

Outside the hall, a large number of people flooded in. Looking at the size of the crowd, even Mu Chen was somewhat dumbstruck in spite of himself.

"The Trading and Auction House..." Nine Nether raised her head and gazed at the huge golden words on the exterior of the hall. Smiling, she said, "This should be the place."

"What an enormous scale," Mu Chen exclaimed. The hall was like a prehistoric behemoth which had opened its mouth wide and engulfed the vast number of people inside. Even so, it did not seem to be packed at all.

"This hall..."

Staring at the hall, Mu Chen's eyes suddenly flashed and his surprise became more intense. He realized that the hall seemed to be emitting a strange fluctuation.

Amazement also flashed in Nine Nether's eyes as she said, "This is a Divine Artifact. Such an incredible effort. They actually used a Divine Artifact as an auction hall..."

The hall was actually not a building but was converted from a Divine Artifact. It was no wonder it had that special fluctuation.

"Terrific!" Mu Chen couldn't help giving his compliment.

"Let's go."

Waving her hand, Nine Nether brought Mu Chen into the magnificent hall. Entering the hall, they could clearly feel that the space around them rippled. The scene before them blurred slightly and then became clear.

The hall was unusually lit, and its floor was formed from dazzling crystals. Inside, people filled the place. However, even though so many people gathered there, it did not seem to be crowded at all. Instead, it felt very spacious.

Mu Chen walked into the hall and looked around. He exclaimed

like a rural villager entering a large city. The place was many times larger than the Spiritual Values Hall in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy and also looked more spectacular.

On the other hand, Nine Nether did not stop for long. She gave ten drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to the lady at the counter and then took two tickets for the auction. Pulling Mu Chen along, they crossed the hall and entered a light door.

Through the light door was a place that looked like an arena. Its scale was so huge, it could accommodate over 100,000 people. At the moment, the place was already filled with people. Its popularity was incredible.

Mu Chen pursed his lips but did not exclaim again because he was already somewhat numb.

Nine Nether searched for seats while Mu Chen turned his head slightly and looked to his right. There was another light door not far away through which a few people were slowly walking.

When those few people entered, Mu Chen could clearly feel that many people were looking at them, and the looks were somewhat intense.

Mu Chen also looked at them. There was a lady in a fox fur coat whose body was exceptionally hot and enchanting. She had fiery red hair, and a charming smile on her white, oval face that caused many to feel attracted.

Her slim waist turned like a snake as she slowly walked over. Many eyes followed her delicate steps.

Behind the lady, there was an ordinary-looking middle-aged man. He was always just one step away from the lady. As he lifted his head occasionally, a frightening look could be briefly seen.

Mu Chen stared at the middle-aged man and his heart trembled slightly because he felt some pressure from him. This ordinary-looking middle-aged man was quite strong, and was probably at

least a Grade Four Sovereign.

"They are from the Fox Fairy Clan. This clan is one of the top on the Continent of Trade and is extremely strong. They participate in most of the auctions on the continent," Nine Nether said in an emotionless voice.

"This lady should have quite a high status in the Fox Fairy Clan. If not, she would not have a Grade Four Sovereign as a bodyguard."

"Fox Fairy Clan..."

Mu Chem remembered this name in his heart. This was the first strong clan he learned of after coming to the Great Thousand World.

As Mu Chen and Nine Nether were looking at them, the middle-aged man beside the enchanting lady in the fox fur coat seemed to have noticed. He lifted his head and looked at where Mu Chen and Nine Nether were. His eyes stopped at Nine Nether and his steps paused briefly.

Although his action was subtle, the enchanting lady still noticed. She also looked in that direction as if she felt something, and her attractive eyes locked onto Mu Chen and Nine Nether.

Looking at those charming eyes, Mu Chen's heart rate suddenly increased. Even his blood started to flow faster. However, he quickly realized that something was wrong, and his look turned solemn. In his body, it was as if thunder was heard, which completely suppressed the weird feeling.

"Huh?" the lady in the fox fur coat said faintly in surprise. However, she did not do anything else and only smiled gently at Mu Chen and Nine Nether. Then, under the scorching stares of countless people, she walked to the frontmost part of the auction hall, eventually entering a small attic covered with thin muslin. Obviously, ordinary people would not be allowed to go into that kind of place.

After entering the attic, the lady in the fox fur coat finally smiled and said, "Uncle Liu, those two look unfamiliar. They are probably not from the Continent of Trade."

The ordinary-looking middle-aged man said, "That girl is very strong, probably no weaker than me. As for that young man, he should have entered the Sovereign-level as well. It is not easy to have such an accomplishment at that age."

When the lady in the fox fur coat heard the middle-aged man say that Nine Nether was no weaker than he was, she was also briefly surprised. However, her expression returned to normal in a second, and she just nodded slightly, not saying anything else.

Seeing that Mu Chen kept looking at the lady in the fox fur coat as she left, Nine Nether gave out a humph and said, "Stop looking. Based on your ability now, she would probably feel disdain towards you."

Mu Chen was resigned but did not bother to explain. Just as he was about to find a seat and sit down, a familiar clear and angry voice came from the distance. "Scram, I am not interested in men!"

Mu Chen turned around, stunned. At another entrance to the auction hall, he saw the girl in white clothes who was dressed like a man. Her face was turning icy.

In front of her was a young man who was also in white robes. His appearance was somewhat tender, and he was quite handsome. At the moment, his expression was slightly awkward because of the girl's angry words.

He had already seen the girl outside. Although she was dressed like a man, he was a womanizer after all, and could naturally tell the truth with just one look. Furthermore, the girl's exquisite face was emitting an attractive aura. When she grew up, she would definitely be exceptionally beautiful. Therefore, he went forward to strike up a conversation. He did not expect that before he could even speak, he would be scolded very impolitely.

"Ha, girl, I think that there must be a misunderstanding. I have no bad intentions. I saw that you are alone and therefore wanted to invite you to watch this auction with me." However, this tender-looking young man was also not an ordinary playboy. Although he was scolded, he still kept a gentle smile and spoke in an elegant and polite tone.

"Not interested."

His humble attitude was, however, completely useless against the girl in white clothes. She rolled her eyes and rejected him directly, after which, she started to walk away.

The tender-looking young man finally frowned slightly.

Behind him, an emotionless old man in black robes stepped forward, just blocking the girl in white clothes. He said tonelessly, "He already made the invitation. Girl, you should just accept it."

Seeing the scene, the girl in white clothes raised her eyebrows. But just as she was about to hit the people in front of her with her palm, a hand extended from the side and held her wrist.

The sudden contact made the girl's body stiffen, and she quickly wanted to break free. However, when she saw the familiar face she had met earlier, her struggle weakened.

"Ha, my sister is still immature. I hope that you two will not mind this." Standing in front of the girl in white clothes, Mu Chen smiled at the tender-looking young man and the old man in black robes.

The tender-looking young man squinted slightly and stared at Mu Chen. After which, he saw Nine Nether beside Mu Chen. Immediately, a spark could be seen in the depths of his eyes.

But before he could say anything, the old man in black robes stepped forward, separating him from Nine Nether. He stared at the latter with a cautious look.

Clearly, he had noticed the threat from Nine Nether.

Seeing that, the tender-looking young man lifted his eyebrows. Then, he glanced at Mu Chen and Nine Nether with a faint smile. Without actually saying anything, he smiled, turned around, and walked away. In addition, the place they were going was also an attic at the front of the auction hall.

"These two have an extraordinary background. If I am not mistaken, they should be from the Tian Xuan Hall on the Tianluo Continent," Nine Nether said softly, looking at their backs.

"Tian Xuan Hall?"

"That is also one of the strongest clans on the Tianluo Continent. It is no weaker than our Daluo Territory," Nine Nether said.

Mu Chen shook his head resignedly. He did not expect that before he had even reached the Tianluo Continent, he would have already offended one of the top clans there. Although the tender-looking young man seemed to be generous, he knew that this kind of person would probably be very stingy.

"Hey, let me go!" Seeing that the two had left, the girl in white clothes, who was called Lin Jing, quickly broke free from Mu Chen's hands. She held her own wrist and stared at Mu Chen with her clever eyes.

Letting go of her, Mu Chen said helplessly, "You are such a troublemaker."

Hearing that, Lin Jing was immediately displeased. She said as if she had been wronged, "What trouble did I make? I don't even know that bastard!

"Also, that bastard actually dared to flirt with me. I am so angry. I must tell this to my dad. No, I will tell Uncle Diao. I will tell Uncle Hu! I will ask them to beat this bastard until he dies or becomes handicapped!"

Lin Jing gritted her teeth and kept scolding. Probably it was her first time encountering someone who was so confident and who

dared to flirt with her.

Hearing the scolding from the girl, Mu Chen twitched his mouth resignedly. Without paying attention to her, he and Nine Nether walked directly to the seats in front.

Seeing that Mu Chen had turned around and left, Lin Jing hesitated for a short moment and then also quickly followed them.

Chapter 653: Auction

In the auction hall, there were many people, but it did not seem to be crowded at all. Obviously, the planning had been very perfect. Mu Chen and Nine Nether sat down on the seats near the front.

The seats were made from jade and covered with soft fur. When one sat on them, one could even vaguely feel that a faint spiritual energy would gush into one's body. Clearly, both the jade and the fur were not ordinary.

The decoration in the auction hall indeed far exceeded any of the ones Mu Chen had seen before. After Mu Chen and Nine Nether took their seats, the girl called Lin Jing also sat down beside them. Her appearance was one of pure beauty, and her skin was as white as jade and as delicate as porcelain. At the moment, she was dressed up like a man, but still had a unique beauty that was pretty adorable. However, seeing that she followed immediately, Mu Chen stared at her.

"Don't chase me away. I am just following to take a look." Noticing that Mu Chen was staring at her, Lin Jing quickly put her palms together, and her miserable appearance became lovingly pathetic. But, her bright eyes were only filled with cunning and intelligence, like a little fox.

That, however, did not work on Mu Chen, who said gruffly, "Stop pretending."

"It's fate that we met. You really have no regard for people's feelings," Lin Jing said angrily.

"Since you came, just stay with us. But you must not stir up trouble," Nine Nether, who was at the side, smiled and said, while looking at the girl.

"Sister you are much better." Lin Jing complimented Nine Nether

in a sweet tone and said, "Don't worry. As long as other people do not provoke me, I will not make trouble."

Mu Chen twitched his lips, but his eyes were filled with some laughter. Towards the girl that he just knew, he also had a favorable impression. Otherwise, he would not show up and help her twice. He had to say that a beautiful girl still had an advantage after all, although he did not have any other thoughts at the moment.

After the three sat down, Lin Jing was the first to feel bored, and she started to talk to Mu Chen continuously. However, her voice was very clear, like jade beads falling onto a silver plate, and was exceptionally pleasing to the ears. In fact, from the girl's behavior, her personality was not at all quiet, as her name at first suggested, but rather smart and refreshing.

As they were talking, Mu Chen saw a few groups of people that seemed to be from some strong clans enter the place, one after another. Their statuses were quite high, and they all went into the small attics at the front of the auction hall directly. Obviously, the auction this time had attracted many influential people to the place.

"For this auction, at least five famous clans have come. But I feel that the most threatening people are probably the ones from the Tian Xuan Hall."

Nine Nether said softly, "That guy should have quite a high status in the Tian Xuan Hall. The old man in black robes beside him is also very strong. I think that he is probably at least a grade five sovereign. With such strength, even in the Tian Xuan Hall, he is at least an Elder level."

"Grade five sovereign?" Mu Chen's look sharpened and his face was somewhat solemn. Since such a strong person was sent to protect him, the tender-looking young man must be an important person in the Tian Xuan Hall.

If that person also came for the "Void Great Solar Fruit" and "Undying Divine Leaf", then the situation at the moment would be very tricky. Although Mu Chen had quite some sovereign spiritual liquid, due to the Spiritual Condensing Bowl, that person had the Tian Xuan Hall as his backing, and would definitely be hard to deal with.

"That bastard is from the Tian Xuan Hall?" At the side, Lin Jing overheard the conversation, and gave a soft humph and said, "What's so incredible about that? Don't worry, if he dares to stir up trouble with you, I will teach him a lesson!"

It seemed that she was angry at this annoying person, who dared to flirt with her.

"Thanks." But towards her words, Mu Chen rolled his eyes in a displeased way. Clearly, he thought that she was only releasing her anger. After all, the Tian Xuan Hall was among the top in the Tianluo Continent, and was extremely powerful.

Mu Chen's attitude immediately caused the girl to raise her eyebrows in anger. However, she quickly realized that she snuck out of her house alone and did not bring anything else. Thus, she gritted her teeth and humphed.

As time passed, the atmosphere in the auction hall gradually reached its climax. Eventually, a light column shot upwards from the center of the auction hall, as if a bell ring had spread.Countless people stared at the place.

In the light column, an old man in white robes appeared. The old man had white hair, a white beard, and his face was solemn and unsmiling, giving people a feeling that he was extremely stern. Generally speaking, people with this kind of personality were not suitable to host an auction. However, when he appeared, the voices in the auction hall quietened, followed by some exclamations.

"This auction is actually hosted by Master Mo Qing. Seems like the standard is quite high."

"You're right. Master Mo Qing is the chief auctioneer in the City of Trade. Whatever treasure it is, he can identify whether it is genuine or falsified, by just taking just one look. On usual auctions, he would not even show up."

"Seems like it was a right choice to come here."

"..."

Hearing the whispering in his surroundings, surprise was also seen in Mu Chen's eyes. He glanced at the old man in white robes, as he did not expect the latter to actually be so famous.

"This old man is about a grade three sovereign," Nine Nether stared at the old man in white robes and said.

Mu Chen twitched his tongue quietly. It was indeed the Great Thousand World, as even a chief auctioneer was a grade three sovereign. If he was in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, he would be one of the strongest Elders. But of course, even in this place, this Master Mo Qing had an extraordinary status.

In the whispering that filled the entire hall, the old man in white robes called Mo Qing scanned around, his eyes stopping at a few attics. Then, he folded his hands and said, "It's nice to meet all of you. The auction today officially starts now."

"Maybe all of you already know my rules. Whenever I hold an auction, only ten items will be sold. However, I think that their quality will make all of you satisfied."

The words from the old man in white robes contained some arrogance, but nobody refuted him. Clearly, they already knew that the master had some rules.

"Interesting." Mu Chen also smiled. It was his first time seeing such a unique auctioneer, who would sell only ten items. In that case, the items should have been picked carefully. This caused him to be somewhat curious as well. He really wanted to see how rare the ten treasures picked by this master would be.

Under the many anticipating stares, the old man in white robes closed his palm and a light ball appeared. In the light ball, there was actually a small boat, which was emitting a seemingly infinite amount of light. Faintly, there were some space fluctuations coming from it.

"This is a space boat, a low rank divine artifact. It has no offensive powers, but when it is travelling at maximum speed, even a grade six sovereign will find it difficult to follow," Master Mo Qing smiled faintly and said. "The starting bid is two thousand drops of sovereign spiritual liquid."

Everyone started to exclaim. It was actually a speed type divine artifact. Although it was only a low rank one, and also had no offensive powers, its speed, which was even faster than a grade six sovereign, was astonishing.

As long as a person had this kind of a divine artifact, even if he was hunted down, it would be very easy for him to escape. Hence, although this divine artifact had no offensive powers, its speed was enough to make up for it.

Seeing that, Mu Chen also felt exceptionally tempted. However, its price, which was at two thousand sovereign spiritual liquid, made him give up on his thought. After all, the amount of sovereign spiritual liquid he had was not so abundant that he could spend extravagantly. He had to wait for the two treasures that he needed to appear.

"Two thousand and one hundred!"

There were many strong people in the place, who wanted the space boat. After all, life is the most important thing in the world. After having this kind of escape artifact, one would obviously be much safer.

"Two thousand and three hundred!"

"Two thousand and five hundred!"

"..."

In just one minute, the price of the space boat had already increased rapidly, rising from two thousand sovereign spiritual liquid to three thousand! Only after that, the voices calling for outbids decreased gradually. After all, three thousand drops of sovereign spiritual liquid was already not a small amount. If a grade five sovereign was here, he would also need to condense continuously for almost half a year to get that amount.

In the end, the space boat was sold to a middle-aged man with a skinny face at the price of three thousand and one hundred drops of sovereign spiritual liquid. Watching this, Mu Chen also gave him compliments in silence. It seemed that he indeed was not wasting his time by coming to the auction, as the treasures here were indeed eye-opening.

"The second auction item..."

After the bidding ended, the old man in white robes closed his palm, and yet another light ball rose up. In the light ball, a fiery red liquid was flowing. The liquid was like the magma, and as it flew, a flame was drifting and an abnormally intense heat was emitted, causing the temperature of the entire auction hall to increase.

"This is the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony. It is formed from the fire jade that condenses at the deepest part of the magma sea. Only when the fire jade condenses for ten thousand years, can it turn into the chalcedony. In the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies, it is said that some of the stronger celestial bodies need this item," introduced the auctioneer. "The starting bid is one thousand drops of sovereign spiritual liquid."

Countless stares were projected onto the item. This Heavenly Fire Chalcedony was indeed not ordinary, but its uses were limited. Only those, who were cultivating the sovereign celestial bodies that required this item, would need it urgently.

After scanning the item, Mu Chen stopped looking at it. Obviously, he was uninterested in it. Then, he turned his head slightly and was momentarily stunned, because at the moment, Lin Jing, who was beside him, was starting at the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony eagerly, her white teeth biting gently on her lips. She was actually interested in the item.

However, the eager Lin Jing very quickly lowered her head unhappily, because she simply did not have that much sovereign spiritual liquid for bidding. Although she needed the item, the girl would not ask for help from Mu Chen recklessly. After all, she knew clearly that one thousand sovereign spiritual liquid was not a small amount to everyone.

She bit her rosy lips, then turned her head around stubbornly. As long as it was out of sight, then it was out of mind.

Beside her, Mu Chen saw her reactions by using the corners of his eyes, which cause him to want to laugh uncontrollably. However, he still sat indifferently and his hand rubbed on the jade armrest, as if he had no intentions to help.

Chapter 654: Void Great Solar Fruit

"One thousand and two hundred!"

"One thousand and five hundred!"

"..."

Although the uses of the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony were somewhat uncommon, it was a rare natural treasure after all, so quite a number of people were interested in it. Therefore, in just one minute, the price increased to around 1,700 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

Lin Jing sat on the chair, dispirited. She rested her adorable chin on her palms and gritted her teeth. Looking at those who were competing for the item so intensely, she remarked bitterly, "If I hadn't left my house in such a rush, I would use the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to smash all of you to death!"

Mu Chen rubbed his palm on the jade armrest. Scanning around the hall, he observed that all those interested in this Heavenly Fire Chalcedony did not seem to be from big clans. This could be inferred from the ways they outbid one another. Those who were very wealthy would not increase the price by such marginal amounts.

This allowed Mu Chen to heave a gentle sigh of relief.

The bidding gradually continued for a few minutes. The price finally stopped at 2,300 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

Seeing that the bidding had paused, the old man in white robes waited for a while and then wanted to raise his hand to announce the winner. At the moment, Lin Jing had already turned her face away in resentment.

"Two thousand and five hundred," Mu Chen finally declared with a smile.

He drew some surprised looks. Lin Jing was even more stunned. She turned around and gaped at Mu Chen, astounded. Then, she bit her pink lips and muttered something to herself.

The man who had previously raised the price to 2,300 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid frowned slightly and hesitated for a moment, but did not call for another bid. That was because the price was already the maximum he could afford.

Looking at the situation, the old man in white robes waved his sleeves, and the ring of a bell spread in the auction hall indicating that this Heavenly Fire Chalcedony had been sold successfully.

The auction continued.

Lin Jing's clever eyes moved back and forth, but her face seemed to be somewhat bashful. Her hand twisted the folding fan continuously.

She did not go up and question why Mu Chen had purchased the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony. She did not want to be humiliated in case she was just flattering herself by thinking that Mu Chen bought the item for her.

With a bantering attitude, Mu Chen waited for quite a while. Seeing that she could actually hold back, he laughed uncontrollably and revealed, "This is indeed for you."

Lin Jing blushed and replied, "Thanks. I am also cultivating the Sovereign Celestial Body, and need a lot of similar chalcedony..."

Hearing the conversation, Nine Nether glanced at Lin Jing and a strange look flashed in her eyes. She clearly heard everything that the girl had said; a lot of similar chalcedony.

Although some of the Sovereign Celestial Bodies indeed required the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony to cultivate, there were only a few that would require that much chalcedony, such as the Heavenly Chalcedony Celestial Body, which was ranked 63rd in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies. This particular Sovereign Celestial

Body needed chalcedony containing different elements, and the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony was one of them.

If Lin Jing was really preparing to cultivate the Heavenly Chalcedony Celestial Body, her background would probably be quite shocking, because a Sovereign Celestial Body that was ranked that high would have a great attraction towards grade seven, or even grade eight Sovereigns.

Moreover, although this Heavenly Chalcedony Celestial Body was weaker than those Superb Celestial Bodies whose ranks were even higher, it was most appropriate for a person who had just been promoted to the Sovereign-level.

That was because a Sovereign Celestial Body that was too powerful would definitely be difficult to control, while one that was too weak would also be inappropriate. Therefore, her family obviously had considered everything before asking her to cultivate the Heavenly Chalcedony Celestial Body.

Mu Chen did not think as much as Nine Nether did. After all, he was not too familiar with Sovereign Celestial Bodies. At once, he only asked in a surprised tone, "Your family members didn't prepare all the materials for you?"

The girl should have quite a strong family background. Although the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony was rare, it should not cause her so many difficulties.

"I rely on myself. If I needed them to prepare everything for me, how uninteresting would that be?" Lin Jing answered, supporting her chin and swinging her slender legs.

Mu Chen shook his head resignedly.

"Oh yeah. I said I would not owe someone a favor unnecessarily." Seeming to have thought of something, Lin Jing suddenly removed a jade pendant tied to a red string from around her white, slender neck.

The jade pendant was milky in color, as if a liquid were flowing inside it. On the whole, it seemed to be exceptionally simple, but there seemed to be an indescribable fluctuation emanating from it.

"This is a protective spiritual jade, and it will be automatically activated when you are in the most dangerous situation. As long as the other party does not exceed a Grade Five Sovereign in strength, it will be able to block a fatal blow for you."

Mu Chen and Nine Nether both paused in amazement, and the former was soon visibly interested. The seemingly simple jade pendant was actually so strong, it could defend the fatal attack of a Grade Five Sovereign.

"Forget it. This was prepared for you by your family. I will not take it away." Eventually, Mu Chen shook his head. Smiling, he added, "In addition, the price of your protective spiritual jade is probably higher than the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony."

"No way. If you don't want it, I will also not take the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony." Lin Jing was unusually stubborn. She stared at Mu Chen seriously and was obviously not joking.

This girl had her principles.

"Also, you don't need to worry about me. I still have more of the protective spiritual jade with me. Otherwise, how would I dare to secretly sneak out?" Lin Jing laughed cunningly, raising her wrist at Mu Chen. On her white wrist hung a small, simple-looking jade pendant.

Mu Chen was completely speechless. Eventually, he sighed faintly. Children from a rich family were indeed fortunate. She could wear such precious protective spiritual jades all over her body, and this made him feel like he was almost naked. If he had not obtained the Spiritual Condensing Bowl by luck, he would probably not even have the wealth to enter the place...

"Here." Lin Jing passed over the protective spiritual jade to Mu

Chen.

"After all the twists and turns, actually it's me who gained." Mu Chen gave a bitter smile but was no longer hesitant. Reaching out to take the protective spiritual jade, he sighed with a complicated emotion.

"Stop sighing in despair, Mu Chen. You are really a good friend!" Lin Jing assured him, laughing. Then, she gave a thumbs-up to Mu Chen, her fingertip looking as round and cute as a pearl.

Clearly, Mu Chen buying the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony for her had caused her to have a good impression of him. After all, not everyone would spend over 2,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to buy something that he did not need for someone whom he just got to know.

Furthermore, being equally intelligent, she could feel that Mu Chen was not that rich to the extent where he could ignore 2,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. This was exactly why it was commendable.

Although the girl was young, her experience was probably beyond Mu Chen's imagination. She was bright and proud, but she was also obviously clever, and not really just casual and slow-witted.

Mu Chen kept the protective spiritual jade, but did not say anything to Lin Jing, who seemed to be increasingly lively and excited. He only lifted his head and stared at the front. While they had been talking, three or four items were already successfully sold.

These treasures included Divine Artifacts and Divine Techniques. None were ordinary, which therefore led to quite an intense competition. This caused the atmosphere in the auction hall to surge.

However, the Void Great Solar Fruit and Undying Divine Leaf

that Mu Chen was anticipating had yet to appear.

This caused him to frown slightly, because he understood that the later an item appeared, the more he would have to pay for it. Of course, most importantly, the many influential characters in the attics at the front had not called out a bid even once.

At the moment, because he had unlocked part of the seals in the Spiritual Condensing Bowl, he had a total of 18,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in his possession. This was not a small amount, but he was still not very confident that he could obtain the two treasures in the end.

Time slowly passed as Mu Chen waited urgently. When seven auction items had been successfully sold, Mu Chen's eyes finally brightened all of a sudden.

That was because he saw that on the stage, an extremely eye-catching ball of light appeared in the hands of the old man in white robes. The ball of light was like the scorching rising sun and actually enveloped the entire auction hall.

A unique fluctuation started to fill the place.

The whole auction hall went into a temporary silence, and many stared with burning looks at the radiant light. In the depth of the light, they could see a fruit burning in a milky white flame, and an infinite amount of light was radiating out.

Mu Chen stared at the fruit in anticipation, and even his body straightened. His heart was filled with excitement. He finally found the Void Great Solar Fruit.

While Mu Chen was staring avidly at the Void Great Solar Fruit, some activity could also be noticed from the attics at the front. Many people were focused on the object. Clearly, their attention had been drawn.

"This is a Void Great Solar Fruit. I think that everyone has heard of it before. If you can refine it, a Spiritual Sun will condense in

your Sovereign Sea. Under the radiation from the Spiritual Sun, the spiritual energy in the Sovereign Sea will be combined with the power of the Solar Flame, causing your own spiritual energy to be more powerful.

"I think I don't need to tell you directly how precious it is. The starting bid for this Void Great Solar Fruit is 7,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid!"

When Mo Qing finished his speech, many shocked voices could instantly be heard. The high price had caused many people to kill off their thoughts of bidding. Nevertheless, they still stared with a desiring look in spite of themselves. After all, such a treasure that could increase the power of spiritual energy was very uncommon.

"Seven thousand drops of sovereign spiritual liquid."

Hearing the price, Mu Chen's heart also sank slightly. This was only the starting bid and to obtain the item, there would certainly be a round of intense competition. He did not know what the price would be by the time the bidding stopped.

Puff.

Mu Chen took a deep breath and his look turned sharp. Anyway, no matter what happened, he would not give up easily.

If Mu Chen missed the item on this occasion, he would have no way of knowing when he could finish cultivating the Great Solar Undying Body.

Chapter 655: Head-to-head

Endless light rays enveloped the vast auction site, but even so, they could not outshine those passionate eyes from the Void Great Solar Fruit, as the rareness of it was far beyond the previous Heavenly Fire Chalcedony.

Mu Chen was also staring at the scene. But, he quickly adjusted his mindset with a deep breath. Mu Chen was feeling uptight, as he observed the premises. He noticed some slight commotions coming from those lofts in front of him, as soon as he had completely gathered his vision.

Then, his heart sank. As he had expected, those strong-funding fellows were all eyeing the Void Great Solar Fruit. This natural treasure, known for boosting up the power of spiritual energy, was indeed a strong temptation to all the top powers in the Sovereign-level.

On the auction platform, Mo Qing read the movements on the ground, before he faintly said, "Everyone, we will begin our auction."

As soon as he finished making his announcement, the entire scene was silent. Seven thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was no small amount for a starting bid. Thus, not many people could participate in this auction.

Once the auction started, it was natural to observe the situation first. But, the silence did not last for too long, as someone finally shouted out a first bid.

"7,300!"

The one who made the bid was a middle-aged man with a cold face. Apparently, he had some extraordinary combat strength, as he was surrounded by a strong presence of Spiritual Energy fluctuation. But his bid amount did not maintain for too long

before it finally got overbid.

"7,500!"

And, again.

"7,800!"

The continuous bidding broke the silence, as the entire auction ground started to get hyped up. A few interested bidders could not hang in there anymore, throwing off their bids for the Void Great Solar Fruit.

Within a few minutes, the bid price soared to 8,500. Some people were envious about the cost of such a vast amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, which was sufficient to speed up their cultivation by numerous times.

The bidding amount went up and up, the number of bidders who could afford such a price being reduced tremendously. But, almost everyone knew that the big players were coming soon.

"9,500."

When a lazy, yet feminine and soft voice rang out with this new bid, almost everyone looked up at the small loft ahead. A layer of tulle was lifted, and a spellbinding and dazzling face showed up from behind it.

"Look, it's the Heart Fox Fairy from the Fox Fairy Clan."

"She is actually interested in the Void Great Solar Fruit."

With an alluring face that could make any hearts throb, she invited whisperings from the ground, as they had all heard about the great beauty of this spellbinding girl. The auction ground immediately quieted down after the alluring girl named Heart Fox Fairy placed her bid. Even those, who had the previous intentions to bid, stopped, as they did not want to mess with this girl from the Fox Fairy Clan.

Mu Chen could not help but sigh at this scene, as he yelled out,

"10,000!"

The commotion soared when his voice rang out with the price. Countless audiences looked into his direction with surprise, finally casting their gazes on Mu Chen, their looks filled with shock and dismay.

Everyone was guessing about his background, as 10,000 of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was simply not affordable for everyone. Although they looked at him with surprise, he remained calm, fixing his eyes on the Void Great Solar Fruit that was on the auction platform, and not paying attention to anyone else.

Up in the loft, Heart Fox Fairy shifted her peach-eyed enchanting gaze slowly to Mu Chen, looking at him with astonishment. Mu Chen sensed her gaze, then tilted his face and gave her an apologetic smile.

Heart Fox Fairy returned to him her own enchanting smile. Her beautiful eyes flickered coyly, not revealing what she was thinking about. But, judging by her actions, it seemed like she had no intention to continue her bidding.

"Heh, since our Heart Fox Fairy has no great interest in the Void Great Solar Fruit, then allow me to do so." While Heart Fox Fairy remained silent, a chuckle came from another loft that was not far away. The previous juvenile man, with a soft and cold appearance, walked in slowly, wearing a radiant smile and bowing at Heart Fox Fairy with his fist up.

"Hehe, I have too little capital to compete with all of you. If the Young Hall Master from Xuan Tian Hall has an interest in it, I will gladly withdraw," Heart Fox Fairy said, as she looked at the juvenile man, then pursed her red lips with a smile.

That juvenile man bowed to her in a gentlemanly manner once again, before he turned to the direction where Mu Chen was, with a smile on his soft and cold face, and said, "11,000."

Upon his appearance, Mu Chen frowned at him.

"He is really an annoying asshole." Lin Jing could not help but sneer, when she saw him. As this juvenile had teased her previously, she held a grudge toward him. The anger showed up on her face, as she saw that he was in Mu Chen's way now.

"Mu Chen, just win against him with the bids! Even if I had no Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, at most, I would sell some things for it!" Lin Jing gritted her teeth and said angrily.

"Don't worry, if he wishes to play with us, we will just play along with him." Mu Chen smiled with ease, as a cold radiance surfaced in his eyes. Although this juvenile had some status in Xuan Tian Hall, he did not believe that he had the capability to use a few ten thousands of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

After all, Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was not just some plain water! In any case, he was determined to get this Void Great Solar Fruit.

A new bid rang out from Mu Chen: "12,000!" Mu Chen was resting on the chair, projecting his calm voice across the vast auction premise. Many people felt astonished, with their jaws dropping, as they had not expected this from Mu Chen.

On the loft, the juvenile was squinting both his eyes, which flickered with a deep cold radiance. He was feeling annoyed by the interference of Mu Chen, as he could tell that Mu Chen was not in league with the lady in white.

Moreover, Mu Chen only possessed the strength that could barely make it to the Sovereign-level. If it wasn't for that beautiful lady standing beside him, who he was wary of, he could have thrown him out. Who knew that Mu Chen would reach out for a yard, after taking an inch by going against him?

"Young Hall Master, the purpose of your trip to this city is not the Void Great Solar Fruit." just before the juvenile man could bid

again, the black-robe old man behind him suddenly spoke.

"I know." He knit his eyebrow slightly in response, yet raised his hand and called out, "13,000!"

"I just want to see how far can this ignorant fellow will go, acting up in this way!" He had a chilly smile on his face. To him, Mu Chen was just making an empty show of his strength.

"15,000."

Before his 15,000 new bid even completely tapered in the air, as his voice ended, Mu Chen outbid him with a direct bid of 2,000 worth of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. This astounded everyone on the floor, including the Heart Fox Fairy, who also looked at Mu Chen with astonishment. This young man clearly had superior generosity and courage.

The face of the juvenile turned slightly pale, and his eyes turned cold again. He looked at Mu Chen icily, but the latter kept his gaze only on the Void Great Solar Fruit, which was on the auction platform.

He twitched his mouth, suppressed his killing desire, and wanted to bid again.

"Little Hall Master!" The black-robe old man frowned, as he shouted in a deep voice.

The cold juvenile clenched his fist and bit his lips. He swallowed the words he wanted to say in the end, but his eyes were even colder and scarier than before.

He said with a low and cold voice, "Elder Mu, keep this fellow in your mind. The things that I want are not things that can be snatched by anyone."

The black-robe elder nodded his head slightly, a cruel smile curling at the side of his lips, and said, "Little Hall Master, don't worry. Just take it as a sign that he is kind-hearted enough to spend such a huge amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to buy

that Void Great Solar Fruit for you."

The cold and angry expression on the juvenile faded off slightly, as he began to smile chillingly, keeping his silence. When Mu Chen raised his bid to 15,000, no one wished to bid against him, as they probably had been struck dumbfounded by his boldness. After a short wait, the Void Great Solar Fruit was finally auctioned successfully by Mu Chen.

When Mo Qing announced the auction results, Mu Chen finally placed the stone in his heart down. But, he immediately sensed a cold gaze being directed at him, so he looked back quickly, staring at the juvenile in his loft, with those same cold eyes.

If it were not for that fellow, who had come in and stirred up such a mess, Mu Chen would not have needed to raise the bid price to such an extent. And, if it were not for such an amount having been spent, he would have some allowance remaining to bid for the next item, the Undying Divine Leaf. But, now he had exhausted a significant amount of the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, so it would be too hard on the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, should he attempt to bid for the upcoming Undying Divine Leaf.

"That fellow probably wants to kill you now," Nine Nether suddenly spoke, as a surge of coldness flashed in her beautiful eyes.

Mu Chen nodded. Although the black-robe elder beside him had a strength of Grade Five Sovereign, it was still hard to win against Nine Nether, as she was ultimately the real divine beast. As for the juvenile man, his strength should be at Grade One Sovereign. So, even if they were to fight, Mu Chen was not afraid of him at all.

After he had spun his thoughts in his mind, Mu Chen turned his focus to gaze on the auction platform. At this moment, Master Mo Qing had taken out the ninth auction item of the day.

As Mu Chen had expected, the ninth item was the last ingredient that was required for his cultivation of The Great Solar Undying Body: the Undying Divine Leaf.

Chapter 656: Undying Divine Leaf

A glowing light ball appeared in the dry hands of Master Mo Qing. It was a palm-sized, dark yellow dead leaf with veins running through it. The leaf was not very eye-catching, and if it had not been taken out by Master Mo Qing, no one would have ever recognized it as the rumored Undying Divine Leaf.

On this vast land of the world there was a kind of deity tree known as the Undying Divine Tree. The lifespan of this tree was unbelievably long. Even while the universe underwent numerous catastrophic disasters, the tree remained standing between heaven and earth.

This type of deity tree only sheds a leaf once every thousand years. Thus it was named the Undying Divine Leaf. It was rumored that the leaf could produce a "leaf substitute" allowing someone to be reborn once.

That was why many top powers were chasing after the Undying Divine Leaf. After all, in this world there were many unique treasures but an individual only had one life.

Hence, whenever the Undying Divine Leaf appeared, top powers fought for it without any hesitation regardless of the price.

In the auction, the eyes of the participants were filled with passion and greed. If fighting in this place were an easy thing to do, someone would have lost their mind and resorted to thieving.

On the auction stage, Master Mo Qing looked into eyes that were filled with greed and calmly said, "The Undying Divine Leaf starts off with the bidding price of 10,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid."

When he finished speaking, no one moved. Only the sound of breathing could be heard. Most of the common people would not be able to afford the huge amount of 10,000 drops of Sovereign

Spiritual Liquid.

This divine artifact... could only belong to the richest people.

Mu Chen was too stunned when he heard the starting bid, and could only give a bitter smile.

"What should we do now?" Nine Nether frowned. She also had not expected this price. Moreover, it would rise exponentially after a few rounds of bidding.

The remaining Sovereign Spiritual Liquid they had couldn't handle another game of price wars.

Mu Chen fell into silence for a time and then said, "Let's observe first. If it is really out of our range, I have some worldly treasures and some divine artifacts won from the Spiritual Academy Competition. We can still convert them to some Sovereign Spiritual Liquid."

Mu Chen rubbed his forehead. He finally realized how important Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was in this Great Thousand World. He did not feel the importance of it when he was in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, but now he began to realize that without Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, it was hard to move around in the Great Thousand World.

The Spiritual Condensing Bowl he had contained a significant amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, but the seal on it was so strong that even Nine Nether could only decode part of it.

Nine Nether shook her head, too. Although she had saved up quite an amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, she had had to use it to pass her tribulation, so she could not be of much help now.

Lin Jing was standing quietly to the side and said, "Perhaps I can contribute something to exchange for some Sovereign Spiritual Liquid?" Although it only cost Mu Chen 1,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid for her Heavenly Fire Chalcedony, she felt guilty about it.

Mu Chen smiled and said nothing.

While they were talking, the auction for the Undying Divine Leaf had begun. As he expected, those big players sitting in the loft in front were the interested bidders.

They came with strong backings and a large amount of capital, thus within a short amount of time, the auction had hit its climax.

The auction price soared to an amount of 15,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

Mu Chen observed the auction calmly. When the bids hit a new high, there were three remaining bidders. Out of the three, two of them were the juvenile man and the Heart Fox Fairy from the Fox Fairy Clan. The last one was an elder in a grey robe. He was kind-looking with a hideous black skeleton embroidered on the sleeves of his robe.

Nine Nether explained the identity of the grey-robed elder. "He should be someone from the Skeleton Demon Mountain. Skeleton Demon Mountain is the lord of the Skeleton Continent. They have strong supreme power, but they still lose out a little to Daluo Territory and Tian Xuan Hall overall."

Mu Chen nodded slightly. Tianluo Continent was, after all, a supercontinent. It was not easy to become one of the top forces on it, and therefore, it could not easily be compared.

Of course, Skeleton Demon Mountain was not an ordinary force, either. Otherwise, the grey-robed elder would not have vied with Tian Xuan Hall and the Fox Fairy Clan directly.

As Mu Chen observed the grey-robed elder, the latter raised the price another 2,000 with his husky voice, instantly causing an uproar from the ground. "Seventeen thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

"Heh heh, this is my last call. If you have any bids higher than this, I will let go as a token of respect to the Fox Fairy Clan and

Tian Xuan Hall." The grey-robed elder spoke smilingly to the juvenile man and Heart Fox Fairy.

Heart Fox Fairy gave a lazy smile and shook her head gently. "The Elder Gui Ku has already raised the price to such an extent, how would I be able to afford it? I will let the Young Hall Master, Liu Ming from Tian Xuan Hall, follow up with you."

The juvenile man chuckled when he heard that. Looking confident, he smiled. "If that's the case, I shall not reject the order. I will not let people snatch away so easily the things that I want for myself."

As he was saying this, he cast a look in Mu Chen's direction with icy coldness deep in his eyes.

"Twenty thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid," Liu Ming said and looked at the elder from Skeleton Demon Mountain with a smile.

There were more deep breaths from the spectators in the auction. Looking at the amount he bid, it seemed like Tian Xuan Hall was determined to get this Undying Divine Leaf. A weaker force might not even have 20,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid as their annual profit.

The sudden increment of 3,000 changed the grey-robed elder's expression. He could only fall back to his chair. Apparently, an amount of 20,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was over what he could afford.

No matter how valuable the Undying Divine Leaf was, it was still unbearable to part with 20,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid for it.

Nine Nether looked at Mu Chen as the auction was about to end. The latter squinted with coldness filling his pitch-black eyes. He shook his head after a short while.

Obviously, he had given up.

"If you miss this chance, there is no guarantee when you can see it again. Your Sovereign Celestial Body will have to wait endlessly." Nine Nether knitted her willow-like eyebrows.

"It is still early to say so," Mu Chen said and smiled.

"What do you mean?" Nine Nether was confused.

"Because someone is as greedy as a wolf, and I am sure he would want to take Void Great Solar Fruit along with him," Mu Chen said calmly. "If someone is eyeing us, why can't we do it, too?"

"Are you thinking about fighting it out with them?" Nine Nether was shocked. She did not expect Mu Chen would have the guts to do it.

"Not me. But they will," Mu Chen said softly. "Are you confident in handling the old man?"

He was referring to the black-robed elder sticking by Liu Ming's side.

"Well, he has the strength of Grade Five Sovereign, which is a level higher than me. But the combat strength of my Divine Beast is much stronger, so he won't be able to do anything to me. But I'm afraid I cannot kill him, either," Nine Nether said.

"That Liu Ming is of Grade One Sovereign strength, and he must have cultivated his Sovereign Celestial Body. On the surface, he may seem to be stronger than me, so if he gets that elder to hold you up, he would think that he could easily finish me off."

Mu Chen laughed and continued, "Judging from the way he bids, he is someone of arrogance and likes to seek revenge for the smallest grievance. I have caused him to lose face just now, so I'm sure he won't let me off. Seems like it will not be easy to leave this place by then."

"Let them try." A cold radiance flickered in Nine Nether's eyes. If that lad really dared to take them on, she did not mind letting him go for gold only to come up short.

Mu Chen smiled, but there was no warmth in his smile. He did not want to make a fuss out of it, but that did not mean he was afraid to. If Liu Ming really made a move, he would have the perfect excuse to "borrow" the Undying Divine Leaf.

He was not afraid of failure. At most he could ask Nine Nether to run with her actual body. Given the speed of Nine Netherworld Bird, even the black-robed elder with the strength of Grade Five Sovereign could never lay a finger on them.

While they were talking, the auction for the Undying Divine Leaf had come to an end. Liu Ming won the auction without much trouble. The skyrocketing amount of 20,000 was sufficient to keep people away from it.

On the auction table, Master Mo Qing waved his sleeve, and a bell rang. The Undying Divine Leaf now officially belonged to Liu Ming.

Liu Ming laughed with satisfaction upon seeing this. He stroked the armchair's handle slowly and narrowed his eyes. He cast a glance in Mu Chen's direction and mumbled, "This brat who dared to fight with me is really courting his own death."

Dong.

Another bell rang in the auction house. This time, numerous participants sat up straight. Even the veils were drawn back on those lofts as multiple gazes stared closely at the auction table.

They knew the next upcoming item was the highlight of the entire auction for the day.

There were many strong forces who had actually come to this auction for it.

Mu Chen looked up at the same time and stared at the auction table curiously. He also wanted to know what kind of treasure could be lined up behind the Void Great Solar Fruit and Undying Divine Leaf.

Master Mo Qing held up his hand under the fiery gazes. A golden glow appeared on his palm, drawing the attention of all the participants.

Chapter 657: Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art

On the auction table, a golden scroll appeared in the hand of Master Mo Qing, arriving with a golden glow. As though it had been passed down since ancient times, the scroll seemed to be very old, exuding a long-abandoned smell.

As the golden light flowed, an awe-inspiring dragon seemed to be taking shape. Countless eyes stared closely at the golden scroll, as they could tell that it was an extraordinary item.

Under these gazes, Mo Qing waved the golden scroll gently in his hand, projecting his firm voice across the entire auction arena, "This is a scroll that contains divine technique, which was derived from the Ancient Divine Book. It is slightly incomplete, so I can only say that it is almost a perfect Divine Art. But, it does have boundless potential, so if anyone can comprehend the profoundness in it, and practice it successfully, I believe that it is going to be a power that can be comparable to a perfect Divine Art, or even surpass it."

"A divine technique that can surpass a perfect Divine Art?"

Most of the people felt shocked, as generally, a perfect Divine Art was placed within most of the top forces within a continent, deemed to be a clan treasure. As such, only the core members with high positions in the clan could practice it. And now, Mo Qing actually said that it was almost a perfect Divine Art, and that it could even surpass a perfect Divine Art?

Mu Chen also was shocked upon hearing these words. He gently knit his eyebrows, as he had not forgotten what Mo Qing had said about its possibilities, should anyone be able to comprehend and practice it successfully...

"Hehe, Master Mo Qing, do you mean that it is not easy to learn

this so-called close-to perfect Divine Art?" Mu Chen had the same question in his mind, when a soft alluring voice rang out. Heart Fox Fairy from the Fox Fairy Clan was asking her question, smiling. Apparently, she was also meticulous enough to take notice.

"Heh, you are sharp," Mo Qing smiled with a nod and said. "That's true. So far, none have managed to practice successfully. In my opinion, it is even more profound and unpredictable in its cultivation level, when compared to the rest of the real perfect Divine Art."

His words caused a stir on the spot. Had no one truly ever practiced such a divine technique successfully before?

But, subsequently, they understood that, if there were anyone who could practice this successfully, the owner would not have placed the item up for auction. Such a tremendous divine technique could be the most robust technique, and as such, it could act as a trump card.

"Oh?" Liu Ming stood up with a smile. He observed the golden manuscript closely, with interest. "I have never encountered a divine technique that could not be practiced. I shall give it a try today," he smiled and said.

Although it must have been thanks to all of the resources provided by Tian Xuan Hall that Liu Ming was able to hit Grade One Sovereign at his age, it must also be explained by his own natural giftings. That is why, as conceited as he was, he did not believe that there would be any divine technique that he could not master.

Almost all of the people from the front loft cast their gazes over toward him with great interest. If what Mo Qing had said was true, such a high-potential divine technique would have the utmost benefit to the forces behind it.

"This divine technique is known as the Nine Dragon Nine

Elephant Art. The bidding will start at 20,000 Sovereign Spiritual Liquid." The faint voice of Mo Qing reverberated throughout the venue, and the skyrocketing bid once again made many faces twitch.

Mu Chen could only curl his lips. Even though he had a great interest in the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art, he could not afford it. The ones with substantial capital to spend must be those top powers, who had a strong backing behind them.

Although the expensive price tag of this divine technique could discourage many people, the fight had intensified in comparison to the previous auction items. Those who had not bid in the earlier phases were the big players, who had conserved their capital, waiting for this very round.

For a moment, voices calling out for bids came one after another. Countless people were quite envious and jealous of the rising price tag. Within minutes, the price of the scroll had hit almost 30,000 Sovereign Spiritual Liquid!

The price war for the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art went on for over ten minutes, and it was almost going to end, as the last bid had just surged up to 32,000 Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. And the highest bidder? It was none other than Liu Ming from Tian Xuan Hall.

This result shocked many people, as it looked like his primary purpose for this auction was the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art. Otherwise, he would not have prepared such a considerable amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid beforehand.

Mu Chen was also secretly shocked. By now, he knew how lucky he was to have vied for the Void Great Solar Fruit. Luckily, Liu Ming's target was not the Void Great Solar Fruit. Otherwise, if Liu Ming had really pushed for it, Mu Chen might not have even stood a chance at all, as his capital was just too weak.

When Liu Ming raised his bid to 32,000 Sovereign Spiritual

Liquid. After that, no one wished to vie against him anymore. Some of the top powers had pondering looks on their faces, but even they gave up eventually.

Behind the tulle on one of the lofts, Heart Fox Fairy frowned and said, "Liu Ming is really a spendthrift. Even if he is from Tian Xuan Hall, spending such a huge amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid must burn a hole in the pocket."

"He is overconfident indeed," a common-looking, middle-aged man said from behind Heart Fox Fairy. "That scroll of Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art is actually quite freaky, and not just anyone can practice it. Even though Liu Ming has some talents, he is still yet far from being able to practice this divine technique. Liu Ming is considered as being passable among the younger generation within the Tian Luo Continent, but when compared to his brother, Liu Yan, he is still not there yet."

"Haha, Liu Yan is the candidate for the next Tian Xuan Hall Master. He is quite famous in the Daluo Continent though," Xin Hu smiled alluringly and said.

"Missy is not any weaker than him," the middle-aged man said, laughing.

Heart Fox Fairy smiled radiantly, as she took notice of something in one of the corners at the auction ground. She rested her gaze at Nine Nether, who was beside Mu Chen, then said softly, "That girl seems to be powerful, to be able to reach her level at her age. I wonder which force she belongs to."

"For this answer, I guess Liu Ming will gladly test it out for you," the middle-aged man said.

"Oh?" Heart Fox Fairy raised her eyebrows at first, but then finally understood what he meant. She smiled and said, "Liu Ming is really not magnanimous at all. But, I wonder if he will be snookered."

The auction had ended while they shared these conversations. The Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art was finally won by Liu Ming for the amount of 32,000 Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

When the bell rang again, everyone in the auction hall sighed softly. All eyes were enviously staring at Liu Ming, who had obviously reaped the most out of this auction.

Liu Ming looked at their expressions, as they all looked at him and smiled immodestly, watching him enjoy being the eye-catchy one, as this allowed him to feel superior and different from the rest. While he was enjoying being the center of attraction, he saw that Mu Chen had stood up not far away from him, expressionlessly. Mu Chen then left immediately, along with Nine Nether and Lin Jing, without even looking in his direction.

Liu Ming watched as they left, a surge of coldness swirling deep in his eyes. His slender fingers brushed softly across the armrest of a jaded stone chair. The armrest was cut off immediately, leaving the place where it had broken off with a sleek, smooth surface.

"Elder Mu, send someone to follow them. I want to know every move of theirs. Although we cannot make our moves in this city, once they leave, I want them to know that not everyone can be messed around with," Liu Ming said faintly.

The black-robed old man nodded slowly behind him. Liu Ming smiled as he saw Heart Fox Fairy walking out from the loft. Her graceful figure and curvy outline filled his heart with warmness. He walked quickly to her, a beaming smile on his face.

--

Mu Chen brought Nine Nether and Lin Jing out of the auction site. He handed over the bulk of the items, and took what he had auctioned for.

Standing in the enclosed room where the auctions items were collected, Mu Chen looked at the fruit, which had a shape of a sun,

and let out of long breath. No matter how hard it was, he had gotten another material. Now, he just needed his Undying Divine Leaf in order to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body.

He was looking forward to it. He wondered how powerful this Sovereign Celestial Body going to be, since it required such a rare treasure to cultivate.

"This is yours." Mu Chen kept his Void Great Solar Fruit, and threw the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony at Lin Jing.

Lin Jing took it delightfully. Although she had seen many treasures before, due to her identity, this was ultimately something she had earned for herself.

"Thank you!" She laughed.

"But it's me who got the better deal." Mu Chen smiled. After all, the Protective Spiritual Jade that Lin Jing had given was much more valuable, when compared to this Heavenly Fire Chalcedony.

"But we might need to go our separate ways soon," Mu Chen continued, gently warning.

Lin Jing shook her head and said, "We are, after all, friends, right? Will friends abandon each other in times of need?"

Mu Chen paused for a moment, before he finally smiled at the girl, who now had a joyful look on her face.

"Alright, let's go together. If anything goes wrong, we will flee together," he promised.

Chapter 658: Interception

After the auction ended, Mu Chen did not leave the City of Trade immediately. Instead, he found himself a cultivation inn and stayed put in it temporarily. Since a fight was expected, he wanted to make sure that he was in tip-top shape for it.

The exhaustion caused by the non-stop traveling needed to be eliminated as well.

In the spacious guest room...

Mu Chen was sitting with his legs crossed while Nine Nether was standing by the window. She looked out and turned her head to Mu Chen. "Someone is really following us. They were probably sent by Liu Ming."

Mu Chen nodded. "Those with the surname Liu are always up to no good."

Back in the Northern Spiritual Realm, the Lius had given him troubles, too.

After Mu Chen had just finished his sentence, Lin Jing was standing there with her hands on her waist, staring at him angrily. She waved her small fist at him. "My grandma's last name is also Liu!"

Mu Chen felt embarrassed all of a sudden.

Lin Jing sneered. "If my father were to hear this, he would beat you up."

Mu Chen forced a laugh, as he did not expect a word could bring such misfortune to him.

Lin Jing did not think much about what Mu Chen had mindlessly said. She sat down and with her hands on her chin asked excitedly, "When are we leaving?"

She seemed like she could not wait for the upcoming troubles to

start.

"We're not in a hurry. We are being watched by Liu Ming now. The longer we stay in the city, the more he will think that we are afraid of him." Mu Chen smiled.

"Confuse your enemy with your weakness when you are in fact stronger than they thought. You are so cunning." Lin Jing gave him a sly grin.

"The enemy is stronger than us. I had to put some thought into it."

Mu Chen smiled while staring at Lin Jing with a more serious look on his face. "You should know that Liu Ming is stronger than us. Although you and I have already started on the Sovereign-level, we have yet to cultivate our own Sovereign Celestial Body so our combat capacity is much weaker. For Nine Nether, she can only stall that Grade Five Sovereign elder. If there is any unexpected situation, you must leave when I ask you to."

Lin Jing was not very happy when she heard this. But after seeing his serious expression, she pursed her lips and said reluctantly, "Alright."

Mu Chen nodded with a smile and said nothing further. He closed his eyes and entered into cultivation mode.

After Nine Nether spoke with Lin Jing for a while, she leaned against the window and rested with her eyes closed. She did not enter into cultivation mode because she had to constantly stay alert no matter whether they were safe in the city or not.

As for Lin Jing, she covered her mouth with her hand while she was yawning. Subsequently, she slept with peace of mind, as if all the dangers were none of her concern.

The night passed quietly.

The next day, Mu Chen did not make any moves until sunset. In general, most people would let their guard down during the

intersections of day and night. Consequently, he chose this time to leave the inn together with Nine Nether and Lin Jing. They joined the crowd and made their way to exit the city.

When they left the inn, a juvenile was holding a teacup in one of the tea pavilions within the city. A chilly smile suddenly formed at the corners of his lips.

He waved his hand, and the handmaiden who was giving him a gentle massage left the room. He stood up with a slight chilliness in his eyes as he looked in the direction where the city gate was.

"What a naive lad! He thinks he can escape from my grasp?" He smirked and swung his hand. The black-robed elder appeared from behind like a ghost.

"Elder Mu, let's get on with it."

The black-robed elder nodded expressionlessly. The air around them suddenly vibrated, and they vanished gradually into thin air.

While they disappeared, Heart Fox Fairy was cuddling a white fox in a courtyard within the city. Suddenly she gave an alluring smile.

"A good show will be on soon." She gently put the white fox down and smiled at the person behind her. "Let's go. We will follow them secretly. I've got a feeling that Liu Ming will not get his way easily."

The common-looking middle-aged man appeared behind her. With a shake of their bodies, they, too, vanished into thin air.

Three groups of people disappeared and left the city quietly without alarming anyone.

A ruby red evening sun was hanging in the sky. Scarlet rays shrouded the land as the temperature cooled.

Shoo.

A rush of air-rending sound rang across the ruby red sky as three

light beams swept across it. They were flitting towards somewhere far away at an alarming speed.

They seemed to be pushing their speed to the limit to avoid a pursuer behind them.

Their full speed lasted for almost an hour before they gradually slowed down, and the three of them landed on a hilltop.

Mu Chen raised his head and looked towards the sky behind him. He suddenly smiled and said, "Both of you have been secretly following us for half a day. Aren't you tired?"

"Haha, looks like you knew about it way earlier."

When Mu Chen finished laughing, a soft and gentle voice came from the vast land. On a hilltop not far away, space was slightly twisted, and two figures appeared in the air like ghosts.

It was Liu Ming from Tian Xuan Hall and that Grade Five Sovereign black-robed elder.

He looked at Mu Chen playfully before he started looking at the surroundings. "Oh well, I see you have found a good place for your own grave."

"How do you know it isn't for you?" Mu Chen smiled. In his pitch-dark eyes, a cold, sharp radiance was gathering within.

"Looks like you are very confident of yourself."

Liu Ming said with a faint smile, "If you are feeling confident just because you have a Grade Four Sovereign beauty by your side, I'm afraid you are going to be disappointed."

Liu Ming stretched out his hand towards Mu Chen. "Give me your Void Great Solar Fruit before I get furious. If your attitude pleases me, I might let you off."

Mu Chen did not answer his question. Instead, he asked him back, "How about your Undying Divine Leaf and Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art? Did you bring them along with you?"

The smile on Liu Ming's face gradually disappeared. He looked at Mu Chen expressionlessly. "You have given up your last chance."

"You talk too much." Mu Chen laughed.

"Hehe." Lin Jing was sneering at Liu Ming with her mouth covered, adding to the mockery towards Liu Ming.

"Elder Mu, just do it." Liu Ming looked down a little, and the smile on his face became horrifying. "No mercy for them."

The black-robed elder walked forward, lowering both of his hands in his sleeves. His pale face was exuding chilliness into the air.

A strong and intense Spiritual Energy Windstorm was released from his body. The dark spiritual energy swept the ground, bringing down the temperature drastically. The spiritual energy exuded from the black-robed elder had an extremely chilly fluctuation.

The hilltop he was standing on gradually collapsed under his spiritual fluctuation. A huge crack slowly formed and spread across the entire mountain.

Just a little pressure from spiritual energy could collapse a mountain. The force from a Grade Five Sovereign was that daunting.

Mu Chen watched as his eyes became a little dignified. This was the first time he was facing a Grade Five Sovereign, and that energy was really compelling.

Nine Nether, who was standing beside him, moved swiftly. Her majestic energy exploded while the space twisted. A giant black sparrow, huge enough to conceal the sun, appeared above her.

On the black sparrow, a purple flame was flaring up.

"Divine Beast?"

Liu Ming and the black-robed elder had a stern look in their eyes

when the huge black sparrow appeared.

The black-robed elder stared at Nine Nether and said in a husky voice, "No wonder you are confident. That's because your actual body is a Divine Beast."

Usually a Grade Four Sovereign would not dare to compete with a Grade Five Sovereign, as the difference in just one grade was huge. But it was slightly different when it came to a Divine Beast. Having a stronger physical body and some gifted advantages, the powerful Divine Beast could be much stronger than those of the same grade.

Liu Ming knit his eyebrows before he stepped out, locking on Mu Chen with his cold eyes. "Elder Mu, you will suppress her while I will deal personally with this lad."

The black-robed elder nodded. Even though it was beyond his expectation that the girl in front of him was actually a Divine Beast, both of them were still one grade apart in terms of their strength. It may be hard to kill each other, but suppressing should not be too hard.

Liu Ming looked at Mu Chen and said calmly, "I did not feel any Sovereign Celestial Body fluctuation from you. So I think you have not cultivated your own Sovereign Celestial Body, right?"

Mu Chen did not reply.

"Well, that's too bad because you will never get a chance to cultivate it." Liu Ming sighed with false pity. Suddenly he stomped his foot, and his eyes turned ruthless within a split second.

"But before you die, I will show you the true power of the Sovereign Celestial Body!"

Boom!

The vast expanse of spiritual energy soared into the sky, enveloping the sky and the sun. The scarlet spiritual energy that gathered fiercely around Liu Ming eventually turned into a giant scarlet figure about a thousand feet tall.

A fire was burning around that figure and from far, it looked like an enormous lava giant who had just fallen from the sky.

The temperature around the area surged exponentially.

"Heavenly Flame Celestial Body!"

Chapter 659: First Battle in the Great Thousand World

A giant, burning with red flames, stood on the ground, as if it was going to melt the ground away. An indescribably violent scorching storm started to rage.

Liu Ming's body disappeared completely inside of the red giant. Once the sovereign celestial body was activated, it would form the most perfect defense, protecting Liu Ming, who was inside.

The sovereign celestial body provided the perfect means to both attack and defend. This was also the main reason why all of the sovereigns would use a lot of effort to seek it out.

The eyes of the red giant also opened slowly at that exact moment, fire burning within them. In the meantime, Liu Ming's loud voice, which was full of killing intent, spread in the air.

"Now, do you know what is despair?"

The sovereign celestial body provided a very significant enhancement to the combat force of any sovereign. Therefore, when Liu Ming realized that Mu Chen had not even cultivated his sovereign celestial body, he lowered his guard completely.

The sovereign celestial body that he had cultivated was called the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body, which was ranked 97th among the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies. Although its rank was almost the lowest, it would still be very foolish for anyone to look down on it.

In the Great Thousand World, all the sovereign celestial bodies in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies ranking were incredibly powerful. After all, the cultivation method for a sovereign celestial body would be considered as top secret for any clan or force, and as such, would not be given to outsiders easily.

Thus, most of the sovereign masters could only obtain the cultivation methods for some ordinary sovereign celestial bodies.

Some could even just use the most common method, condensing the sovereign celestial body with their own spiritual energy. In that case, there would simply not be any special powers involved.

For example, the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body that Liu Ming had cultivated required him to merge his own spiritual energy with the Heavenly Flame perfectly, before he could successfully cultivate it. The more powerful sovereign celestial bodies would provide the user with a shocking power that would really allow him to fight people of higher grades. Hence, after Liu Ming knew that Mu Chen had not cultivated his sovereign celestial body, he believed that the battle already had an unshakable outcome.

"The Heavenly Flame Celestial Body, right..."

Mu Chen also raised his head at that moment, in order to stare solemnly at the red giant, which was now standing on the ground. This Liu Ming obviously had more than just his mouth, as it was also evident that he indeed had a very strong power, too. With such a strong sovereign celestial body, he would probably even be among the top of all the grade one sovereigns.

"Can you deal with it?" Nine Nether gazed at Mu Chen with some worry in her eyes. Originally, she had thought that Liu Ming had only cultivated a normal sovereign celestial body. However, she did not expect that this guy could actually successfully cultivate the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body.

"You just need to stop that old man. Even if we fail, we can run away," Mu Chen said softly.

"Be careful." Nine Nether nodded gently and spoke no more. In her long eyes, some coldness was seen. Then, she moved and appeared directly on top of the giant black sparrow, after which, she flew away quickly into the distance.

Seeing the scene, the old man in black robes also smiled faintly, then moved his body, vanishing directly. When he reappeared, he was already in front of Nine Nether. As he waved his sleeves, a

storm started to rage in the sky.

When Nine Nether and the old man in black robes were facing against each other, Mu Chen also started to focus fully on the red giant before him. This was the first time he was using his own powers to fight a real sovereign master.

"Take care of yourself," Mu Chen said to Lin Jing, before also dashing out. He stood in mid-air and stomped his foot suddenly. The space behind him became somewhat distorted and vague, as if it was a vast sea that could be faintly seen. And in the sea, a frightful purple spiritual energy was whizzing around.

"I'll let you see the true power of the sovereign celestial body!" The sovereign celestial body that Liu Ming had turned into reached out its giant hand, its red finger pushing down in the air.

Bang!

After its finger pressed down, the space seemed to be distorted, and a red beam of light, which was a few thousand feet large, was ejected. The beam of light was exceptionally viscous, like magma. On the beam, a red flame was flaring, and it appeared to be incredibly violent.

This was formed by Liu Ming, who only pointed into the air without much effort. It was far more powerful than the strongest strike from Ji Xuan at that time! This was the real power being displayed after the cultivating of the sovereign celestial body!

Mu Chen lifted his head. Staring at the magma beam, which was now flying towards him, he took in a deep breath. His robes started to swing, even without wind, and were giving out a fluttering sound. His look suddenly became stern and cold.

He waved his sleeves, and a monstrous purple light surged in the distorted space behind him. An eye-catching purple waterfall also swept out, eventually colliding hard with the red spiritual energy.

Dong!

The two smashed into each other, resulting in an earthshaking noise that spread instantly. A spiritual energy hurricane swept across, resulting in many huge cracks' bursting out on the ground below.

In the sky, Mu Chen still stood facing the wind. His body was covered with brilliant purple light, and purple flames were soaring in his black eyes. He had actually stopped Liu Ming's attack by relying on the powers of his own spiritual energy.

"You can actually block my Heavenly Flame spiritual energy?!" Some surprise appeared in the eyes of the red giant.

Obviously, Liu Ming could not believe in such an outcome. The spiritual energy he had cultivated was fused with the Heavenly Flame, and its power was far stronger than ordinary sovereign spiritual energy, as it was particularly overbearing. However, it was actually blocked by Mu Chen at the moment.

"So, actually, your spiritual energy is somewhat strange."

Liu Ming was very observant, and quickly discovered that the purple spiritual energy that was hovering around Mu Chen was rather special. Even the Heavenly Flame in his spiritual energy could not suppress the purple flames, which were flaring quietly.

On a mountain peak in the distance, two figures also appeared at that moment. A charming lady in a white fox fur coat stared at the battle in the distance, some surprise flashing in her pretty eyes, as she said softly, "The spiritual energy of the young man seems to be quite unique."

"It should have been mixed with a very strong type of flame," the middle-aged man beside her also remarked in surprise. "It's no wonder that, even though he has not cultivated his sovereign celestial body, he dares to challenge Liu Ming. He indeed has great abilities."

"It's too early to make a conclusion now. Liu Ming's Heavenly

Flame Celestial Body is not an ordinary sovereign celestial body," the charming lady smiled and said.

Hearing this, the middle-aged man also nodded in agreement. As they spoke, in the distance, Mu Chen suddenly ascended high into the air. In the next instant, he actually appeared directly in front of the red giant, a red light manifesting from the top of his head, then soaring up into the sky. An astonishing demonic force had filled the air.

"I will not just block your Heavenly Flame spiritual energy, I will also crush your Heavenly Flame Celestial Body!"

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar appeared in the red light. It expanded rapidly, as it moved against the wind and grew to a thousand feet large. It stood in the sky, like a primordial evil artifact.

Mu Chen's hands acted as if they were holding something, and he swung the Great Meru Demonic Pillar directly. Without hesitation, he smacked the pillar forcefully towards the head of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. The terrifying power even caused the space to shatter, resulting in some tiny cracks to surface.

With Mu Chen's strength and the aid of the power from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, the attack was already shockingly powerful. Even Heart Fox Fairy and the middle-aged man, who were watching the battle from afar, were slightly shocked by the attack.

"Humph!"

A cold humph came from the mouth of the red giant. He clenched his fist, and a red flame swept across, which then turned directly into an enormous red, burning spear. The spear then tore through the sky, bringing about a sea of fire, which eventually impacted hard with the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

Clang!

A thunder-like metallic sound was heard immediately. The sound

waves spread like a storm, causing a violent hurricane in the sky. Mu Chen was blown backwards. Every time his feet landed, it would cause the surrounding air to explode directly. While he flew backwards, the red giant actually also backed up a step, trembling, which then caused a mountain to flatten directly!

"Such an unbelievable strength..."

In the distance, the middle-aged man commented on the scene, shocked. Clearly, he had not expected that Mu Chen could actually use the strength of his body to fight directly against Liu Ming, who had summoned his sovereign celestial body.

"This young man is not simple," Heart Fox Fairy said, as some surprise also flashed across her eyes.

A fierce fire started burning in the eyes of the red giant, which Liu Ming had obviously turned into. In the next moment, he stomped his foot, the ground crumbled, and his large body dashed out like lightning.

At that moment, a red flame enveloped the sky, appearing like the radiant clouds at sunset. Obviously, Liu Ming had started to activate the powers of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body completely.

Against Mu Chen's stubborn resistance, he was already furious.

"You actually want to use your body to fight against my sovereign celestial body. How foolish!"

Liu Ming's gloomy voice spread in the sky like thunder. Just then, the red spear turned into many spear shadows, which blotted out the sky and the earth. They brought along with them a violent sea of fire, which started to engulf its way towards Mu Chen. The entire region within tens of thousands of feet was filled with the terrifying attack.

Mu Chen stared at the incoming spear shadows, which now covered the sky. Every spear shadow seemed to be real, and the

power each contained was sufficient to tear the ground apart, and even to break a mountain into pieces.

His look became increasingly solemn. Then, his hands started to form a seal.

Bang!

The sound of thunder spread, and a bright lightning flashed wildly on Mu Chen's body. His body broadened, and on his chest, nine lightning runes appeared. The nine lightning runes seemed to be more condensed than before, making them appear almost real.

"Let me see..."

Lightning flashed on Mu Chen's body. His black eyes turned colder and more penetrating. He licked his lips, and the corners of his mouth curled up, filled with fighting spirit.

"How strong are sovereign celestial bodies exactly?!"

Mu Chen's hands appeared to hug something, as he controlled the Great Meru Demonic Pillar directly, then dashed out. Lightning and purple flames swept across the place. Under the monstrous sea of fire, his body was as small as an ant.

However, it was still filled with a towering fighting spirit that no one could have any contempt for!

My first battle in the Great Thousand World will start with you!

Chapter 660: The Battle against Liu Ming

Scarlet red flames engulfed the horizon. It was as if the sky were about to be set ablaze.

In the midst of the sea of flames, a gigantic flaming gun was rapidly fired. The blaze blanketed the sky and the land. The whole place was painted in a raging, fiery light. It was an extremely terrifying blitz.

However, despite facing such staggering offensive outbursts, Mu Chen did not show any signs of defeat. He clenched his hands tightly around the Great Meru Demonic Pillar and dashed forward as the majestic purple spiritual energy began soaring up into the sky. Finally, he brandished the Great Meru Demonic Pillar and whirled the flames around.

Bang! Bang!

An earth-shattering collision erupted in the sky. Mu Chen's silhouette seemed tiny before the shadows of the enormous monstrous flame gun. Under the brandishing of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, the countless strobes of flaming gun shadows were shattered into pieces.

A burning inferno pervaded the air.

The figure recoiled every time a strobe of flaming gun shadow was shattered, but he displayed no sign of evasion and faced the threat head-on. It was incredibly remarkable to see.

Below, Lin Jing continuously retreated as she gaped at the rampaging flames. However, her beautiful, button-like eyes were stupefied yet mesmerized by the silhouette whose fighting spirit was further ignited as he fought vigorously against the enemies.

Although the young man was almost her age, it felt as if nothing could extinguish his fiery passion and will to fight. He was unstoppable. Even if an unyielding mountain stood before him, it

was clear that he would not hold back.

Such great tenacity seemed rather irksome.

The middle-aged man, who had been watching the battle attentively from afar, suddenly uttered, "This young man... I am afraid that he will be a tough nut to crack in the future.

"Although I have no clue about his background, I could guarantee that he has relied solely on his own capabilities and powers to achieve such outstanding results at such an age.

"This is because it is difficult for a young powerhouse who is dependant on his clan's resources to possess his level of fighting spirit and boldness."

After hearing the comments from the middle-aged man, Heart Fox Fairy softly bit her luscious red lips. Her beautiful eyes gazed at the retreating, slender silhouette in the midst of the blazing flames. She muttered immediately, "He is truly courageous, but it is not enough to rely on mere courage to win a battle against Liu Ming.

"The formidable force of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body has yet been fully unleashed."

The middle-aged man nodded slightly and sighed. "If this young man possesses the Sovereign Celestial Body, even if it is of an ordinary level, I am afraid that Liu Ming will not have any advantage in today's battle."

Heart Fox Fairy nodded daintily.

Boom!

Under the brandishing of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, the terrifying force shattered the fiery rain of flaming gun shadows once again. However, the impact from the quake caused Mu Chen's arms to tremble. Fresh blood started trickling from his palms.

He took two steps back and stomped his feet to maintain his

balance. The lightning that surrounded him flickered madly.

Although his expression remained calm, his eyes shone with determination. After the previous head-on battle, he finally had a taste of the powers of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. If he had not trained his Thunder God physique to the level of an Ennea Rune Lighting physique, the multiple head-on attacks would probably have been sufficient to severely injure him.

Even so, his internal vital energy was currently unstable.

A gigantic blazing red shadow was erected in the skies. Liu Ming fixed his eyes on Mu Chen. Cold light flickered sinisterly in his eyes. However, his gaze looked a little sullen.

Evidently, Mu Chen had ultimately exceeded his expectations because he was able to endure his attacks for so long by purely relying on his own powers.

"That explains the arrogance in his tone. He does have some tricks up his sleeve," Liu Ming's strident voice thundered through the battlegrounds as the gigantic blazing shadow looked down at Mu Chen, who was as small as an ant.

Mu Chen's expression remained calm. He lifted his head and looked at the oppressive-looking giant shadow. He laughed, "It is just your Sovereign Celestial Body. It is not as scary as I had imagined it to be."

"Really?"

Liu Ming's voice had a dash of sarcasm, but he said nothing more. His huge palm suddenly bore a seal, and following its transformation, the scorching red flames blotted out the sky and the land as they gathered in his palm.

A violent, blustering heat wave began to pervade the air.

"Why don't you try to catch this?"

Cold beams flared from the eyes of the Heavenly Flame Celestial

Body. With a sudden thunderous clap, the heavenly flames started spreading like wildfire, and the void began to distort. A flaming palm print that enveloped almost half of the sky hurled down unexpectedly.

"Heavenly Flaming Palm of the Burning Sea!"

The palm landed and crumbled the ground beneath it. Mountains were flattened to the ground and forests were burned to ashes. The force was extremely devastating.

Looking at the current situation, Mu Chen's expression merely changed a little. At the same time, both of his hands formed a seal with lightning speed. With a slight jerk of his sleeves, earth-shattering green rays beamed out, and a black, thorny forest sprouted from the ground where the rays had touched.

Mu Chen uttered in his heart, "Wood Divine Scripture!" The black, thorny forests instantly transformed into countless beams of green rays that soared to the sky as they finally gathered toward Mu Chen. It was as if the green rays were transformed into an emerald ocean. It was filled with vitality.

"Heavenly Divine Wood Wheel!"

Mu Chen's seal transformed again. The emerald ocean started whirling at high speed before it transformed into an enormous Green Wooden Wheel of Rays. Mu Chen pointed his finger at the void, and then it disappeared into thin air. All that was left in the space in front of him was a long black trail.

He sneered!

The speed of the Green Wooden Wheel of Rays was indescribably quick. In a flash, it appeared beneath the flaming palm and started attacking it head-on without any sign of hesitation.

The battle was surprisingly silent. The high-speed spinning Green Wooden Wheel of Rays unleashed its extremely terrifying abilities of spatial piercing. With a slight touch, it was able to

impale the flaming palm and instantly dash toward the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body.

"Go away!"

A chilling scream emanated from the insides of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. A giant fist charged forward as it ignited a rampaging sea of flames in its violent attack against the Green Wooden Wheel of Rays.

Squeak! Squeak!

A shrill sound resonated in the air. The Green Wooden Wheel of Rays and the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body remained in a deadlock. The impact between the two powerful forces had distorted the space around them.

Thump! Thump!

Such a deadlock caused Liu Ming to rage in burning fury. Mu Chen had defended his attacks again and again. In his eyes, this was a form of humiliation. Flames started blazing madly in his eyes. A scorching red blaze immediately shrouded his humongous body before surging forward like a Fire Dragon and devouring the Green Wooden Wheel of Rays.

Bang!

Unfortunately, the Green Wooden Wheel of Rays was still unable to resist such brutal attacks. It exploded into pieces and was finally burned to dust.

Boom!

Although Liu Ming gained better ground with this single move, he did not give Mu Chen any respite. As he struck his two fists, a tsunami of scarlet red transformed into two Blazing Red Fire Dragons and began to surge violently toward Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's body retreated again. Beams of majestic purple spiritual energy lashed forward in an attempt to block the attacks

from the Blazing Red Fire Dragon, but the attempts were to no avail as they ended up getting burned into ashes.

At that very moment, Liu Ming was obviously unleashing the full powers of the Heavenly Fire Celestial Body.

Boom!

The Blazing Red Fire Dragon moved at lightning speed. Mu Chen avoided the attacks several times but in the end, he was unable to retreat any further. The Fire Dragon surged toward him and knocked down all the spiritual energy from his body.

Bang!

Mu Chen's body received a critical hit. He started falling down before violently crashing into the ground. The violent impact caused the ground to crumble.

"I thought you were strong? Do you want to try it again?"

Upon seeing how Mu Chen was finally severely injured, Liu Ming started laughing coldly. He stared at the sinkhole. His eyes shone with a desire to kill, and he showed no sign of holding back. As he gripped his fist, a towering, flaming longspear began to gather in his arms. In a swish, it pierced through the void and charged toward the sinkhole.

Swish.

However, just as the gigantic flaming spear was about to pierce through the sinkhole, a beautiful feminine figure suddenly appeared in midair. Her slender hands started forming a seal, and majestic beams of spiritual energy gushed out as it formed a giant water shield. Whirlpools swirled on the water shield.

"Shield of Flowing Waters!"

Bang!

The flaming longspear impaled the water shield and erupted in a violent energy wave. However, most of the energy was devoured

by the whirlpools on the water shield.

After the flaming longspear disappeared, Lin Jiao's tiny figure merely trembled a little. Meanwhile, the water shield exploded with a loud bang as it had reached its limit.

"Oh? Another person who has not cultivated the Sovereign Celestial Body, but I will not hold back just because you are a woman." Looking at the current situation, Liu Ming smiled sinisterly. As he waved his palms, a colossal flaming longspear formed again and started charging toward her.

Lin Jing peered at the sudden attack. She clenched her jaw but had no intention of retreating. She took a deep breath, and an azure river began gushing out of her mouth. An extremely vast spiritual energy wave emanated from the river.

The river was rather peculiar. It seemed like it was made up of some form of spiritual energy, but at the same time, it emanated energy waves similar to those of a Divine Artifact...

The azure river surrounded Lin Jing like a perfect shield.

Boom! Boom!

Beams of flaming longspear ripped open the void. Rogue waves splattered as the rain of flaming longspears was rapidly fired upon the river. As the shield took in numerous terrifying attacks, Lin Jing's face started looking a little pale.

Bang!

After the azure river devoured the final beam of flaming longspear, it began to turn dull, and finally transformed into a mere stream as it returned into Lin Jing's mouth.

She lifted her face and stared coldly at the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. She scoffed, "So, is that all you've got?"

"I wonder if you can last any longer!" Liu Ming snickered coldly, and his gaze was filled with the overwhelming desire to kill. Lin

Jing had acted beyond his expectations. However, she clearly could not compete against his Heavenly Flame Celestial Body.

The girl in front of him was merely putting up a desperate fight.

"Hmm?"

However, just as Liu Ming was prepared to kill her, he froze and abruptly turned his gaze toward the sinkhole where a disturbing fluctuation of energy silently appeared.

Chapter 661: The Form of Three Lotuses

Boom!

The earth seemed to tremble, and in the sky, the Scarlet Flame Giant that Liu Ming had transformed into, gazed in shock at the collapsing earth below. Faintly, he felt some strange waves emanating from beneath the earth.

"That fellow still has energy to spare?"

Liu Ming's eyes were chilling, as his previous attacks should have dealt severe damage to Mu Chen. The raging Heavenly Flame in his spiritual energy should have increased the brutality of his offensive attacks, and it should have dealt heavy damage when it invaded Mu Chen's body.

However, seeing the scene now...

"What tricks are you up to now?" A cold glint surged in Liu Ming's eyes.

As he let out a low growl, scarlet red flames in his spiritual energy spewed out of his mouth, like magma, transforming into magma flame dragons. The flame dragons circled the sky in a dance, absorbing the spiritual energy in the heavens and earth wildly, as their bodies expanded swiftly, unleashing their might as they roared.

Upon seeing this, Lin Jing's spiritual energy surged out, then transformed into a spiritual energy light rainbow. The rainbow soared across the sky in an attempt to resist the magma flame dragons.

However, these magma flame dragons were not directed towards her this time, and dodged her barricade agilely, bursting towards the crumbled earth below. Clearly, Liu Ming did not intend to give Mu Chen an opportunity to counterattack.

Boom!

The magma flame dragons stormed down, dealing a direct blow to the collapsing earth, causing it to crumble apart. The magma seemed to melt the earth, as scarlet red flames circled the earth. Then, the earth began to melt, layer by layer.

Buzz!

As the violent magma continued to melt the earth, a black ray of light suddenly penetrated through the earth. As the dark light permeated the space, the violent magma was rapidly extinguished.

In the sky, Liu Ming's pupils contracted. Lin Jing's eyes blinked in surprise at the scene.

On a mountain in the distance, shock flit across Heart Fox Fairy's seductive eyes, as she gazed at the land, which was being thrown into chaos, then whispered, "There seem to be some unusual fluctuations..."

The middle-aged man beside her also frowned, his eyes becoming more solemn as he said, "It seems to be the fluctuations of a Spiritual Array?" What's going on here?"

In the midst of their dismay, a shadow slowly floated up in the crumbling earth, then he stood in a position a few feet above the ground and raised his head, his handsome face nonchalant.

Indeed, this figure was Mu Chen. His clothes were torn and he was in an embarrassing state, but his dark eyes were as calm as still waters. He gazed at the Scarlet Flame figure in the sky silently, a dangerous light flashing in the depth of his eyes.

"What a fortunate fellow!" Upon seeing that Mu Chen was safe and sound, Liu Ming sneered coldly.

Mu Chen glanced at him, but remained silent, as he gradually lifted his hands and clasped them together in front of his chest, conjuring up an especially complex but familiar seal.

"Array, activate!"

Accompanied by Mu Chen's quiet command, the earth immediately shook violently, as huge cracks began to spread on the earth below him. Within the cracks, black rays of light emerged wildly. As the earth began to sink, mud scattered everywhere. In just a few moments, a massive deep pit, the depth of which was around a thousand feet, formed on the earth.

The massive pit was so deep, that it seemed to be endless. As Mu Chen hovered above it, Liu Ming's gaze was frozen upon the massive pit, as he saw three huge black light lotuses suspended quietly within it.

Countless rays of light emanated from the three black light lotuses, as they intertwined with each other to form an indecipherable battle array that was dizzying to others. Then, a terrifying fluctuation silently spread, permeating the massively deep pit. It was as if the three black lotuses were demonic beasts, looming in the darkness, emitting a chilling aura amid the silence.

"That's..." Lin Jing stared at the three huge black lotuses in terror.

"A Spiritual Array?"

On a mountain in the distance, the charming expression of the Heart Fox Fairy twisted in disbelief for the first time, as she stared, fixated on the massive Spiritual Array that had been formed with the three black lotuses, her ample bosom heaving lightly.

"This fellow is actually a Spiritual Array Grandmaster!" The middle-aged man gasped, failing to conceal the shock in his voice. No wonder he had felt an unusual fluctuation before, it had come from the Spiritual Array that was hidden within the ground that had been set up by Mu Chen!

"This Spiritual Array, I'm afraid it has reached the quality of a First Grade Being."

Spiritual Array Grandmasters were categorized into the three

categories of Heaven, Earth, and Being. In each category, there were Three Grades, which were aligned with the Nine Grades of Sovereigns. A Spiritual Array Grandmaster, who was ranked as a First Grade Being, was equal to a true First Grade Sovereign.

However, it was apparent that, in the Great Thousand World, a Spiritual Array Grandmaster, who was ranked as a First Grade Being, was much more rare than a First Grade Sovereign. Furthermore, anyone knew that, as long as a Spiritual Array Grandmaster successfully set up a powerful Spiritual Array, a Sovereign of the same grade would be defeated.

Prior to this, Mu Chen was seemingly defeated, as he careened into the ground. However, he used Liu Ming's attack to set up a Spiritual Array covertly, as the crumbling earth acted as a cover.

"An excellent strategy and a strong sense of battle plans." The middle-aged man couldn't help but to commend the tactics in awe. In comparison to the young man before him, Liu Ming's battle strategies were like child's play.

This time, even Heart Fox Fairy nodded in assent, her beautiful eyes glinting as she stared at the young man's figure, which was still suspended above the deep pit.

"I'm afraid this battle has already reached its conclusion. Although Liu Ming possesses the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body, the Spiritual Array that the boy has set up is not to be underestimated."

From the three black lotuses, he could sense dangerous fluctuations emitting. It was not as if he had not seen a Sixth Grade Spiritual Array, but still, such extremely rare Spiritual Arrays could indeed stir up a real sense of danger in him.

As they spoke, Mu Chen, who had been hovering in the air, lifted his head, glancing at Lin Jing and saying softly, "Lin Jing, step back a little."

The girl nodded, as she retreated backwards.

Mu Chen then turned towards Liu Ming, a cold smirk appearing on his face, as he remarked, "Although I lack a Sovereign celestial body, at least I have this."

His slender fingers pointed towards the Spiritual Array below them, the Spiritual Array that had been formed by three black lotuses, which was the "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array". This Spiritual Array's most evolved form could cultivate and condense four black lotuses, and the Mu Chen in the past could only cultivate two lotuses.

However, after he had advanced into the Sovereign-stage, and received training under Ling Xi, his cultivation in Spiritual Arrays had improved by leaps and bounds, resulting in his unknowingly becoming a Spiritual Array Grandmaster. Even Nine Nether was not aware of this hidden move up his sleeve.

Flames flickered in the eyes of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body that Liu Ming had transformed into, but he no longer scoffed at the scene before him, as he could sense the fluctuations from the Spiritual Array that unsettled him deeply. He had never expected Mu Chen to be a Spiritual Array Grandmaster!

"Damn it!"

He cursed in his heart. If he knew that this would have happened, he would not have let Mu Chen out of his sight, nor let him have the chance to set up such a powerful Spiritual Array out of negligence.

"Now... Let me see if your Sovereign celestial body is more powerful, or if my Spiritual Array is superior."

Mu Chen smiled. As the seals he had conjured changed, a low roar emanated from within his heart.

"Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array, activate!"

Whoosh!

Black rays of light, appearing as if they were ten thousand feet long, surged out from within the Spiritual Array, enveloping the atmosphere. The three black lotuses within the Spiritual Array turned darker, as if formed from black ink.

As the fluctuations in the Spiritual Array grew to their most intense, the three black lotuses materialized, then left the Spiritual Array gradually. The three black lotuses slowly hovered in the air, looming around Mu Chen, twisting and distorting the space greatly.

Liu Ming glared at the three black lotuses, his feeling of unease growing increasingly stronger, even giving him an impulse to turn around and escape. Fortunately, he suppressed this desire to flee.

"I don't believe that you can defeat my Heavenly Flame Celestial Body!"

Liu Ming stated chillingly. He had once fought with a First Grade Being Spiritual Array Grandmaster, without being reduced to an embarrassing defeat, so as long as he could withstand this Spiritual Array, he could definitely defeat Mu Chen. He was determined that he would not give him another chance, nor time, to set up another Spiritual Array!

"Heavenly Flame Armor!"

Liu Ming bellowed. Suddenly, there was a dazzling scarlet red light, which emanated from the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. Burning magma flowed out, solidified, and then transformed into a huge scarlet red armor, as if it was the strongest defense in the world.

In the face of the mysterious Black Lotuses Spiritual Array, Liu Ming had activated the strongest defense of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body to combat it. Mu Chen gazed calmly at Liu Ming, who had activated his strong defense. As his slender fingers pointed in the air, right where his fingers landed, ripples of motion spread within the space.

"Go."

As his fingers landed, Mu Chen's glance turned sharp and cold, like the edge of a dagger.

Whoosh!

The three black lotuses trembled violently, as a buzz emerged, which then caused them to conjoin and soar across the sky, like a black meteor, overcoming the restraints of space at an indescribably swift speed.

In a flash, it appeared before the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. Without any pause or hesitation, the three black lotuses clashed harshly with it. The three black lotuses had collided with the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body head-on!

Chapter 662: Unforeseen Events

Dong!

The three black lotuses raced across the sky and finally collided with the huge shadow covered in magma armor. Surprisingly, at the instant of impact no deafening sounds were produced.

Black light burst out like liquid and eventually moved along the magma armor at a shocking speed, corroding the armor along the way. Wherever the black liquid touched, the magma was extinguished instantaneously and slowly abated.

There were no earthshaking explosions, but that silent corrosion contained a frightening power.

It was as if Liu Ming's Heavenly Flame Celestial Body had turned stiff. His burning eyes stared at the black light that was spreading like ink on his giant body. In the depths of his eyes, intense horror could be seen.

He realized that his Heavenly Flame Celestial Body was rapidly losing its strength in the places where the black light had spread. It appeared as if even the Sovereign Celestial Body was being contaminated.

"D*mn it, what spiritual array is this?!"

Panic surged out from Liu Ming's heart. Just then, he clenched his teeth tightly, and a deep roar emanated from his throat. The spiritual energy around him started to boil, and more magma gushed out on the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. The magma rushed towards the bizarre, spreading black light like a magma torrent.

Sizzle!

The two powers collided hard into each other, and a white mist burst out.

The red magma released its violent power wildly in an attempt to eliminate the liquid-like black light, but the latter moved on closely like maggots feeding on a corpse. It did not appear to be powerful, but it still continued to corrode the magma torrent bit by bit at a slow yet steady pace.

Mu Chen watched the scene with a cold look. Then his seals changed again, and a low voice projected from his mouth. "Black Lotus Corrosion!"

Buzz!

As his seals changed, the corrosion rate of the black liquid suddenly increased. In the span of a dozen breaths, half of the huge Heavenly Flame Celestial Body was contaminated with the color of ink. The spiritual energy within these parts completely vanished.

Liu Ming's face was filled with horror. Finally, he was scared and tried to retreat but realized that his body could not move. He shouted hastily, "Kid, you dare to hurt me? Are you not afraid that my Tian Xuan Hall will chase you to the end of the world?"

Mu Chen was emotionless and ignored him. The speed of the corrosion increased.

Seeing that his threat was not only useless, but instead caused Mu Chen to strengthen his determination to kill him, Liu Ming's voice quickly became more submissive, and he said, "Wait, I admit defeat this time. I will give you the Undying Divine Leaf and the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art!"

He stared at Mu Chen. However, Mu Chen's black eyes were filled with ridicule. Mu Chen looked as if he were mocking Liu Ming's foolish act.

"Now that you say this..."

Mu Chen raised his slender palm slowly, and then clenched it with a cold look on his face. "You really are as stupid as a donkey!"

Since they had already become enemies, Mu Chen would

naturally not show any mercy at all. He knew doing so would bring him a lot of trouble. The clan behind Liu Ming was indeed powerful enough to put him in a serious predicament. Thus, since he had the chance, he would not be so silly as to think that this kind of event could be settled peacefully.

Vroom!

The liquid-like black light spread rapidly. In the end, it moved up along the neck of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body and then spread across its face, covering the huge celestial body completely.

The Heavenly Flame Celestial Body instantly solidified. Liu Ming's mouth had been about to roar and threaten but suddenly turned stiff. The spiritual energy around him that was originally boiling calmed down quickly as well.

The once majestic Heavenly Flame Celestial Body turned into a piece of black, cold rock just like lava that had been extinguished...

No spiritual energy could be felt.

Looking at the cold, dark, stone giant, some coldness appeared in Mu Chen's eyes again. He stomped his foot and a purple spiritual energy condensing in his palm like a storm suddenly flew out.

A killing intent surged in the spiritual energy.

"How dare you!"

Just as Mu Chen displayed his killing intent, a loud roar came from the distance. The face of the old man in black robes who had been detained by Nine Nether darkened. Obviously, he did not expect Liu Ming to actually lose to Mu Chen.

The old man in black robes backed off quickly and wanted to launch an attack at Mu Chen. If something happened to Liu Ming, the hall master of Tian Xuan Hall would definitely not let him off.

"Humph."

However, just as he backed off, a cold "humph" was heard. In the

sky, a violent gust of wind swept across, and a cloud wing burning with purple flames fell down from the sky. It struck down towards the old man in black robes like a bolt of lightning as if it were tearing the sky apart.

The terrifying fluctuation falling from above caused the expression of the old man in black robes to change. He did not dare to ignore the attack because of the frightening purple flames.

If he was hit directly, even if he was a Grade Five Sovereign, he would definitely suffer a significant injury.

Therefore, the old man in black robes could only grit his teeth and slap his palm out. It turned into a huge hand made from spiritual energy and collided with the falling cloud wing.

Dong!

A violent spiritual energy storm spread.

The instant the old man in black robes was stopped by Nine Nether, Mu Chen had already appeared in front of the extinguished magma giant. His palm, which contained a large amount of spiritual energy, smacked onto the chest of the giant like a bolt of lightning.

Bang!

Violent spiritual energy raged below Mu Chen's palm like the tides.

Crack.

Under the impact of the spiritual energy, cracks started spreading rapidly across the stiff chest of the magma giant. In just a few breaths' time, its whole body was affected and in the end, it actually burst into pieces with a loud bang.

Crushed black stones flew out all over the place. In the magma giant, a dim light also shot out in panic, and the figure within spat out a great deal of blood. Eventually, he was ejected into a

mountain, and the terrifying power even caused the peak to shatter into pieces. The figure was quickly covered by the rocks.

Mu Chen stood in midair and stared emotionlessly at the wrecked mountain. Moving his body, he appeared above the mountain, after which he waved his sleeves, and all the rocks were thrown out.

The rocks flew away, exposing the battered and bloody figure inside. He lay among the broken rocks looking weak and pale, and stared with a horrified expression at Mu Chen slowly descending toward him.

"Seems like your Heavenly Flame Celestial Body is not as strong as you have imagined," Mu Chen said tonelessly as he stared at the horrified Liu Ming.

Liu Ming's eyes were filled with viciousness.

Mu Chen ignored his look. Waving his hand, the Mustard Seed Bracelet on Liu Ming's wrist fell into his palm. Although he did not open it, he knew that the Undying Divine Leaf and the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art would be inside.

"Angel of fortune. You're really a good person, thanks." Mu Chen waved the bracelet in his hand at Liu Ming and gave a mocking smile.

Spit.

Liu Ming was so angry that he spat out a mouthful of blood. He stared at Mu Chen with a vicious look and said with a hoarse voice, "You really think that it's so easy to kill me? I am the next hall master of Tian Xuan Hall!"

His voice was filled with viciousness and ridicule.

Mu Chen frowned slightly, and a killing intent flashed in his eyes. Without any hesitation, he slapped out his palm, and a terrifying spiritual energy torrent rushed fiercely towards Liu Ming's head.

Seeing what was happening, Liu Ming suddenly roared, "Human-Demon Elder, you still don't want to show up? You want to wait for me to be killed by him?!"

Mu Chen's eyes narrowed slightly, but his palm went down faster and more forcefully.

Bang!

However, when his palm was about to hit Liu Ming's head, he could no longer lower his palm. It was as if the space around Liu Ming had become frozen.

Mu Chen's expression drastically changed.

"Such a cruel kid... If you kill him, I can't answer to the hall master," an old and toneless voice sounded off abruptly near Mu Chen's ears. He raised his head slowly. In the sky above the rubble, an old man in a gray shirt who was as skinny as a dry corpse was standing in midair. Mu Chen did not even know when he had appeared.

The old man in the gray shirt stared at Mu Chen with his gray pupils. His stare would cause anyone to feel uncontrollably frightened.

"That's..."

The old man in the gray shirt who had appeared all of a sudden not only caused Mu Chen's expression to change drastically, but also caused the looks from Heart Fox Fairy and the middle-aged man, who were observing the battle secretly on a distant peak, to change helplessly.

"It's the Human-Demon Elder, one of the three elders from Tian Xuan Hall... He has actually been secretly protecting Liu Ming all along. How unexpected!" Heart Fox Fairy said with a solemn look on her face.

The middle-aged man also looked very scared. The Human-Demon Elder was reputed even on the Tianluo Continent. He was a

Grade Eight Sovereign and also had a high status in Tian Xuan Hall.

"That kid can't escape this time." The middle-aged man sighed with some sympathy. Since the Human-Demon Elder had appeared, the battle was basically over.

A Grade Eight Sovereign was far beyond what they could handle at the moment.

Mu Chen stared at the old man in the gray shirt, his eyes narrowing. In the next instant, he backed off quickly and shouted, "Lin Jing, run!"

In the sky not far away, Lin Jing saw the scene and quickly retreated.

"Since you want her to leave, I will not let that happen." The old man in the gray shirt smiled. He stepped out and appeared directly in front of Lin Jing. Then his skinny hand gently slapped towards her.

Lin Jing's face turned pale. A Grade Eight Sovereign was not someone she could fight. Therefore, she could only grit her teeth and wait for the terrifying attack to land on her body.

Vroom!

However, when Lin Jing closed her eyes, a figure quickly rushed over, held her in his arms, and dashed out.

"Since you want to save someone, you will give your life first." The old man in the gray shirt sighed gently. It was as if his skinny palm penetrated through space and hit directly onto Mu Chen's back as he held Lin Jing in his arms.

Spit.

Mu Chen spat out a mouthful of blood. His back was badly mutilated, and even his bones could be seen. If he had not trained the Thunder God Physique to the Ennea Rune Lightning Physique

level, the slap would probably have made his body explode.

"Mu Chen!" Lin Jing quickly said in an urgent tone. She opened her eyes to see the scene and some blood spilled onto her face.

Mu Chen fell down, battered. However, as he was about to land, he still held the girl in his arms, and his mutilated back hit the rocks. Immediately, the sharp pain caused him to spit another mouthful of blood.

In the distance, Nine Nether saw the scene, and her eyes instantly turned red. She expanded her wings and wanted to rush over but was stopped by the old man in black robes. At once, she started to attack crazily and actually caused the old man in black robes to be thrown into a panic.

"Mu Chen, are you alright?" Lin Jing asked urgently, not caring about the bloodstain on her white face.

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and shook his head. He pushed Lin Jing and shouted, "Run!"

"No!" Lin Jing quickly held on to Mu Chen's sleeves. She knew that if she left at that moment, Mu Chen would certainly die.

"You!" Mu Chen was angry, but the sharp pain caused him to take a deep breath.

He did not expect the situation to end up like this. Ultimately, he had belittled the power of the clan behind Liu Ming. He really could not deal with such a powerful being at the moment.

"Seems like I have made a bad plan," Mu Chen said bitterly.

The old man in the gray shirt appeared before Mu Chen and Lin Jing and said with a smile, "Since you dare to kill the next hall master of Tian Xuan Hall, you are indeed not smart.

"I'll send you to hell now."

The hand of the old man in the gray shirt penetrated through space again and slapped towards Mu Chen's head.

Mu Chen gritted his teeth firmly. Some insanity could be seen in his eyes. He was about to do whatever he could and use his secret trump card, the "Immortal Page." Even if he could not escape, he would not wait to be killed.

However, just when the skinny palm of the old man in the gray shirt was about to hit Mu Chen's head, the space there seemed to flash. It was as if a bright beam of light flew across.

Swish.

A dry hand fell down quietly onto Mu Chen's body.

The old man in the gray shirt seemed to be temporarily stunned. He stared at his hand. It had been suddenly cut off. His mouth moved but no voice was heard. He did not seem to have recovered from the shock.

He lifted his head slowly. Behind Mu Chen, the space distorted gradually, and then a partially visible figure appeared.

When the figure fully appeared, a clear voice was heard. "You dare to kill the little princess of the Martial Border? You are also very stupid."

Hearing the familiar voice, Lin Jing raised her head abruptly. Surprise filled her red, intelligent eyes. Then she shouted uncontrollably, "Mother?!"

Chapter 663: The Mysterious Lady in White

"Mother?"

The space behind Mu Chen was surging, and a female figure gradually appeared. When Lin Jing shouted in surprise, the figure became clearer.

Mu Chen turned his head and looked in shock. He saw a graceful looking lady in white. She looked extremely beautiful and resembled Lin Jing. She had her hair up in a bun and looked elegant, stunning in fact.

Mu Chen was shocked to learn that the beautiful lady in white was Lin Jing's mother. They looked more like sisters.

She had chopped off the palm of the Human-demon Elder. She had said earlier...the Little Princess of Martial Border. Was she referring to Lin Jing?

Martial Border?

Mu Chen was taken aback. He looked at Lin Jing, who was in his arms. He had never expected her to have such an impressive background. Martial Border was dominant in The Great Thousand World. The founder of Martial Border, Martial Ancestor, was well-known in The Great Thousand World!

Although Tian Xuan Hall was powerful, it was nothing compared to Martial Border. Mu Chen finally understood why Lin Jing could have so many powerful Protective Spiritual Jades all over her body. She was the Little Princess of Martial Border!

"Mother, why are you here?"

Lin Jing widened her eyes and looked at the lady in white. She was elated and ran toward her.

The lady in white extended her hand and knocked Lin Jing's forehead. She snappily said, "How dare you sneak out." She looked

cold, but when she looked at the girl before her, she was filled with love for her.

"It is so boring staying at home," Lin Jing covered her forehead and said in a miserable tone.

"Your father has said that he will not let you off when you get home," scolded the mother.

"Mother, you must help me!" Lin Jing looked distressed and grabbed hold of the sleeves of the lady in white and said. "I want to learn and toughen myself up. You have seen that I have nearly lost my life."

The lady in white squinted her eyes at the mention of it and suddenly, she looked cold. She lifted up her head to look at Human-demon Elder and said flatly, "You are audacious."

"Who are you?" Human-demon elder came to himself and cried out. He had forgotten about his broken palm and looked shocked.

"Are you from Martial Border?" He asked in a hoarse voice. He suddenly remembered what he had heard earlier and his heart sank.

"Mother, don't let him off. He had wanted to kill me earlier. If not for Mu Chen, I dare not imagine what would have happened to me!" Lin Jing said angrily. Since she had someone powerful to back her up, Lin Jing would not easily let this detestable old man off.

The lady in white lowered her head and looked at Mu Chen. His back was bloody, and one could even see his bones. She smiled and said to him gently, "Young man, thank you. Are you all right?"

Mu Chen felt awkward being addressed in such a manner, and by such a youthful looking lady. He scratched his head and said with a smile, "I am fine. My skin is thick, so it is no big deal."

The lady in white saw the injuries on his back, and noticed that purple spiritual energy was surging. There were unique purple flames, and as they went past the injuries, the wounds started to

heal.

The lady in white was stunned, but she felt relieved. She turned to look at Human-demon Elder, whose expressions kept changing, and said flatly, "You are so merciless toward the two young ones. Have you no regard for Martial Border?"

Human-demon Elder shivered. He suddenly shot backward swiftly, and his afterimages traveled through the space. He appeared beside Liu Ming, who was seriously injured, then escaped with him.

Heart Fox Fairy and a middle-aged man stood in the distance and watched the scene. They shivered and looked shocked. Who is this lady in white? Why is Human-demon Elder, who has reached Grade Eight Sovereign, so afraid of her, enough to run away?

"Mother, don't let him get away!" When Lin Jing saw that Human-demon Elder was trying to escape, she quickly yelled.

The lady in white nodded her head lightly. She extended her slender hand and gently lifted it up.

Boom! Boom!

The land afar quaked, and a huge mountain raised up from the ground. The mountain was colorful and dazzling. If one had sensed carefully, he would know that this was no ordinary mountain. It was formed by pure spiritual energy, powerful beyond description.

Swoosh!

A huge Spiritual Energy Mountain uprooted itself from the ground and appeared in the horizon in a flash second. It then landed heavily on a particular place. The space suddenly froze, and two figures appeared. One of them was Human-demon Elder.

He lifted up his head in shock, then looked at the huge mountain that had just landed. He cried out in horror, "Appearance of the Heaven and Earth?"

Heart Fox Fairy and the middle-aged man turned pale. They were shocked. Only those at the Earthly Sovereign could master the Appearance of the Heaven and Earth. Was the lady in white an Earthly Sovereign?

One could easily form mountains and rivers, and even change the shape of the earth with the Appearance of the Heaven and Earth. It was mystical. Mu Chen could destroy the terrain as well, but even he was unable to create a stretch of terrain out of nothing.

Boom! Boom!

The Spiritual Energy Mountain pressed down and sealed up the space. Even Human-demon Elder was unable to move. He could only look at the mountain whizzing toward him and suppressing down heavily on his body.

Pooh.

Human-demon Elder's body was paralyzed. His bones seemed smashed, and fresh blood was spewing out. He landed together with the mountain, and was then suppressed under the ground.

The Spiritual Energy Mountain landed on the ground and was extremely tall. It was the tallest in this piece of land. Human-demon Elder was unable to move under the mountain.

Mu Chen gasped as he saw the scene. This was the first time that he have ever seen the attack of an Earthly Sovereign. It was quick and powerful.

The elderly man in black, who was fighting with Nine Nether from afar, had noticed what had happened, and was frightened out of his wits. He immediately scurried off, as he could not be bothered with the mannerism of a Sovereign Master.

However, the moment he tried to escape, he felt a horrifying power coming at him from above. His body seemed to be hit by a heavy object, and he fell to the ground, creating a large hole.

The huge Nine Netherworld Bird speedily reduced in size, then

turned into a slender lady. Nine Nether flew toward Mu Chen and landed beside him. She looked shocked upon seeing the lady in white, who had suddenly appeared.

"She is Lin Jing's mother," Mu Chen struggled to his feet and explained to her.

Nine Nether nodded and quickly helped to support Mu Chen.

"Mother, what do you intend to do with these people?" Lin Jing asked happily.

"Suppress them for five years," the lady in white said lightly. She waved her hand, and the elderly man in black was suppressed under the Spiritual Energy Mountain. The mountain then started to sink under the ground and disappeared.

Mu Chen was shocked to see that the spot where the Spiritual Energy Mountain had sunken in was now flat. No one would have known that three evil people had been suppressed underneath it.

Human-demon Elder might be able to survive the five years of suppression, as his strength had reached Grade Eight Sovereign level. However, his strength would have diminished by then. As for Liu Ming, he might not be able to survive.

However, Mu Chen would not take pity on them. If not for Lin Jing's mother, he could not imagine what would have happened to him and Lin Jing.

"Mother, you have come at the right time!" Lin Jing held the arm of the lady in white and said with a smile.

"Do you think you can sneak out of Martial Border with your skills?" The lady in white sneered at Lin Jing and asked. "If I had not followed you secretly, you would have been brought back by your father."

Lin Jing looked dejected upon hearing this. She had thought that her plan to escape was perfect, but now realized that she had actually failed.

Mu Chen was thankful that he did not have any ill intentions toward Lin Jing. Otherwise, he would have been killed by her mother, who was hiding in secret. This Great Thousand World was indeed filled with danger.

Mu Chen sighed within himself. He knew that Liu Ming was powerful, but he had not expected him to be under the protection of such a powerful elder. Mu Chen had nearly failed terribly.

"Young man..." The lady in white looked at Mu Chen and said.

"Senior, please call me Mu Chen," Mu Chen scratched his head and said. He felt awkward to be addressed in such a manner.

Upon hearing this, the lady in white smiled. Her smile was captivating. After secretly following Lin Jing for the past few days, she knew how Mu Chen had treated Lin Jing. Hence, she had a good impression of him and smiled at him, which was a rarely seen sight.

She then said gently, "I shall call you Xiao Mu then. Give me the Mustard Seed Bracelet that you got earlier."

Mu Chen immediately took it out and handed it over to the lady in white. Given her status, he knew that she would not be interested in such trivial things.

The lady in white was pleased with his forthrightness. After taking the bracelet, she injected a light from her palm for a while.

"This Mustard Seed Bracelet contains a mark made by an Earthly Sovereign Master. If you take it away, he will sense it. I have removed the mark now, though, so it will be fine," the lady in white said, as she returned the Mustard Seed Bracelet to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen broke out in a cold sweat. He had not examined the Mustard Seed Bracelet, and he certainly had not expected an Earthly Sovereign Master to leave a mark on it. It must have been the master of Tian Xuan Hall.

"Thank you, Senior," Mu Chen said gratefully.

The lady in white smiled and shook her head. She lovingly stroked Lin Jing's head and said, "You have saved Lin Jing. So, if you don't mind, you may now call me Aunt Ling."

Chapter 664: Queen of the Martial Border, Ling Qingzhu

Hearing the kind tone from the woman in white clothes before him, Mu Chen's guard against the stranger lowered. Even though the woman had an inhospitable temperament, maybe because Lin Jing was beside her, they could finally see her gentle side.

Accordingly, Mu Chen scratched his head and no longer hesitated. "Aunt Ling."

Since Lin Jing was the little princess from the Martial Border, obviously the woman in white clothes in front of them was the Queen of the Martial Border. This identity was indeed astonishing, and if they could get support from her, it would be an amazing backing.

However, Mu Chen did not think too much about it. He approached Lin Jing not because of her identity, but because he had a pure good impression about this vital girl who seemed to be casual but was actually extremely intelligent.

As for the so-called backing that could be relied on, Mu Chen was unconcerned. He understood that a real master could only rely on himself. In this world, only one's own power was the most reliable.

The woman in white clothes nodded with a gentle laugh. Her laughter was clear and pleasing. Even though she had a daughter, she was still charming, and seeing her reminded Mu Chen of his own mother.

Both were so outstanding.

"I will take care of the business here first," the woman in white clothes said smiling as she suddenly turned her head and looked into the distance.

Mu Chen and the rest were all stunned, and their faces turned pale. There are still people around? In that case, their action this

time was somewhat of a failure.

In the distance, when the woman in white clothes looked towards Heart Fox Fairy and the middle-aged man hiding on the peak, their faces changed. Immediately, they backed away separately without hesitation.

However, just as they moved, they realized that the ground around them had risen rapidly, and many stone thorns as sharp as swords extended from the surface. The stone thorns were sparkling with gorgeous colors and were obviously condensed from the purest spiritual energy, just like the spiritual energy mountain previously.

The spiritual energy stone thorns were packed closely around them. Therefore, they did not dare to move.

"Master, we have no bad intentions!" Heart Fox Fairy's plump chest rose and fell gently as she tried to make herself sound calm.

The space before the two fluctuated slightly, and the woman in white clothes stepped out from it. She stared at the two, frowning gently, as if she were deciding whether to suppress them as well.

"Master, we are from the Fox Fairy Clan. Please allow us to live because of the Fox Fairy Empress," the middle-aged man quickly pleaded with a sincere tone.

"Fox Fairy Clan?" Hearing the name, the look from the woman in white clothes suddenly turned somewhat teasing. She smiled and added, "Oh, you are under Hu Meizi from the Fox Fairy Clan."

"Master, you know the clan leader?" Heart Fox Fairy asked softly.

The woman in white clothes smiled and replied, "I have seen her once. It's just that she looked at my husband. However, her Great Art of the Fox Fairy did not seem to be charming enough."

Heart Fox Fairy and the middle-aged man's faces both turned red. They wanted to reply but did not dare to. The woman in white clothes before them was more attractive than their clan leader in

terms of appearance. Although Heart Fox Fairy was also charming and alluring, she still appeared to be dim compared to her.

"May I ask, Master, who are you?" Heart Fox Fairy bit her pink lips but still couldn't help asking. The clan leader was the person she respected the most and normally, many powerful people would do anything just to make her smile. She did not believe that the husband of this woman would cause the clan leader to disregard her behavior.

"Martial Border, Ling Qingzhu," the woman in white clothes responded tonelessly.

Hearing these few words, Heart Fox Fairy's pretty face finally changed drastically. She stared at the woman in white clothes with an unbelievable look and mumbled, "Queen of the Martial Border, Ling Qingzhu?"

At the moment, she finally understood everything. Since the person before her was the Queen of the Martial Border, then her husband would naturally be the founder of the Martial Border, the super-being who shocked the Great Thousand World, Martial Ancestor Lin Dong.

On the other hand, although her clan leader was extremely picky, she would inevitably have some interests in such a hero who could amaze the Great Thousand World.

Heart Fox Fairy was speechless and whispered something, not daring to continue talking.

Ling Qingzhu did not argue with such a junior. Waving her jade-like arm, the sharp stone thorns gradually retracted, eventually sinking into the ground. The quiet, weird movement would cause anyone to feel frightened.

"Just pretend that you saw nothing today," Ling Qingzhu warned.

Although she did not care about Tian Xuan Hall, Mu Chen could

not do the same. Once the news leaked, it would certainly cause him some trouble.

"Master, rest assured, we understand that." Heart Fox Fairy nodded continuously. She was very clever and naturally knew what she should say and what she should not. The Martial Border was an enormous force, and their Fox Fairy Clan could not afford to offend them.

Ling Qingzhu nodded and did not say anything else. Her body directly vanished from the spot.

As she left, Heart Fox Fairy and the middle-aged man finally heaved a huge sigh of relief. They could feel that their foreheads were covered in cold sweat.

"So scary," the middle-aged remarked, still frightened. "The power of this Queen of the Martial Border has probably reached a shocking level. Maybe even our clan leader is far behind her."

Heart Fox Fairy exclaimed in surprise, "Really? Our clan leader is an Earthly Sovereign. Maybe there is some gap between them but..."

"Her power is much more than what you can sense. I have cultivated a sensing divine technique, and I'm more sensitive towards the detection of powers. However, from what I detected just now, she is as unfathomable as the ocean. Although an Earthly Sovereign is also very terrifying, they seem to be lesser than that level..." the middle-aged man swallowed and commented.

"You mean..." Heart Fox Fairy's eyes narrowed as she muttered, "This Queen of the Martial Border... has also been promoted to Heavenly Sovereign? The power of the Martial Border is so shocking?"

Generally speaking, as long as a clan had one Heavenly Sovereign, it could become a superpower in the Great Thousand World. From the looks of it, the Martial Border could possibly have

more than one.

"If the Martial Border is not strong, why would the Ice Spirit Clan, one that has such a long history, view it as their backing? Moreover, it is said that the Martial Border has two queens, and both are extremely powerful. This is only one of them..." The middle-aged man sighed, feeling scared of the horrifying strength of the Martial Border. Even if the woman in white clothes was not a real Heavenly Sovereign, she was definitely at least halfway into that level.

"How did that kid have a relationship with the Martial Border? And it even alerted the Queen of Martial Border to come out herself..." Heart Fox Fairy felt somewhat incredulous. This kind of being would not show up at all under normal circumstances, so why would she appear just like that?

"That girl in white clothes looked quite similar to her..." The middle-aged man pondered for a while, and then the two gazed at each other, realizing what was happening.

"Seems that Liu Ming is really so unfortunate this time. But that's good as well. Tian Xuan Hall has suffered a huge loss this time, and it is quite a piece of good news for us." Heart Fox Fairy smiled and did not dare to stay any longer. Moving her body, she started flying away into the distance at a high speed. The middle-aged man quickly followed.

Mu Chen, who stayed at the same spot, saw the woman in white clothes appear again and realized that they had actually been secretly watched. This caused him to feel somewhat embarrassed, as he was always very cautious but had made a few mistakes this time.

On the other hand, Lin Jing pulled Ling Qingzhu's arms and giggled. Her clever black eyes kept rolling around, but before she could come up with something, Ling Qingzhu already flicked her smooth forehead with her finger.

"Stop thinking of a trick. Your dad already said that I must bring you back. Otherwise, next time your dad will appear instead of me," Ling Qingzhu said, smiling.

Lin Jing's face immediately turned mournful. "Mom, just let me stay outside for a while," Lin Jing begged.

Ling Qingzhu smiled and shook her head. Obviously, it was non-negotiable.

Lin Jing lowered her head in depression, but she then quickly lifted her head to look at Mu Chen in anticipation and suggested, "Mu Chen, how about you come to the Martial Border with me. It's very fun there.

"Also, I will protect you there. Certainly no one will annoy you!"

Hearing her words, Mu Chen immediately felt somewhat awkward. The Martial Border was a superpower in the Great Thousand World, and many experts tried to join but were rejected. However, he was not interested in it because he did not come to the Great Thousand World to find a strong backing...

Perhaps, under the protection of the Martial Border, there would indeed be nobody who would trouble him, but this was not what he wanted. In addition, if that really happened, he felt that he would not even have the courage to go and meet Luo Li.

Hence, towards Lin Jing's invitation, he only shook his head slightly and said, "The Martial Border is good, but the place does not suit me."

"Why?" Lin Jing pouted with dissatisfaction.

Ling Qingzhu, on the other hand, looked at the young man once more with her charming eyes. In his eyes, she could see some kind of persistence; that persistence caused her to smile helplessly.

That was because a long time ago, when she was his age, she also saw a young man with this kind of persistence in his eyes. Afterwards, that young man became her husband.

"In the future, if you need help, you can come to the Martial Border," Ling Qingzhu stated softly. Not only did Mu Chen's rejection of the invitation to the Martial Border not cause her to be displeased, but it also made her feel satisfied, and she appreciated his attitude. Thus, while she was usually unfriendly, she now actually took the initiative to extend an invitation, which was very uncommon.

Mu Chen nodded seriously and responded, "Thank you Aunt Ling. If there is ever such a day, I will surely go there.

"Lin Jing, you just behave yourself and stay in the Martial Border first. When you are strong enough, I will play with you again. Now, we will part here." Mu Chen grinned at Lin Jing and said no more. He folded his hands sincerely at Ling Qingzhu and turned to leave.

Nine Nether also nodded gently at Ling Qingzhu and then followed him.

Seeing that Mu Chen had disloyally abandoned her, Lin Jing immediately stamped her foot in anger.

Ling Qingzhu watched Mu Chen leave and smiling, she remarked, "This young man is indeed interesting."

"He's an idiot." Lin Jing pouted. He chose not to go to the Martial Border even though I invited him. Doesn't he know that there, any guidance he receives will be a hundred times better than learning blindly by himself?

"He is not an idiot."

Ling Qingzhu rubbed Lin Jing's head. In her cold eyes, some warmth and appreciation could be seen.

"He's a young man with a huge ambition... This ambition is similar to the one your dad had when he was young. It's just that we don't know how he will do in the future..."

"You actually compared him to dad?" Lin Jing opened her eyes

wide. In her heart, her father was the greatest person in the world. One time, in order to save Aunt Bing, her father went to the Ice Spirit Clan alone and turned the place upside down. Whenever she recalled this, she would feel that her father was really incredibly powerful and handsome.

At the moment, there was obviously an indescribable difference between Mu Chen and her father.

Ling Qingzhu smiled brightly. Lifting her eyes, she said softly, "Who knows what will happen in the future..."

Chapter 665: Liu Tiandao

In the sky, a streamer flew past.

Mu Chen turned into a colorful beam of light and flashed across the sky. At that moment, the injury on his back had already recovered completely. Even he was surprised by the speed of recovery.

Obviously, that shocking recovery rate was due to the unperishable flame mixed within his spiritual energy. If it had been in the past, Mu Chen would definitely need to rest and recover before being able to continue his journey.

"The unperishable flame is really mysterious," Mu Chen praised in spite of himself. After that, he turned his head and looked at his rear, sighing emotionally. Clearly, he had yet to recover from the surprise that Lin Jing was actually the princess of the Martial Border.

"What? You are reluctant again?" Nine Nether appeared beside Mu Chen. Staring at him with a strange look, she added, "The Martial Border is much stronger than the Daluo Territory. You actually rejected it?"

Mu Chen smiled and explained softly, "Maybe by joining the Martial Border, I can get protection, and nobody will come and annoy me. But, so what?"

"The matchless master that I was talking about will not come from this way."

Speaking of this, the young man squinted slightly, and smiling, he said, "And... since the Martial Ancestor can go until this level, why can't I?"

"A really big ambition you have there," Nine Nether raised her eyebrows and remarked.

"Ha, it's beyond my abilities now, but if I don't even have this

kind of courage, then how can I become a matchless master?" Mu Chen laughed. In his black eyes, a confident look was rising.

Hearing his words, Nine Nether also chuckled. Then, she gazed afar and said, "The next city should have a transfer spiritual array connected to the Tianluo Continent. By that time, our two-month long journey will end."

Mu Chen heaved a gentle sigh of relief. The two months were exhausting and not easy, but finally, it could end soon.

Mu Chen closed his palm, and the Mustard Seed Bracelet he had obtained from Liu Ming appeared. His spiritual energy gushed into the bracelet, which immediately started blinking with light.

Shortly afterwards, two balls of light appeared in his hand. Within the two balls of light, a blazing sun and a piece of dead leaf floated quietly, emitting a unique spiritual fluctuation.

Mu Chen gazed at them with a burning look, the corners of his lips curling up uncontrollably. In his heart, there was also excitement. Finally, he was able to gather the three materials needed in order to cultivate the "Great Solar Undying Body". It was indeed no easy task.

Mu Chen sighed in his heart. If he had chosen to stay in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, he would probably have never been able to gather all the materials.

"When do you plan to cultivate the sovereign celestial body?"

Nine Nether also stared at the two balls of light and then questioned. If Mu Chen really wanted to compete to become a commander of the Daluo Territory, he would absolutely need to experience a tough fight. His competitors would all be the best in the Daluo Territory, and their powers would not be weaker than Liu Ming, who had relied on many resources to become strong.

Hence, if Mu Chen wanted to win the contest, he must at least successfully cultivate his sovereign celestial body. Otherwise, he

would really be at a great disadvantage.

"The cultivation of the sovereign celestial body will take much longer than just one or two days. After we reach the Daluo Territory, I will start the cultivation," Mu Chen thought deeply and responded. The "Great Solar Undying Body" that he would cultivate was not that simple, and nobody would know what would happen during the cultivation process.

At the moment, the two were outside all by themselves and, if by that time, his cultivation drew attention and trouble, causing it to fail, it would indeed be a great loss. After all, if his cultivation was to fail, the three materials that he had prepared would be destroyed in the process.

Nine Nether nodded gently, urging, "Then let's hurry up."

Nine Nether gazed into the distance, some memories pouring out from her long, narrow eyes. She had also left the Daluo Territory many years ago, and did not know what the Nine Nether Palace had now become.

Around the two, a vast amount of spiritual energy gushed out, before each turned into streamers and flew across the sky, as quickly as a bolt of lightning. In the blink of an eye, they disappeared into the horizon.

...

Tianluo Continent, Tian Xuan Hall.

Tian Xuan Hall sat on the Northern part of the Tianluo Continent. As one of the most powerful forces on the Tianluo Continent, Tian Xuan Hall also had an extremely high status on this land, and the territory controlled by the clan was very vast. By just looking at the area, even over ten Northern Heavens Continents combined would not be able to compare with it.

Of this extensive territory, Tian Xuan Hall was the only controller. Although there were also a few other forces there, they

all relied on Tian Xuan Hall for survival. Furthermore, every year, they had to hand over a large amount of sovereign spiritual liquid as an offering.

At the moment, at the center of the Tian Xuan Hall, an indescribably spectacular golden palace stood. Clouds surrounded the palace and, as it glittered with golden light, it seemed majestic and ethereal, like a wonderland.

In the deepest part of the golden palace, there was an area filled with spiritual light. At the center of the spiritual light, there seemed to be a light lotus and a person who was sitting cross-legged on the lotus quietly.

The person seemed like a huge rock. His breathing was extremely regular. As he breathed in and out, the sound of wind and thunder could be heard in the palace. A great amount of spiritual energy whizzed around, like a spiritual sea.

All of the sudden, the person who was immersed in cultivation opened his eyes. The look from his eyes seemed to have penetrated space, and a furious expression appeared.

He extended his hand, where a simple-looking jade pendant lay in his palm. At the moment, the light from the jade pendant was gradually turning dim.

"The spirit seal of Ming'er is weakening... How dare him, there is actually a person who dares to hurt the son of me, Liu Tiandao!" The look from the person's eyes turned fierce. A low voice caused a forceful wind to blow through the palace.

With the flick of his fingers, the unsophisticated jade pendant floated into the air. The person changed the seals, and the spiritual light enveloped the jade pendant in an attempt to detect the location of Liu Ming.

However, after the attempted detection continued for a while, there were still no responses seen from the jade pendant, hence, no

messages were sent out.

"Not detectable? How can it be?!" the person exclaimed in surprise. He then stood up suddenly, as the spiritual light around him weakened. It was a middle-aged man in green robes. The man's eyes were as brooding as the starry sky, and as he moved, a terrifying pressure was released.

The person was the hall master of Tian Xuan Hall, who was also a very reputed expert on the Tianluo Continent: his name was Liu Tiandao. At the moment, his face was somewhat gloomy, and his eyes blinked slightly. He knew that Liu Ming must have gotten into a predicament. Furthermore, the person who attacked him was definitely very powerful as well. Otherwise, it would be impossible that his detection was cut off.

"I want to see, who exactly dares to attack my son!"

Liu Tiandao gave a threatening, icy humph. Then, he waved his sleeves and a huge Eight Trigrams Light Disc flashed out. Next, he flicked his fingers and crushed the spirit seal directly. A beam of light shot out and dashed into the Eight Trigrams Light Disc.

Buzz!

The Eight Trigrams Light Disc started to turn at once. Countless mysterious light patterns flew out and enveloped the beam of golden light. The space above the Right Trigrams distorted slightly, as if it was searching for something across space.

The space there became more and more distorted, and eventually, a small spatial crack was torn out. Seeing the scene, Liu Tiandao stepped into it, his body disappearing right away.

The Continent of Trade, where Liu Ming was suppressed.

The space here suddenly started to distort. After a while, a person stepped out from the air and appeared in the sky. His sharp look scanned the place and, finally, locked onto the ground.

In his eyes, spiritual light converged. It was as if he could see

through the ground and detect the spiritual light mountain underneath it.

"Appearance of the Heaven and Earth? It was actually an Earthly Sovereign who made the attack?" Liu Tiandao's expression changed slightly, after which, rage could been seen in his eyes. He humphed and waved his sleeve. Then, immediately, the ground below split apart.

As the ground split, the magnificent spiritual light mountain also appeared. Liu Tiandao moved and landed on the spiritual light mountain. Then, his hands formed a seal and a light ray shot out, eventually covering the spiritual energy mountain.

He planned to ablate the spiritual energy in the spiritual energy mountain, so that it could return to its original form. However, as time passed, Liu Tiandao's face gradually turned blacker, because he realized that his method was not quite effective.

That was because there seemed to be a resisting power inside the spiritual energy mountain. It was the willpower of the mysterious expert, who had made the attack.

"Such a cruel method."

Liu Tiandao's face was very icy. The person who had attacked seemed to have made up her mind that she would suppress Liu Ming at this place. Based on the strength of the latter, he would definitely die, should the suppression continue.

Although Liu Tiandao was also an Earthly Sovereign, he actually could not ablate the spiritual energy mountain within such a short period of time. If he was to break it by force, he would probably injure Liu Ming, who was suppressed beneath it. It seemed that, this time, Liu Ming had offended a person he should not have.

"It doesn't matter who you are. Even if my son is wrong, it's not your turn to suppress him." Liu Tiandao's look changed. Then, he humphed, waved his sleeves, and turned around to leave. Since the

mysterious expert wanted to challenge him with her mind, he would fight till the end.

He firmly believed that, once he went back to get the divine artifact from the hall, the willpower remaining in the spiritual energy mountain would not be able to fight against him. As Liu Tiandao left, the ground was restored to its original state after some rumbling. The huge mountain was once again buried under the ground.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether, although they were responsible for all of these events, still knew nothing about them. The two reached the next city with their fastest speeds, after which, they activated the transfer spiritual array.

At the moment when the spiritual array was activated, Mu Chen took a deep breath, in spite of himself, his eyes sparkling with intense anticipation.

Tianluo Continent, here I come.

My journey to becoming a master will start here.

Chapter 666: Daluotian

The Tianluo Continent.

Being one of the very reputable supercontinents in the Great Thousand World, the size and development of this land exceeded Mu Chen's expectation. The continent was embellished with many forces just like the stars, and the extent to which good and evil coexisted was sufficient to marvel anyone.

Precisely because the situation was so complex, there had never been so-called unification on this supercontinent. None of the forces could achieve this. Even a Heavenly Sovereign super-being would not be able to unify the Tianluo Continent.

Because the place was really very vast, and there were also many hidden talents, nobody would know if a super-being had been living in seclusion in the isolated mountains.

Therefore, many powerful forces had always coexisted on the Tianluo Continent. Although they kept fighting with each other and every day many forces were annexed, there were also many more that would appear like spring bamboo after a rain, continuously adding fresh blood and vitality to this supercontinent.

In this chaos, various geniuses and heroes would appear and be celebrated for a short while on this shockingly extensive supercontinent.

...

Daluo Territory.

As one of the top powers on the Tianluo Continent, it similarly had an extremely broad territory whose size far exceeded that of the Northern Heavens Continent. However, when compared to the entire Tianluo Continent, the territory could only be considered a small corner.

Hence, Mu Chen, who had just reached the Tianluo Continent, spent almost an entire week of travelling and passed through ten transfer spiritual arrays before arriving close to the land under the Daluo Territory.

After that, he spent two more days traveling before reaching the headquarters of the Daluo Territory.

Daluotian.

Standing on a mountain over 60,000 feet high, Mu Chen raised his head and stared straight ahead. His handsome face was filled with intense astonishment because a floating island hovering in the sky appeared before him.

However, rather than calling it a floating island, it would be more appropriate to call it a small continent. Its spectacular size would cause anyone to be dumbstruck.

The floating continent was enveloped in a bright light shield. There, many palaces stood and countless streamers were flying in the sky. The overwhelming sight was exceptionally frightening.

Even though Mu Chen was far away from it, he could still vaguely feel that many powerful spiritual energy fluctuations were rippling quietly there.

"This is the headquarters of the Daluo Territory, Daluotian." Nine Nether was standing beside Mu Chen. She held one hand before her eyes and the other akimbo. Since her body was tall and slender in the first place, her white neck, curved breasts, slim waist, and the most eye-catching sexy legs immediately formed a very tempting arc. The arc was so beautiful that even Mu Chen, who was originally just glancing at her, unintentionally stared at her for a bit longer.

"It's really incredible." Mu Chen quickly withdrew his gaze to avoid angering Nine Nether. Then, he gave his heartfelt compliment: compared to Daluotian, even the Northern Heaven

Spiritual Academy felt less amazing.

The reputation of the Daluo Continent was indeed well-deserved.

Nine Nether smiled charmingly and said, "Let's go. Maybe for a period of time in the future we will stay here."

Mu Chen also nodded. Staring at Daluotian, which was floating in the air, Mu Chen clenched his fist slowly. His journey in the Great Thousand World would start here.

Nine Nether flew out first and dashed directly towards Daluotian hovering in the sky in the distance while Mu Chen quickly followed.

As they gradually moved closer, Daluotian started to become clearer, and Mu Chen also began to feel its gigantic size. Looking ahead, he could not see the end but rather only the streamers flying within it.

In the sky 100,000 feet above Daluotian, there was a humongous spiritual array. The spiritual array turned into a light shield entirely covering and protecting Daluotian. A shocking spiritual energy fluctuation was rippling slightly, and even space itself was being continuously distorted.

Nine Nether pointed to the spiritual array and explained, "This is the Guardian Spiritual Array of Daluotian. It is said that even someone as strong as an Earthly Sovereign would find it difficult to break the array..."

Mu Chen nodded. He had already felt that the spiritual array was extraordinary.

In the sky outside Daluotian, there was a large light door. The door was about 10,000 feet in size, and behind it was a light path leading directly to Daluotian's interior. It was the only way into Daluotian.

Nine Nether and Mu Chen landed in front of the giant light door.

"Please stop. Outsiders are not allowed into Daluotian. Violators will be killed on the spot!"

Just as the two landed, a loud shout was heard. Hundreds of figures wearing black armor and fierce looks appeared. The spears in their hands were pointed at Mu Chen and Nine Nether.

A bloodthirsty aura spread quietly from them.

With her face still calm, Nine Nether waved her hand and a black ray flew out, eventually landing in the hands of the captain in black armor who was leading the team. The latter took the item. After the light dissipated, it turned into a dark token on which there was a soaring black bird. Faintly, a clear tweet could be heard.

"Nine Nether Token?"

The captain in black armor was shocked when he saw the token, after which he quickly knelt down on one knee. Behind him, the hundreds of black-armored warriors also all knelt down on one knee. The clear tinkling of armor could be heard.

"Greetings, Lord Nine Nether!"

Nine Nether waved her hand and the token flew back to her hands. She only nodded slightly and then brought Mu Chen to pass through the light door, eventually disappearing at the end of the light path.

Only when she had left did the black-armored warriors stand up in order.

A black-armored warrior went closer to their captain and questioned uncontrollably in a soft voice, "Captain, the lady just now was the Lord Nine Nether who has been missing for many years?"

"Yes. Since she has the Nine Nether Token, how can it be fake?"

The captain nodded. Looking in the direction where Nine Nether

disappeared, he added, "I heard that at the beginning, Lord Nine Nether was the weakest among the nine lords. But she is from the Nine Netherbird clan, and the Condor King was taking care of her. That's why she could become one of the nine lords. However, just now the pressure I felt from her is no weaker than the other eight lords. Seems that she has successfully passed the tribulation."

"But these days, the Nine Nether Palace has been having a hard time. If not for the Condor King, it would have probably been destroyed... The Nine Nether Palace now is but a mere decoration," a black-armored warrior sighed.

"Yeah... The Nine Nether Palace commander that Lord Nine Nether brought up herself also switched to become a subordinate under Lord Blood Hawk, Wang Chong... In the past, Lord Nine Nether saved this person from the battlefield and gave him lots of cultivation resources. Otherwise, he would not have become who he is today."

"Right, he's really an ungrateful person."

"..."

Of course, Nine Nether and Mu Chen did not know about the whispering behind them. After passing through the light path, the view in front of them became brighter. Daluotian in its magnificence appeared clearly in front of them.

Gazing at the spectacular scene before his eyes, Mu Chen also exclaimed in spite of himself.

Mu Chen moved closer to Nine Nether and asked, "Where do we go first?"

"Let's go to my Nine Nether Palace first. That's my territory. So many years have passed, I wonder how exactly they are doing now." Nine Nether smiled and stared to the northwest. She missed the place.

"You have an exclusive palace?" Mu Chen was somewhat

surprised.

"I am one of the nine lords and have quite a high status in Daluotian." Nine Nether rolled her eyes at Mu Chen, after which she said in a condescending tone, "Therefore, next time you see me, you must do what those guys did earlier. Otherwise, you are offending your superior."

Mu Chen laughed, amused. "You can continue dreaming."

Nine Nether raised her fist at him. Then she also gave a charming chuckle and stopped joking with Mu Chen. Turning around, she started moving towards the northwest, and Mu Chen quickly followed.

In the sky in Daluotian, there were occasional groups of people whizzing past in an orderly manner. These were the patrolling troops that protected Daluotian and were there to prevent any abnormal events from happening.

Looking at the awe-inspiring and ordered troops, Mu Chen was also inwardly surprised.

After rushing all the way for about an hour, Nine Nether finally slowed her speed. Meanwhile, Mu Chen raised his head to look into the distance where he saw a huge mountain towering into the clouds. The mountain vaguely resembled a giant bird whose wings were spread out, covering the sky and the sun.

At the peak of the mountain stood a continuous chain of tall palaces.

Staring at the palaces, a smile also appeared on Nine Nether's face. Then, she moved her body and emerged directly in the sky above the palace.

Before the palace, there was a spacious cultivation area. At the moment, a few thousand people were sitting down, cultivating in silence. In front of all the people, there were two girls sitting quietly.

One girl was wearing a black cultivation suit, while the other was in light red clothes. Both looked elegant and beautiful. Most amusingly, their faces looked the same. Clearly, they were twin sisters.

It was just that between the two girls, the one in the black cultivation suit appeared to be ice-cold, while the girl in light red clothes seemed more delicate. However, it was precisely because of their similar faces but different temperaments that anyone there would feel attracted.

At least, among those who were cultivating there, many opened their eyes uncontrollably and secretly looked at the two.

"Huh?"

All of a sudden, the girl in the black suit opened her eyes, which turned cold and fierce. Raising her head quickly, she said in a low tone, "Who is there?"

In the cultivation field, everyone lifted their heads in alert, and spiritual energy started to surge around them.

"Haha, Bing'er, you really have become stronger by the day..." Laughter spread throughout the sky. Then a figure gradually descended and landed in front of the palace.

The girl in the black suit stared blankly at the descending figure. The original coldness and sharpness in her eyes immediately melted, and her eyes started to redden.

The delicate girl beside her also gazed with an incredulous look at the lady in front of them. At the next moment, she rushed towards the lady and her nice eyes were as red as a rabbit's.

"Sister Nine Nether, you are finally back!"

Taking the girl who had rushed over into her arms, Nine Nether looked at their red eyes and also felt touched. Rubbing the head of the girl in her arms, she said in a gentle tone, "Yeah, your sister is back..."

Chapter 667: Nine Nether Palace

Before the palace, the thousands of figures were also stunned, as they stared at Nine Nether, who had just appeared. After a short while, they recovered from their surprise and immediately knelt. A respectful voice spread throughout the place: "Master, welcome back to the palace!"

Their voices were filled with intense joy. Nobody had expected that the master of their Nine Nether Palace would actually return at this moment. Originally, they had thought that the master of the Nine Nether Palace would never come back.

Hearing the deafening voice, Nine Nether was also somewhat surprised. Before she had left, there were not that many people in the Nine Nether Palace. Furthermore, she was not good at management, so most of the time, the place was a mess. On the other hand, the people here presently seemed much more imposing.

"You sisters did great. You were actually able to manage the Nine Nether Palace to become what it is now." Nine Nether held the girl in her arms and smiled happily.

"It's all to elder sister's credit," the girl in light red clothes, who seemed to be somewhat delicate, rubbed her red eyes and said in an embarrassed tone.

Nine Nether smiled and stared at the girl in black suit. The latter bit her rosy lips gently, and the original aloofness and sharpness in her eyes all vanished. However, she obviously had great self-control. Therefore, although she was very excited in her heart, she still did not forget herself. Instead, she bowed slightly and said in a respectful tone, "Master, welcome back to the palace."

"Bing'er, we had agreed that you would call me sister."

Nine Nether held the hand of the girl in the black suit. With some

affection in her beautiful eyes, she said, "You must have had a hard time during these years. Don't blame me, because I almost couldn't come back as well."

"Master..." the girl in the black suit immediately shook her head. However, seeing that the eyes of Nine Nether were widening, she quickly changed her words and said, "How can I blame sister. Before you left, you put the Nine Nether Palace under our charge. We will naturally do our best."

"In the first place, the Nine Nether Palace is only part of the formality. You are so stubborn," Nine Nether said, resigned. At the beginning, she was the weakest among the nine lords. Hence, towards her becoming a lord, many people in the Daluo Territory were dissatisfied at the idea. However, because of the Condor King and her own background, they did not dare say much.

But, once she left, the two sisters had probably been bullied because of their abilities. Furthermore, Tang Bing was exceptionally resilient, so even if she was bullied, she would probably just grit her teeth and mind her own business.

Clearly over these years, the two sisters had been tolerating everything in Daluo Territory. Thinking of this, Nine Nether felt sorry for them.

"Oh yeah..."

Scanning her gaze around, Nine Nether seemed to have recalled something, and frowning, she asked, "Where is Cao Feng? Before I left that time, I asked him to help you."

Hearing the name, the expressions of the two girls changed slightly. The girl in the black suit called Tang Bing bit her lips firmly, and after hesitating for a while, she finally took a deep breath and replied, "Sister... Cao Feng, he... he already switched to become a subordinate under Lord Blood Hawk... He had already left our Nine Nether Palace..."

Just as she finished speaking, Nine Nether's originally smiling face turned slightly stiff. The atmosphere quickly became somewhat frozen.

The delicate girl, who was in Nine Nether's arms, also bit her lips and said angrily, "That Cao Feng is so ungrateful. After seeing that no news had been heard about you for many years, he left the Nine Nether Palace and switched to take refuge under Lord Blood Hawk."

"At the beginning, sister, you saw that he was so pitiful, and saved him from the corpses. If it hadn't been for you, he would not have become who he is today!"

Patting the girl's head gently, Nine Nether sighed and said, "I know that Cao Feng places heavy emphasis on his own benefits, but I didn't expect that he couldn't even commit for these few years."

Her voice was filled with some disappointment. During that time, the young man had experienced a miserable event, so she showed some compassion and helped him. She did not expect that his moral character would still be so disappointing.

"Sister, rest assured, in the future, I will definitely not let that traitor off!" Tang Bing gritted her teeth. Even though Nine Nether was not really concerned about Cao Feng's betrayal, she could still not tolerate it.

In the past, because of a war, all of the clan members of the two sisters were killed by a hostile clan. At that time, if Nine Nether had not appeared, they would probably have ended up in a situation that was more unbearable than being killed. Thus, they had always viewed Nine Nether as their closest savior. Thus, they would not be able to tolerate anything that would harm Nine Nether.

The Nine Nether Palace was weak, and she was always a step away from breaking through to the sovereign-level. Otherwise, no

matter what happened, she would not let the traitor off easily!

Hearing her words, Nine Nether only smiled. She was not too sad about Cao Feng's betrayal. After all, in her heart, she was clearly more concerned about the two sisters before her. They had been persevering all the way, and this caused her to feel very pleased.

"Next time, I will not leave you behind easily." Nine Nether chuckled. Then, she stared at Tang Bing and said, "Bing'er, you seem to have yet to break through to the sovereign-level?"

Back then, when she left, Tang Bing was already in the Heavenly Completion Stage, and was just a step away from the three sovereign disasters. Based on her talent and the resources in the Daluo Territory, it was nearly impossible that she had yet to break through to the sovereign-level.

Tang Bing blushed slightly and nodded gently.

"Sister Nine Nether, don't blame my sister. These years, when she has cultivated, she has not been using even one drop of sovereign spiritual liquid. All the sovereign spiritual liquid obtained from the Daluo Territory has been used by her to train the newcomers in the palace. Otherwise, Nine Nether Palace would not have the scene it enjoys right now." The girl in light red clothes was called Tang Rong, and at the moment, she quickly helped her sister to justify.

Nine Nether heard her words and was stunned. Then, she looked at the thousands of people, who were kneeling down neatly on the cultivation ground, and questioned, "We Nine Nether Palace should receive ten thousand sovereign spiritual liquid each year, and also, close to ten thousand from the areas under our control. That's still not enough?"

Tang Rou was hesitating as to whether she should speak. However, Tang Bing stared at her, and she could only close her mouth.

"Bing'er, you tell me." Seeing their subtle actions, Nine Nether seemed to have noticed something. Even her voice became more freezing.

Hearing that, Tang Bing could only gave a bitter smile and replied, "Sister Nine Nether, soon after you left, there were other masters, who said that the Nine Nether Palace is unworthy of the name and cannot become a real lord-level organization in Daluo Territory. Therefore, they jointly suggested to the panel of Elders that our Nine Nether Palace be disbanded."

"However, because the Condor King spoke for us, in the end, the Nine Nether Palace remained, but our supply each year dropped from ten thousand sovereign spiritual liquid to five thousand..."

"As for the areas that we control, there were also many developed cities that were annexed by the other masters secretly. We were weak and could not contest with them, so we could only tolerate them."

"Because of these things, the total amount of sovereign spiritual liquid that our Nine Nether Palace can use in a year is no more than five thousand drops..."

Tang Rou also said softly, "Yeah. Sister needs a lot of sovereign spiritual liquid to break through to the sovereign-level, so she never dared break through. Every time, the sovereign spiritual liquid was distributed to the others, which is why she delayed her own cultivation."

"They're really too much!"

Nine Nether widened her eyes in anger, her face filling with rage, while her plump breasts rose and fell gently. Clearly, she was very furious. She did not expect that once she left, the others would dare exploit the Nine Nether Palace to such an extent.

Naturally, she knew that the masters who Tang Bing and her sister were talking about were the other few lords. In the past,

when she was still here, those people were already dissatisfied that she was much weaker, but had the same status as them.

However, because of her background, nobody dared say anything. She did not expect that, the moment she had left, these bastards could no longer take it and would react.

Nine Nether's face was filled with iciness, and a huge spiritual energy pressure spread in spite of herself. Immediately, many people on the cultivation ground could not take the pressure, and thus, started lying on the ground.

Tang Bing was also forced to back off a few steps, due to the spiritual energy pressure, but instead, she looked at Nine Nether with surprise and said joyfully, "Sister Nine Nether, you have passed the tribulation?"

At that moment, the spiritual energy pressure coming from Nine Nether was no weaker than the other eight lords. It seemed that, over these years, when Nine Nether was missing, she had successfully passed the tribulation.

Nine Nether nodded gently. Waving her hand, she said in a low voice, "Today, you can leave first. No matter how much suffering you have endured in the past, now I, the master of the palace, am back, and will not let anyone bully our Nine Nether Palace!"

Obviously, she said these things to the members of the Nine Nether Palace on the plaza.

"Yes Master!"

Hearing her words, the members of the Nine Nether Palace replied neatly at once, in an excited tone. Then, they left in an orderly manner and all seemed to be enthusiastic. Finally, there would again be someone who would support the Nine Nether Palace. They would also be freed from all the humiliations they had suffered in the past.

As the plaza became quiet, the coldness on Nine Nether's face

gradually disappeared. Waving her hand, she said, "Mu Chen, you can come out now."

Tang Bing and Tang Rou were both stunned. Then, she saw a figure flying closer and eventually appear beside Nine Nether. Mu Chen showed up and smiled in a friendly manner at Tang Bing and Tang Rou.

Tang Rou was somewhat shy, and turned her eyes away after looking at Mu Chen. On the other hand, Tang Bing stared at him, alert. It seemed that, after experiencing the incident of Cao Feng, she had become cautious about any man that came anywhere close to Nine Nether.

"This is Mu Chen. All thanks to him, I can pass the tribulation this time."

Nine Nether then pointed at the two girls with her slim finger. "This is Tang Bing, Tang Rou. They're my sisters..."

Hearing that Mu Chen had helped Nine Nether so much, Tang Rou endured her embarrassment and glanced at Mu Chen with a grateful look. Tang Bing also looked at Mu Chen once again, before nodding slightly at him, indicating that he was barely approved.

"Bing'er, how much sovereign spiritual liquid do you need to tackle the breakthrough to the sovereign-level?" Nine Nether suddenly asked.

"I need at least... a thousand drops." Tang Bing hesitated for a while, before giving the least amount she could in reply.

Hearing that, Mu Chen smiled. He then closed his palm, and a glittering jade bottle appeared in his hand. He then extended his hand towards Tang Bing and said, "Sister Tang Bing, there are two thousand drops of sovereign spiritual liquid inside. It should be enough for you to break through."

After obtaining the mustard seed bracelet from Liu Ming, Mu Chen also got quite a large amount of sovereign spiritual liquid

from it. Therefore, he was very generous.

Tang Bing paused for a while, but did not take the bottle. Instead, she looked at Nine Nether. Seeing that the latter nodded her head gently, she took the bottle lightly, and the aloofness on her face finally became milder. She said to Mu Chen softly, "Thank you."

"In the future, Mu Chen will also be a member of the Nine Nether Palace. We will all be like a family." Holding the hands of the two sisters, Nine Nether smiled and added, "I plan to let Mu Chen use the one commander quota our Nine Nether Palace has and compete for the 'Daluo Golden Pool'. Do you have any objections?"

Tang Bing and Tang Rou were again stunned after hearing that. They stared at each other and did not know whether to speak.

"Why? Bing'er, is it that you also planned to go?" Nine Nether saw that and asked curiously.

"No... of course, sister, you can decide on that matter."

Tang Bing quickly shook her head. After hesitating for a while, she smiled bitterly and said, "Two years ago, the one quota to contest for the 'Daluo Golden Pool' that our Nine Nether Palace has each year was forcefully 'bought' by Lord Blood Hawk using one thousand drops of sovereign spiritual liquid... We did not have the abilities to reject at all. So, our Nine Nether Palace did not have the rights to contest for the 'Daluo Golden Pool' for quite some time already..."

Just as she finished talking, Nine Nether's face became totally icy. She gritted her teeth firmly, and fire seemed to be coming from her eyes. This bastard Lord Blood Hawk is really bullying us too much!

Chapter 668: The Four Great Commanders

Before the palace, Nine Nether's face was filled with frost and her eyes with fire. Clearly, she was enraged.

Beside her, Mu Chen also frowned slightly. It seemed to him that Lord Blood Hawk was really an immoral person. The things he did were so contemptible.

Nine Nether's plump breasts rose and fell gently. She controlled her anger, and her voice gradually calmed, but the coldness in it could not be hidden. "From now on, Nine Nether Palace will take back the quota. Tomorrow, I will attend the Meeting of the Nine Lords to let them know that I, Nine Nether, am back. I'll see who dares to cause Nine Nether Palace trouble in the future.

"For those who have taken things from our Nine Nether Palace, I will make them return it all!"

Tang Bing and Tang Rou both nodded, their eyes filled with joy. Nine Nether had passed the tribulation and returned. Since she became much stronger and was no weaker than the other eight lords, Nine Nether Palace finally had someone to rely on.

Nine Nether looked at Tang Bing and asked, "Bing'er, now in the Daluo Territory, how many commanders are entitled to compete for the quotas in the Daluo Golden Pool?" If Mu Chen wanted to enter the Daluo Golden Pool, he had to fight and win against the other contestants. Therefore, she also had to let Mu Chen know how strong his opponents were.

Tang Bing looked at Mu Chen, who was standing beside Nine Nether. Her eyes were beautiful. If they were filled with aloofness, she would seem extremely unapproachable. However, once her eyes had other emotions in them, they would instantly become very pretty and clever. They would even seem to be somewhat charming and as a result, very attractive.

As she looked at Mu Chen, her eyes were filled with doubt. The pressure that she felt from Mu Chen seemed to be significantly weaker than that of those reputed commanders in the Daluo Territory.

She was very doubtful whether Mu Chen really had the power to compete with those talented commanders.

However, although she was uncertain, she still answered seriously, "Now in the Daluo Territory, there are a total of 18 commanders, and they all belong to the other lords. Nine Nether Palace had one in the past but..."

The one in the past she was talking about was obviously Cao Feng, who had left Nine Nether Palace.

Nine Nether nodded slightly, and her face was completely calm. "Among these 18 commanders, the most reputed today are the four great commanders."

Tang Bing seemed to smile as she said, "The head of the four great commanders is Xu Qing who is under Lord Asura. He was already promoted to Grade Two Sovereign long ago. I think maybe sister Nine Nether will have some impression of him."

"Xu Qing?" Hearing the name, Nine Nether was temporarily stunned, and she said with surprise, "That ordinary kid has become so strong?"

"Hehe, sister Nine Nether, I heard that this Xu Qing has always liked you. Over these years, many outstanding girls in Daluo Territory have shown their admiration to him, but he has never been moved." Tang Rou covered her mouth and giggled softly.

Nine Nether flicked her slim finger on Tang Rou's smooth forehead and said, "Nonsense. I didn't have much contact with him... Bing'er, you can continue."

"Among the four great commanders, the one who is ranked second is Zhou Yue under Lord Mountain Cracker." Tang Bing

paused for a while and then continued, "At the third position is Wu Tian who is under Lord Blood Hawk. He was brought back by Lord Blood Hawk a few years ago from the outside into Daluo Territory. Within just a few years, Wu Tian climbed quickly and soon became one of the four great commanders. That speed is indeed shocking."

Nine Nether nodded and asked, "Then who's the fourth?"

Tang Bing's rosy lips twitched slightly, and she eventually answered softly, "The person who is ranked fourth is also under Lord Blood Hawk..."

Nine Nether squinted slightly and said tonelessly, "Cao Feng?"

Tang Bing nodded gently.

"Seems like he has found the correct support. In just a few years, he has climbed to such a level," Nine Nether said calmly. The young man was indeed very talented. Otherwise, he would not have been promoted to a commander of Nine Nether Palace in the first place.

"The first three in the four great commanders should all be Grade Two Sovereigns. As for Cao Feng, it is said that he is at the peak of Grade One Sovereign and can enter Grade Two any time. So among the Grade One Sovereigns, he can beat almost everyone."

Tang Bing glanced at Mu Chen and continued, "There are only four quotas for the Daluo Golden Pool, so if he wants to get one, he must defeat one of the four great commanders."

Mu Chen nodded gently. Tang Bing's meaning was clear. Among the four great commanders, the weakest one in comparison was Cao Feng. Thus, if he wanted to obtain the entitlement to enter the Daluo Golden Pool, he must defeat Cao Feng.

Clearly, Tang Bing did not think that Mu Chen would be able to do that. Even though she hated Cao Feng, he became one of the four great commanders because he indeed had some capabilities.

Nine Nether turned her head, smiled at Mu Chen and said, "How?

Are you confident? If you are not, we will give up this time."

Mu Chen stared into Nine Nether's eyes. In the depths of her seemingly calm eyes, there was clearly some slight anticipation. If he said that he was not confident and would like to reject the contest at the moment, she would probably be somewhat disappointed in him.

"I don't yet know how strong those so-called four great commanders are, but... I wasn't even afraid of Earthly Sovereigns, not to mention some Grade Two Sovereigns." A smile appeared on Mu Chen's handsome face as he laughed.

"Don't worry. Our Nine Nether Palace will definitely have a share in the Daluo Golden Pool."

Nine Nether raised her eyebrows slightly and did not speak, but a smile appeared on her face. To the side, Tang Rou also stared curiously at the confident Mu Chen, while Tang Bing's face was filled with judgement. His courage was indeed remarkable but... the eligibility to enter the Daluo Golden Pool would not be obtained by mere courage.

Nine Nether did not say anything else. She turned around and walked directly towards the palace. When she entered the palace, her footsteps paused and a soft voice was heard. "Since you said so, no matter how difficult it is to obtain the quota to participate, I will surely get it for you!"

After she finished speaking, she stepped into the palace. Tang Rou glanced at Mu Chen curiously and quickly followed her.

Mu Chen leaned against a pillar. Watching Nine Nether leave, he also smiled gently, and it could be seen in his eyes that he was somewhat touched. Since they left the Northern Heavens Continent, Nine Nether had always been planning for him. She knew his goal, so she had been trying her best to pave the way for him within her abilities.

That was the way to becoming a matchless master.

"Seems that sister Nine Nether is very good to you." Tang Bing crossed her arms and stared at Mu Chen. The iciness had returned to her eyes. Although she was wearing a somewhat loose cultivation suit, this action still caused a plump curve in her chest to be shown under her shirt.

"What's your relationship with sister Nine Nether?" Tang Bing started to question Mu Chen. Over the years, she had always been in charge of Nine Nether Palace, so she looked somewhat formidable. Her inquiring look would also cause much pressure.

However, her contemplation was obviously quite useless against Mu Chen. He smiled at Tang Bing and answered, "It's the kind of relationship where I will not let her get hurt even if I get severely injured."

Mu Chen did not say much more. He changed the topic immediately and said softly, "Sister Tang Bing, if Nine Nether wants to take back that commander quota, will it be very troublesome?"

Tang Bing frowned and replied, "There are only nine lords in the Daluo Territory, and each lord only has one such quota. Lord Blood Hawk took away the quota from our Nine Nether Palace and over the years he has benefited much. Do you think he will give it up easily?

"Even though sister Nine Nether is supported by the Condor King, he alone does not have the final say in the whole Daluo Territory. Otherwise, Nine Nether Palace would not have had such a hard time over these years...

"So the Meeting of the Nine Lords tomorrow will probably not be peaceful." Tang Bing paused. She stared at Mu Chen with her charming eyes and added, "Sister Nine Nether is very good to you. I hope that you will not be another Cao Feng. Otherwise, whether sister Nine Nether would stop me or not, I will definitely not let

you off!"

Mu Chen touched his nose and laughed. "Sister Tang Bing, when you threaten someone you look quite beautiful."

At the moment, Tang Bing's already large eyes widened even more uncontrollably. She stared at the smiling young man in front of her, feeling slightly angry. This guy... she was talking to him seriously, and yet he dared to tease her?

Because she was very serious and strict, the people in the palace were all scared of her and would not dare to speak to her like that. Therefore, facing Mu Chen's tease, she could not recover from the surprise for a while.

"Rest assured, sister Tang Bing, that Cao Feng..."

Mu Chen breathed out gently. Just as Tang Bing was starting to raise her eyebrows, he smiled but some coldness could be felt from it. "I will not let him off."

Although Nine Nether did not seem to have many emotional changes when she heard about Cao Feng's betrayal, Mu Chen could still see some sadness in her eyes. Clearly, the feeling of being betrayed was difficult.

Tang Bing was stunned. Staring at Mu Chen, she hesitated for a while and then said, "It's good enough for you to have such a thought. Cao Feng is not that simple. You should try to be more careful."

"Okay."

Mu Chen smiled and nodded. Then, he scanned around and said, "Sister Tang Bing, show me around. Next time, I will also be a member of the Nine Nether Palace, so I need to get familiar with the place."

Tang Bing looked at him with an annoyed expression but did not reject his request. She turned around to leave and Mu Chen followed her, smiling.

The next day.

It was still early in the morning, but there were already many people waiting in front of the hall in the Nine Nether Palace. The closed palace gates opened slowly, and a slender figure stepped out.

The figure was wearing close-fitting black armor. The armor was attached closely to her exquisite body, revealing her attractive shape. On the armor, there was a light pattern resembling a Netherworld bird soaring in the air.

The figure was, of course, Nine Nether. But at the moment, as compared to the past, she had more of a heroic and vital beauty. Her long hair swung in the air and dignity radiated from her face.

"Greetings, my lord!"

Before the Nine Nether Palace, the thousands of its members instantly knelt down on one knee. Their neat and excited voices spread throughout the place.

Nine Nether scanned around and only nodded slightly. Behind her, Mu Chen, Tang Bing, and Tang Rou all stood in silence.

"Let's go. We'll meet those whom we have not seen for a long time. We'll tell them that anyone who has taken something from our Nine Nether Palace had better return it!"

Coldness surged out from Nine Nether's eyes. She waved her hand, and her body turned into a beam of light and flew out. Behind her, Mu Chen and the other two quickly followed, all looking combative.

Chapter 669: The Various Lords

Daluotian, central region.

At the central region of Daluotian, which looked like a small continent, there was a towering, majestic mountain peak. The peak pierced into the clouds like a sword, producing a spectacular sight.

This peak was called the Daluo Peak, and was the most important place in the entire Daluotian region. It was not only a place where the three kings controlled the whole Daluo Territory, but also one where even the mysterious Dominator was said to be secluded within. It was like the pivot point of the whole Daluotian region, or even the whole Daluo Territory.

At that moment, the Daluo Peak was exceptionally lively. In the sky, whistling sounds could be heard continuously, as people whizzed over from afar, one by one, eventually landing on the magnificent peak.

That day was when the biannual Meeting of the Nine Lords in the Daluo Territory would be held. This was considered to be a very important meeting in the Daluo Territory, so normally, nobody would be absent.

At the highest part of the Daluo Peak, a giant palace stood in silence. The palace was emitting an ancient feeling, as if it had been retained from the olden times, causing many to feel awe.

Before the palace was a series of stone stairs, which were one hundred thousand feet long. All the figures landed below the stone stairs, not daring to fly to the top directly. Instead, they chose to walk up, respectfully using the long stone stairs.

Before the hundred thousand feet long stone stairs, there were already many people congregated. However, most of them stood in various clusters, with clear divisions between the different groups.

Where there are people, there are conflicts, and in the huge Daluo Territory, this rule also applied. For their own benefits, the different clans fought against each other. There was gratitude among some of them, resentment among others, which indeed made for a complicated situation.

Vroom!

As the extensive platform started to be filled with people, a few streamers suddenly flew over from the distant sky, eventually landing on the platform. Everyone's sight was projected onto the few people. When they saw the newcomers clearly, their eyes were all filled with intense surprise. Immediately, some soft whispering spread quietly.

"That's... Lord Nine Nether? She has indeed returned!"

"Yesterday, I already received some news, which seems to be indeed true. Lord Nine Nether disappeared for many years, and it was said that she went for her tribulation. By the looks of it, she has passed the tribulation successfully."

"Incredible. To think that she could pass the tribulation at her age, and turn from a spiritual beast into being divine."

"Seems like the Meeting of the Nine Lords today will be interesting. Over these past years, the Nine Nether Palace has been severely bullied by the other lords, the leading one being Lord Blood Hawk. Based on the character of Lord Nine Nether, she will not leave the matter as such."

"In the past, Lord Nine Nether had yet to pass the tribulation. The Condor King supported her, but she was of no threat still. Today, however, she has passed the tribulation and returned, so things will probably not end that easily."

"..."

On the vast platform, different kinds of whispering spread quietly. Towards those gossiping, Nine Nether acted as if she heard

nothing. Lifting her face, she stared at the ancient palace at the top of the hundred thousand feet long stone stairs, her long eyes squinting slightly.

Mu Chen and the two sisters, Tang Bing and Tang Rou, all stood behind Nine Nether, looking steadily forward. Shortly after Nine Nether emerged, more whistling was heard from the sky. A few figures flew over, eventually landing on the platform.

As these figures arrived, a strong spiritual energy pressure enveloped the place instantly. The people who were walking over were obviously very powerful.

Mu Chen also glanced at them, realizing that there were about three groups of people who had just emerged. On the left, the leader was an emotionless middle-aged man. He wore black robes and his pupils were dark red, making people tremble in fear.

Behind the middle-aged man, a younger man followed closely. The man was tall and straight, and he wore a green shirt. His dashing eyebrows swung in the air, and in fact, he was pretty handsome.

Around him, there was a decent spiritual energy fluctuation. His expression was originally quite calm, but once he saw that slender and tall body, the look in his eyes started to fluctuate uncontrollably.

"That is Lord Asura, who is considered to be the strongest among the nine lords today. In time, he may even be eligible to become one of the three kings." When Mu Chen saw the two people, Tang Bing, who was at the side, said softly.

Mu Chen nodded gently, his look somewhat solemn. The feeling that Lord Asura had given him was even stronger and more unfathomable than the that which he had gotten from the old man in black robes, who was now accompanying Liu Ming.

"The person behind Lord Asura is Xu Qing, the head of the four

great commanders. He is pretty powerful."

Mu Chen's eyes turned slightly towards the man in the green shirt. The eyes of the latter were totally locked onto Nine Nether. Judging from his behaviour, it seemed that Xu Qing indeed had some affection towards Nine Nether, confirming what Tang Rou had said earlier.

However, regarding his pleasantly surprised stare, Nine Nether did not seem to have any reactions at all. Only when she saw Lord Asura, did she look at him and nod gently.

Although in the Daluo Territory, it was extremely difficult to get close to Lord Asura, Nine Nether still thought that Lord Asura was clearly much better than the sinister Lord Blood Hawk. Lord Asura also saw Nine Nether, and his emotionless face moved slightly, eventually also nodding.

In the past, Nine Nether was only a small kid in his eyes, but this time, after she returned, even he felt some pressure. It seemed that, over the years, she had become much stronger.

The man in the green shirt, who was behind Lord Asura, saw that Nine Nether did not look at him at all, and could only give a bitter smile. However, the look from his eyes became increasingly bright, as if he had found his motivation all of the sudden.

Mu Chen turned his eyes to look at the second wave of people. The leader was a very husky middle-aged man, who had a pair of large palms, which revealed dragon-like veins, as if they could crack open a mountain.

"That's Lord Mountain Cracker... also a strong person among the nine lords," Tang Bing said tonelessly.

Mu Chen nodded lightly. Just then, his eyes moved suddenly, because he saw that behind Lord Mountain Cracker, a similarly burly and tough man was looking in his direction, his eyes wavering. Obviously, he was not looking at Mu Chen, but rather,

his attention was fixed upon the emotionless Tang Bing, who was standing beside him.

"Hehe, that's Zhou Yue, the second among the four great commanders. He seems to be fond of my sister. In the past, he snuck into the Nine Nether Palace to peep at my sister secretly. Later, he was discovered by my sister, who took a sword directly and chased him out." At the side, Tang Rou snickered.

"Seems that your sister is quite attractive." Mu Chen felt somewhat amused. This Zhou Yue clearly had some affection towards Tang Bing, but judging from Tang Bing's behavior, she did not seem to be interested in him.

Tang Bing raised her eyebrows, glancing at Mu Chen with her eyes wide open. The latter smiled at her, but she could only turn her head away, feeling annoyed. She realized that Mu Chen was quite thick-skinned, and knew that he would not feel at fault, no matter how much she stared at him.

"Ha, isn't this Nine Nether? We didn't expect that you had really returned. It's such a joy."

Just as when Mu Chen was looking at Lord Asura, a seemingly somewhat hearty but actually gloomy laughter was heard. Then, Mu Chen saw a group of people coming directly towards them. Many people around started to look at them.

The group was led by a middle-aged man with blood-red hair. His eyes were extremely penetrating and gloomy, as if he was an eagle staring at its prey from above, ready to give it a fatal blow at anytime.

At the moment, he smiled and gazed at Nine Nether. As his blood-red hair swung in the breeze, it smelled of blood wafting across the air. This time, even without Tang Bing's introduction, Mu Chen already knew that the newcomer must be Lord Blood Hawk, whose relationship with Nine Nether was very bad.

At the side, Tang Bing and Tang Rou stared angrily behind Lord Blood Hawk, where there was a man in a white shirt. The man's appearance was quite handsome, but at the moment, his face was slightly stiff. His look was evasive, and he did not dare look at Nine Nether, who was just in front.

Seeing this, Mu Chen already knew that the person must be Cao Feng, who had left the Nine Nether Palace...

Beside Cao Feng, there was another man, who was smiling and looking at the twin sisters, whose eyes were filled with anger. Intense desire could be seen in the depth of his eyes. Then, he licked his lips gently, as if he wanted to swallow the twin sisters into his stomach.

This person was Wu Tian, who was ranked third in the four great commanders...

Nine Nether did not pay attention to Lord Blood Hawk, standing before her. Her eyes passed him and glanced at Cao Feng, who was standing behind Lord Blood Hawk, her face being calm.

"Ha, Cao Feng, this is your old master. Isn't it a bit rude not to greet her?" Lord Blood Hawk clasped his hands and laughed at will.

Only then did Cao Feng raise his head and give a stiff smile. "Greetings, Master Nine Nether."

Nine Nether looked at him, her eyes gradually turning calm. Not even much disappointment could be seen. Even though she was somewhat sad upon hearing the news the previous day, when she saw him again, it felt like he was a stranger. She only felt somewhat sorry for him, because the young man, whom she saved from the battlefield in the first place, had slowly changed for the worse.

It seemed that not everyone could always keep their original self on the road to becoming a master, at least not like the young man beside her, who always had a gentle smile on his face, but was full

of stubbornness and perseverance in his bones. Watching Nine Nether's gradually calming eyes, and feeling that it was as if she was staring at a stranger, Cao Feng clenched his fist firmly in his sleeves, uncontrollably.

He lowered his head slightly, his face becoming somewhat gloomy and distorted. He was very displeased about the fact that Nine Nether was so calm about his betrayal.

Nine Nether withdrew her look and finally glanced at Lord Blood Hawk. In her icy eyes' glare, there seemed to be frost condensing. Then, she turned around and walked directly towards the palace. Her cold voice even caused the temperature of the surrounding air to drop.

"Blood Hawk, whatever you have swallowed from my Nine Nether Palace, be prepared to vomit out in the future."

Chapter 670: Meeting of the Nine Lords

As Nine Nether left, the atmosphere at the stone platform was still rather frozen. Many people had thoughts flashing in their eyes. It seemed that the Meeting of the Nine Lords this time would probably not be peaceful.

Lord Blood Hawk squinted slightly and stared at Nine Nether as she departed. Some cruelness flashed in the depths of his eyes. Immediately, he smiled slightly and said, "Ha, I did not expect that after she left for a few years, her temper would become so bad.

"But I want to see who can take back the things that I have already swallowed!" He gave a forbidding smile and did not take Nine Nether's threat seriously. Although he knew that the Condor King had Nine Nether's back, he was not afraid. After all, the Condor King was only one of the three kings and could not control everything in the Daluo Territory by himself.

"Let's move!"

Lord Blood Hawk waved his hand and also stepped onto the hundred thousand foot stone stairs, moving up quickly.

Lord Asura, Lord Mountain Cracker, and the rest only watched on the sidelines and did not interfere with the resentment between the two parties. Among the nine lords, Nine Nether always had a weaker foundation and did not have any allies. On the other hand, Lord Blood Hawk was quite reputed, so in previous conflicts, Lord Blood Hawk had always gotten the upper hand. It was just that this time, they did not know what the outcome would be.

Behind Lord Asura, Xu Qing glanced at Lord Blood Hawk's back and frowned helplessly.

Lord Asura seemed to have noticed Xu Qing's view and said tonelessly, "If you don't have the abilities, don't think about speaking out for a woman. You still don't have that capability yet."

Hearing that, Xu Qing gave an awkward smile.

"Moreover, with Nine Nether's strength at the moment, it's not your turn to worry about her. Now she is probably close to becoming a Grade Five Sovereign. Together with her Divine Beast body, even Lord Blood Hawk, who is a Grade Five Sovereign, can't beat her."

Lord Asura stepped forward and a toneless voice passed into Xu Qing's ears. "Also, you should know well that Nine Nether is not like the other ordinary girls. She is aloof and proud. You are still a long way from being able to move her. At least you need to get rid of your status of being a mere commander."

Xu Qing nodded slightly and then followed behind Lord Asura to move towards the palace.

The other lords also stepped onto the stone stairs.

Walking up the stairs, they realized that the ancient palace was already open. Nine Nether brought Mu Chen and the other two, and stepped into the palace. Inside, there were many oval stone platforms whose size increased with the distance from the entrance.

The stone platforms extended along the sides of the palace, and the center of the palace was completely empty. At the highest part of the stone platforms, there was a huge throne on which one could look over everybody else in the palace. However, there was no one on the throne at the moment. Even though this was the case, there still seemed to be an invisible pressure emanating from the throne and enveloping the entire palace.

Obviously, the throne belonged to the real ruler of the Daluo Territory, the elusive Dominator.

Below the throne, there were three golden lotus platforms. There were three people sitting silently on the lotus platforms, and faint halos were emanating from their bodies. The space around them

appeared to be distorted.

In the middle was a rather skinny old man. There always seemed to be light converging in his eyes. It was as if his look could penetrate a person's heart. It was so sharp that it was frightening.

The person on his left was also an old man with white hair. However, his skin was as smooth as an infant's, and no wrinkles could be seen on his face. Even his white hair was shiny, and he did not look like a dying old man at all. His eyes were completely dark and did not have any white at all. The darkness would cause anyone seeing it to tremble with fear.

On his right was a man who looked sleepy. His age could not be told from his appearance, but he looked very lazy, as if he were half-asleep.

Entering the palace, Nine Nether first looked at the skinny old man at the center. Finally, a smile appeared on her always cold face.

"Ah, little Nine Nether, you are finally back. Great." The skinny old man's penetrating look stopped on Nine Nether as he smiled happily.

The old man with white hair and infant-like skin also squinted and glanced at Nine Nether. Some surprise flashed in his eyes.

The sleepy man also opened his eyes slightly to take a look, after which he continued to tilt his head lazily.

"The person at the center is the Condor King. He has some relationships with the Nine Netherbird clan, so he is considered as sister Nine Nether's senior and always takes care of her," Tang Bing said softly to Mu Chen.

"The person on the left of the Condor King is the Spiritual Pupil King. He supports Lord Blood Hawk and some of the rest. Lord Blood Hawk dares to be so arrogant largely because the Spiritual Pupil King is supporting him."

Mu Chen changed his focus and looked at the old man with white hair and black eyes. The latter also seemed to have noticed, and his eyes turned slightly towards Mu Chen. It was as if a strange light was circulating in his black eyes, causing people to be deeply attracted and unable to withdraw themselves.

Suddenly, a somewhat icy hand gently grabbed Mu Chen's palm. The cold feeling caused him to instantly become clear-headed. At once, he was shocked and fear filled his eyes.

The Spiritual Pupil King was indeed quirky.

Seeing that Mu Chen had regained consciousness, Nine Nether let go of his hand and reminded him, "Don't stare into his pupils. The divine technique that he cultivates is in his eyes."

Mu Chen nodded gently.

"The third one is known as the Sleeping King... Over the years, I don't think I have ever seen him completely awake. Hence, the Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King will decide on most of the matters in the Daluo Territory," Tang Bing continued as she glanced at that always sleepy figure with a strange look.

Amazement could also be seen on Mu Chen's face, and his expression was similarly strange. In the world, there is actually such a weird person?

"Don't belittle him. It is said that he was the first to follow the Dominator to develop the Daluo Territory. He is unfathomable. Even the Condor King is somewhat afraid of him," Nine Nether said softly.

Mu Chen nodded slightly. The three kings before him were probably no weaker than the Human-Demon Elder from Tian Xuan Hall. They were all at least Grade Seven Sovereigns.

"Then how about the Dominator?" Mu Chen asked curiously.

"The Dominator has not appeared for many years," Tang Rou said softly. "The Dominator is the most mysterious person in the Daluo

Territory. It is said that he is in seclusion to cultivate, but nobody knows where he is."

Mu Chen smiled resignedly. The Daluo Territory was indeed unique.

Nine Nether waved her hand, and brought Mu Chen and the other two towards a stone chair, after which she sat down. The other eight lords also brought their people in gradually and sat down in order.

"Ha, after so many years, the seats here are finally all filled." Looking at the fully occupied seats below, the Condor King smiled slightly and announced, "Since everyone is here, let's start the Meeting of the Nine Lords."

The region under the Daluo Territory was extremely vast, and was also contiguous with many other similarly powerful forces. There had been continuous battles among them. Many issues that required discussion would be settled during the Meeting of the Nine Lords.

Because Nine Nether had left the Daluo Territory for many years, she did not say anything during these topics. Instead, her slim fingers lightly tapped on the stone platform. Her eyes were partially closed and coldness could always be seen on her face.

Mu Chen, Tang Bing, and Tang Rou stood in silence without looking sideways.

The discussions about the battles continued for about two hours and then finally ended. The Condor King changed the topic and said, "These issues have been settled. Next, let's talk about the contest for the Daluo Golden Pool, which will be held two months from now."

Just as he finished speaking, the atmosphere in the palace immediately became more serious, and the looks from the various lords also turned solemn. Clearly, they understood that this was

the highlight. After all, the Daluo Golden Pool was rather attractive.

At the moment, Nine Nether also opened her charming eyes. Her icy look was projected onto Lord Blood Hawk, and her cold voice spoke first. "In this Daluo Golden Pool contest, the Nine Nether Palace will also participate."

Everyone in the place was alarmed, as they knew that Lord Nine Nether, who had just returned, was starting to launch a verbal assault.

Hearing her words, Lord Blood Hawk smiled and said, "Haha, Nine Nether, you have been away for a long time, so you are unaware of many things. The quota your Nine Nether Palace had was sold to our Blood Hawk Palace long ago."

Immediately, anger appeared on Tang Bing and Tang Rou's faces. This person is indeed shameless.

"Sold to you? Did I agree? Lord Blood Hawk, leader of the Blood Hawk Palace, you should know that for this kind of thing, it only counts when the leader of the palace agrees, right?" Nine Nether sneered.

"Since I didn't agree, that doesn't count. Otherwise, how about I give you 2,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, and you also sell the quota from your Blood Hawk Palace to my Nine Nether Palace?"

The corners of Lord Blood Hawk's eyes twitched, and his look became much more dour. Then, he gave a forbidding smile and said, "I didn't imagine that you had grown a silver tongue after leaving for a few years."

His palm gradually tightened on the armrest of the stone chair, and a huge spiritual energy pressure burst out as he stared at Nine Nether with a fierce look.

Seeing that, the corners of Nine Nether's pink lips also curled up

to form a cold smile. Suddenly, her hand smacked onto the large stone table, and a crack instantly shot out under her palm, flying towards Lord Blood Hawk like a sharp sword.

"How dare you!"

Seeing that Nine Nether actually dared to attack first, Lord Blood Hawk's look became frosty, and he also smacked his hand down suddenly. A blood ray crack also shot out from his palm and collided directly with the incoming crack.

Bang!

The huge stone table immediately started to shake violently. However, before the shockwave could burst out, a gentle power rushed over and ablated the two forces.

The Condor King waved his sleeves and said tonelessly, "No fighting is allowed in the discussion hall."

Lord Blood Hawk gave a cold humph. He stared at Nine Nether with a dour look and mocked, "Even if you get the quota, so what? Your Nine Nether Palace has no commanders, so you are not eligible to participate in the contest for the Daluo Golden Pool."

A commander must be a Sovereign. In the Nine Nether Palace, apart from Nine Nether, even the girl Tang Bing had yet to step into the Sovereign-level.

"Who told you that our Nine Nether Palace has no commanders?"

Nine Nether raised her eyes, and her rosy lips curved up into a mocking smile. Then, she pointed at Mu Chen beside her, and her cold voice spread throughout the entire place.

"From today onwards, he is the new commander of our Nine Nether Palace!"

Chapter 671: Qualification

"From today onward, he is the new commander of our Nine Nether Palace!"

When Nine Nether's cold voice was heard, the whole palace went silent for a while. Then, everyone raised their eyes suddenly, looking at the young man behind Nine Nether, who had been very quiet and now looked exceptionally calm.

"Who is he? He seems to be quite young..."

"From this spiritual energy fluctuation, he seems to have just promoted to the sovereign-level. Is he even competent enough to become a commander?"

"Did she just find a person randomly to make up the number?"

"..."

Some doubtful whispering spread quietly, as all the people stared at Mu Chen with a suspicious look. Even though it was not easy for him to have such power at this age, to become a commander in the Daluo Territory, one must have real strength and not simply talent alone. Obviously, the pressure coming out from Mu Chen was not quite convincing enough.

Lord Asura glanced at Mu Chen emotionlessly, not saying anything. Behind him, the man called Xu Qing looked at Mu Chen for a while longer.

At the moment, Lord Blood Hawk also squinted slightly, as he gazed at Mu Chen. His look was as frightening as a viper. Scanning Mu Chen up and down, the corners of his lips twitched uncontrollably, then he said, "Who is this? He's not from our Daluo Territory, right?"

"He is, at least from now onward. As the leader of the Nine Nether Palace, I naturally have the rights to appoint someone as the commander of the Nine Nether Palace. I don't think you can

interfere with this, right?" Nine Nether said tonelessly.

Lord Blood Hawk lowered his eyes slightly, then said, "Although this is true, the Nine Nether Palace is still under the Daluo Territory, after all, and the commanders in our Daluo Territory are chosen only after undergoing many rounds of intense battles. If you can appoint someone to have such a position at will, isn't it unfair to the other commanders?"

"Furthermore, if the commander you appoint is too weak, the other forces will mock us, saying that the Daluo Territory has no more powerful people. So, regarding the appointment of commanders, I'm afraid you can't just decide such things all by yourself," Lord Blood Hawk asserted firmly.

Behind Lord Blood Hawk, both Wu Tian and Cao Feng were staring at Mu Chen. The former seemed unconcerned, but the latter looked somewhat gloomy, because he recalled that, when he was brought back by Nine Nether to the Nine Nether Palace in the first place, she also had bestowed upon him the position of commander.

However, after Nine Nether had left for so many years, he had also eventually left the Nine Nether Palace, because the Nine Nether Palace without Nine Nether was much weaker than the Blood Hawk Palace. His actions for leaving also showed that he also had not expected Nine Nether to actually return again.

In addition, this time, she had even brought a young man along with her...

"You want to use him to replace me?" Coldness flashed across Cao Feng's eyes, as he stared at Mu Chen with a murky look, while looking down upon him. It was obvious that, when compared to him, Mu Chen was much weaker. As such, it seemed that Nine Nether was becoming worse at choosing talents.

In the palace, a few of the other seven lords also nodded to indicate that they agreed with Lord Blood Hawk's statements. Most

of these people had some kind of a relationship with Lord Blood Hawk. And so, at that time, they were the ones who jointly suggested that the Nine Nether Palace should be dismissed.

Seeing this interchange, Nine Nether's beautiful eyes were filled with more coldness, but not so much surprise. Obviously, she had foreseen that this issue would not be resolved so easily.

On the three lotus platforms, at the highest part of the palace, the Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King remained silent, allowing the rest of those present to argue, while the Sleeping King had always maintained his signature sleepy look. It was as if even very major events, like that which was occurring at present, would not be able to wake him up!

Tang Bing and Tang Rou also gritted their teeth. In their hearts, they were cursing those who were trying to stop Nine Nether.

Mu Chen smiled gently, before taking half a step forward. He stared at Lord Blood Hawk, whose look was so penetrating, it seemed to be able to pass through a person's body. Smiling, Mu Chen asked, "May I ask, Lord Blood Hawk, what do I need to do to show that I am qualified to become a commander?"

Lord Blood Hawk only cast a fleeting glance at Mu Chen. Then, he leaned back on his stone chair and lowered his eyes, not showing any interest in talking further. Clearly, he felt that Mu Chen did not even have adequate importance to even speak to him.

Indeed, he was one of the nine lords in the Daluo Territory, and was a grade five sovereign. There were many powerful people under his command, and he could decide a person's fate by the snap of a finger. If Mu Chen did not presently have Nine Nether at backing him, Lord Blood Hawk would have already waved his hand and killed him. Therefore, he did not even bother to reply to Mu Chen. Lord Blood Hawk's dismissive behavior had caused the coldness in Nine Nether's eyes to intensify, but Mu Chen simply remained smiling calmly.

"To prove that you are qualified is simple..." Behind Lord Blood Hawk, Wu Tian, one of the four great commanders, suddenly sneered, showing his dense white teeth. "You just need to defeat a commander."

Killing intent was surging in his eyes, and he was clearly despising Mu Chen, because he did not want someone to go near the twin sisters that he had taken a fancy to.

Hearing his words, Mu Chen laughed. Then, he stared back at Wu Tian with his black eyes and smiled, saying, "That's actually a really good idea."

After he finished speaking, Mu Chen moved to the spacious part of the palace. Then, scanning his eyes around the area, he challenged, "Is there any commander that would like to enlighten me?"

Mu Chen was not too humble, because he could already tell that such so-called humbleness and politeness were completely useless here. At this place, only power would grant him the real right to speak. Otherwise, nobody would respond to his words.

"Quite brave." Behind Lord Mountain Cracker, Zhou Yue, who was also one of the four great commanders, raised his eyebrows and commented. However, he had no intentions of intervening, because everyone could tell that this was a fight between the people under Lord Nine Nether and Lord Blood Hawk. He was under Lord Mountain Cracker, so naturally would not interfere. Moreover, he disliked Lord Blood Hawk's group.

The other lords also watched the scene interestedly. Even those clans that were considered to be allies with Lord Blood Hawk did not come forward to intervene. Although they did not care about Mu Chen, they were slightly afraid of Nine Nether, who had obviously passed her tribulation to become much stronger.

"Humph."

Wu Tian smiled, showing his mouthful of dense, white teeth, which made him look like a beast. He sneered at Mu Chen mockingly, and also did not seem to quite understand why the young man before him had such courage.

The fact that Mu Chen could enter the sovereign-level at his age did indeed indicate that his talent was outstanding. But, in this world, there were too many geniuses who died young. Among them, the large majority met their deaths, due to just such arrogance as Mu Chen was now displaying.

Wu Tian could naturally sense that Mu Chen had obviously just entered the sovereign-level a short while ago, as the spiritual energy fluctuation emitting from him was weaker than that of those experts, who had entered the sovereign-level for many years.

"Zhao Zhong, go and see if he is really qualified to become a commander," Wu Tian instructed, as he turned his head slightly to smile at a man behind him.

He really wanted to kill this young man named Mu Chen, but he was one of the four great commanders, after all, and had quite a reputation to uphold within the Daluo Territory. He would really be degrading his own status, should he deal with the bragging young man himself.

At the side, Cao Feng also folded his arms and stared at Mu Chen with cold eyes. He similarly did not go for the fight himself, because his view on matters was identical to Wu Tian's.

A forbidding smile appeared on the pale face of the man named Zhao Zhong, who was standing behind the two. He was also a commander under Lord Blood Hawk. Even though he was not as well-known as Wu Tian and Cao Feng, he had also been promoted to grade one sovereign a long time ago.

Furthermore, he had fought hundreds of battles, and his every action would reveal a shocking killing intent. Obviously, he had experienced many real life-and-death situations.

Lord Blood Hawk did not speak throughout the entire event, as if he had given Wu Tian all the rights to talk. However, one could tell by just the look coming from the corner of his eyes, that he was waiting to watch an entertaining performance.

Zhao Zhong moved to appear at the center of the palace. He stared at Mu Chen, the smile on his face somewhat ferocious and cruel. Over these years, he had seen too many young geniuses, just like Mu Chen, many of whom had died at his hands.

"Kid, I don't show mercy during a fight. If you scram now, maybe you will suffer less pain. Or, you can switch to our Blood Hawk Palace, as it's better than that weak woman palace," Zhao Zhong smiled eerily towards Mu Chen as he said these things.

"This disgusting bastard!"

Hearing that this person was humiliating the Nine Nether Palace, Tang Rou's face instantly turned red. Tang Bing's face also became cold. In contrast, Nine Nether had no reaction. Her eyes only stared at Mu Chen's back.

Mu Chen's face was still calm. Hearing the taunt from his opponent, he simply smiled.

"Summon your sovereign celestial body," Zhao Zhong licked his lips and said.

"I have yet to cultivate it," Mu Chen smiled and said.

In the palace, everyone was temporarily stunned, after which, their looks became strange. Is this kid too stupid, or just too crazy, that he dares be so arrogant here, when he hasn't even cultivated his sovereign celestial body?

Even Tang Bing and Tang Rou's faces changed slightly. Clearly, they also did not know that Mu Chen actually had not cultivated his sovereign celestial body yet.

"That's unfortunate."

Zhao Zhong sighed lightly, but the smile on his face became more ferocious. He stepped forward suddenly, and a shocking spiritual energy swept out. Then, an extremely giant spiritual energy shadow appeared around him.

"Since this is the case, you can go and die."

"Extreme Frost Celestial Body!"

A huge, ice blue sovereign celestial body flashed out all of the sudden. A cold mist swept across the space, causing the air to freeze and solidify. After hearing that Mu Chen had yet to cultivate the sovereign celestial body, not only did Zhao Zhong not have any intention to show mercy, but he became more cruel instead. Right at the start, he summoned his sovereign celestial body. Clearly, he wanted to give Mu Chen the heaviest blow with the quickest speed.

Although the sovereign celestial body that he had cultivated was not considered as being rare, and was also not among the 99 celestial bodies in ranking, it was already sufficient to deal with a kid, who had not even cultivated his sovereign celestial body yet. Mu Chen raised his head and stared at the enormous sovereign celestial body, his black eyes still looking calm. Yet, under that calmness, there was an icy current flowing.

"Sovereign celestial body... is it even strong? I will help you to refine it."

Mu Chen formed a seal with one head. He similarly showed no hesitation, and a bright column of spiritual energy gushed out from the top of his head. In the light column, a black light tower was partially visible.

Chapter 672: Shocking Everyone

Bang!

A light column burst out from the top of Mu Chen's head. In the light column, a black light tower was partially visible. Then, as Mu Chen's seals changed, the light tower immediately rushed out. As the light of the spiritual energy surged, a black Pagoda tower floated silently in the air.

On the surface of the ancient tower, large golden dragon symbols glittered with light as if they were wiggling, and emitted an inexplicable pressure.

As soon as the black Pagoda tower appeared, everyone in the palace started to look at it with a serious expression. Even the Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King watched with some surprise. Clearly, they had noticed that the black Pagoda tower was extraordinary.

"Humph, just some small tricks."

Seeing that, Zhao Zhong gave a cold humph. He had fought hundreds of battles and had seen much, not to mention the opponent here was far weaker than he was. Without a Sovereign Celestial Body, no matter what other abilities Mu Chen had, he would not be able to beat Zhao Zhong.

"Extreme Frost Finger!"

Zhao Zhong stomped violently on the ground and as his seals changed, his celestial body, which seemed to have formed from ice, abruptly pointed its finger down at Mu Chen. A very icy spiritual energy gushed out, and even the air was frozen.

The ice finger fell down like a hovering iceberg.

Mu Chen raised his head. Staring at the cold mist sweeping towards him, coldness also flashed in his black eyes. Even Liu Ming, who had cultivated the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body,

could not beat him. At the moment, the Sovereign Celestial Body cultivated by Zhao Zhong was far weaker than Liu Ming's, so it would be impossible to crush Mu Chen with this attack.

Bang!

Mu Chen stomped his feet suddenly, and it was as if even the palace vibrated slightly. Behind him, space distorted, and a purple sea seemed to have partially appeared.

Vroom!

A purple spiritual energy beam a few thousand feet thick dashed out suddenly just like a python. It flew across the air and collided with the falling ice finger like a bolt of lightning.

Sizzle!

The two smashed into each other, and instantly an ear-piercing sizzling sound burst out. The two powerful beams of spiritual energy charged at each other in an attempt to corrode one another.

Zhong Zhong sneered. "You are trying to use the power of spiritual energy to fight against a Sovereign Celestial Body?" The Sovereign Celestial Body was the strongest power a Sovereign master could use during battle. It was naive for Mu Chen to use his spiritual energy to stop the attack.

"Just freeze!"

His seals changed suddenly. A cold mist poured down from the ice finger like a waterfall trying to freeze all the spiritual energy below.

"Just burn!"

The corner of Mu Chen's lips curled up slightly. A purple flame flashed in his black eyes. Then, in the purple spiritual energy that was competing with the ice finger, purple flames abruptly gushed out.

As the purple flames appeared, the extremely cold mist abated at

an obvious rate. Even on the giant ice finger, water droplets started to fall down, and it eventually evaporated into nothingness.

"How is this possible?!" Zhao Zhong's expression changed suddenly. The ice mist contained in his Sovereign Celestial Body had been cultivated by merging many frost jades. When ordinary spiritual energy came into contact with it, if it was not frozen, it would still be slowed. At the moment, the mist was actually burned away by Mu Chen directly.

"Courtesy demands reciprocity. Now it's my turn."

Mu Chen smiled but his eyes were only filled with coldness as he swung his sleeves. The black Pagoda tower ascended into the sky and expanded as it flew against the wind, eventually growing to a height of 10,000 feet. After that, it crushed down like lightning and engulfed Zhao Zhong's Sovereign Celestial Body.

Roar!

When the black Pagoda tower pressed down, the golden dragons on its surface gave out a sudden, low dragon howl. On the Pagoda tower, layers of golden light bloomed and in an instant, five layers of the Pagoda tower became bright.

When Mu Chen battled against Liu Qingyun in the Spiritual Academy Competition, he could only ignite four layers of the Pagoda tower. However, at the moment he was much stronger than before, so he could ignite five layers easily.

Roar!

Golden light surged on the five layers of the Pagoda tower. On the body of the tower, five golden dragons roared and flew out, dashing into the tower. They turned into fierce golden flames and enveloped the ice blue celestial body.

The golden flames surged and emitted a dangerous fluctuation.

Staring at the golden flames, Zhao Zhong's expression also changed. Obviously, he had felt an intense threat from them.

However, he had fought many battles, so he took a deep breath and changed his seals. Immediately, an ice blue light surged on the Extreme Frost Celestial Body. Watching from afar, it was as if the celestial body were a frosty giant surrounded by ice mist

Vroom!

At the moment, the golden flames swept across and engulfed the frosty giant without any hesitation.

Sizzle!

Just as the golden flames gushed over, horror instantly filled Zhao Zhong's eyes because he noticed that as the golden flames swept across, his Sovereign Celestial Body was melting at a shocking rate.

The golden flames were so potent!

"D*mn it, impossible!"

Zhao Zhong gritted his teeth forcefully. Behind his back, his Sovereign Sea also appeared, and a large amount of spiritual energy continuously gushed into his Sovereign Celestial Body.

However, no matter how much he strengthened his Sovereign Celestial Body, the golden flames still burned across at a steady rate. As the flames floated past, the ice-like Sovereign Celestial Body melted rapidly.

Zhao Zhong's face started to turn pale, and cold sweat continuously broke out.

In the palace, the looks from the people who were originally waiting to watch a good performance also changed uncontrollably. The various lords stared at the golden flames in the Pagoda tower with a serious expression. It seemed that they were also somewhat shocked by the golden flames.

"This flame..."

On the lotus platforms, some surprise also flashed across the

usually calm faces of the Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King. The golden flames seemed to be extraordinary.

The always sleepy Sleeping King also opened his eyes slightly and muttered fuzzily, "Such a powerful flame."

The golden flames easily burned everything they touched. Regardless of how much Zhao Zhong tried to resist, the giant ice-like Sovereign Celestial Body quickly shrank.

A stabbing pain surged in Zhao Zhong's body. Even though he did not merge himself with the Sovereign Celestial Body, the two were firmly connected so he was also affected.

Zhao Zhong gritted his teeth. Although he felt very worried in his heart, he still did not admit defeat. He stared at Mu Chen with a vicious look and was trying to find an opportunity to counterattack.

"Stubborn."

Noticing his stare, Mu Chen also frowned slightly. Without further mercy, he waved his sleeves, and the golden flames swept across fiercely, completely engulfing the Sovereign Celestial Body.

He knew that if he wanted to become a commander of the Nine Nether Palace, he must show his real strength. Hence, what he needed to do at the moment was not to show mercy but to shock everyone!

To achieve that effect, he had to use the most powerful attack!

"Just incinerate!"

Mu Chen closed his palm suddenly. The golden flames began to burn violently, and the ice-like giant Sovereign Celestial Body instantly turned into water and started to pour down, eventually disappearing under the burning of the golden flames.

Sizzle.

Mist started to spread within the Pagoda tower, while the ice

giant collapsed with a loud bang.

Spit.

Zhao Zhong forcefully sprayed out a mouthful of blood, and his body fell backwards. He looked extremely miserable and weary. He stared at Mu Chen, his eyes filled with horror.

He could not believe that his Sovereign Celestial Body was actually refined by Mu Chen just like this!

In the palace, the original whispers came to a sudden halt. All the commanders looked solemn, and even the various lords' eyes narrowed. Although the Sovereign Celestial Body cultivated by Zhao Zhong was not special, it was certain that not everyone could refine it directly.

In addition, the young man before them was much weaker than Zhao Zhong.

Lord Asura stared at Mu Chen with his emotionless face. Finally, his look changed slightly and he muttered, "This young man... is not that ordinary."

Behind Lord Asura, Xu Qing, the head of the four great commanders, also gazed at the scene in surprise and nodded gently. The combat strength of this young man was clearly more than what could be seen on the surface. At the start, Zhao Zhong looked down on him, and he deserved to be defeated.

"Wow, Mu Chen is so strong," Tang Rou stared at Mu Chen in surprise and cheered in joy. At first, she had not been very confident in Mu Chen. He had not even cultivated his Sovereign Celestial Body, after all. However, she did not expect that the battle would end so simply. Not only was Zhao Zhong quickly defeated, but even his Sovereign Celestial Body was refined into nothingness...

Surprise could also be seen in Tang Bing's eyes. She nodded slightly. It is no wonder that sister Nine Nether values him. This

guy indeed has some real capabilities.

On the other hand, Nine Nether did not seem to be very surprised. A charming smile appeared on her previously cold face. What Mu Chen did was brilliant.

Lord Blood Hawk stared at Mu Chen with a dour look. He glanced at the dispirited Zhao Zhong and said tonelessly, "What trash."

In his voice, there was hidden anger. At first, he wanted to use this chance to defeat Mu Chen so that Nine Nether could not achieve her goal. However, he did not expect that Mu Chen would carry out such a decisive attack.

Zhao Zhong lowered his head in embarrassment. He glanced at Mu Chen with a vicious look and backed off awkwardly.

Mu Chen ignored him. He only raised his head and with his body straight, stared directly at Lord Blood Hawk with his black eyes. Although he still looked peaceful and mild, nobody looked down on him now.

He folded his hands at Lord Blood Hawk, and smiling he said, "Lord Blood Hawk, may I know if I am qualified to become the commander of the Nine Nether Palace now?"

Chapter 673: Beat to Death

In the palace, after hearing the clear words that Mu Chen spoke to him, some gloom flashed across Lord Blood Hawk's already frighteningly penetrating look. His finger tapped lightly on the armrest of the chair.

Although he did not speak, an invisible pressure spread across the place. It was like a hungry eagle's preying, fierce and fatal.

Mu Chen could definitely not contest with a grade five sovereign master at the moment, but he only frowned gently, his expression remaining calm. At that time, he even endured the pressure from Luo Tianshen, and there was clearly a tremendous difference between Lord Blood Hawk and Luo Tianshen.

"Humph."

Just as the pressure spread, Nine Nether gave a cold humph. The pressure around Mu Chen dissipated instantly.

Behind Lord Blood Hawk, Wu Tian still seemed to be smiling, yet his smile was somewhat surly and chilly. Clearly, he had not expected that asking Zhao Zhong to fight would have given Mu Chen a chance to display himself in such a way. From the attacks and the abilities that he had shown earlier, it was obvious that he was no weaker than an ordinary commander.

"Nice attacks you have there. Actually, I can't wait to fight you. May I know if you could enlighten me?" Wu Tian stared at Mu Chen, smiling, and said with a friendly look.

He knew that Lord Blood Hawk did not want to return the quota to contest for the Daluo Golden Pool back to Nine Nether. At the moment, Mu Chen had defeated Zhao Zhong. If he did not show up and break his opponent's spirit, the Nine Nether Palace would probably get what they wanted.

Hearing Wu Tian's words, many commanders in the palace

twitched their mouths slightly. Wu Tian was among the top commanders in the Daluo Territory, so his behavior at the moment seemed to be somewhat overbearing.

"I think that we can skip the fights between the commanders. If you think that my Nine Nether Palace is too weak, then let's have a battle between the lords. The one who loses will just give all the quota." Nine Nether's face was calm. She knew the strength of Mu Chen.

Although the latter had many different attacks, he had not cultivated his sovereign celestial body. While he may be able to fight some of the grade one sovereigns, Wu Tian was already a grade two sovereign. If they really started fighting, Mu Chen would probably be at a disadvantage.

Her words were rather calm, but they caused everyone in the place to be alarmed. The battle between commanders was still considered as being minor, but if it was to become a battle between two lords, that would be much more serious. Once someone lost, the person's reputation in the Daluo Territory would drop significantly.

Therefore, after Nine Nether said as much, even Lord Blood Hawk's look seemed to be hesitant. If, at the moment, Nine Nether only had the strength she had in the past, he would be wishing for the battle, but now, Nine Nether had passed her tribulation. Hence, her power was obviously not to be underestimated. Before clearly knowing her powers and trump cards, rushing into a complete conflict with her was clearly unwise.

"Ahem..."

On the lotus platform, the Condor King finally cleared his throat lightly, then said in a hoarse voice, "As a lord-level force in the Daluo Territory, the Nine Nether Palace naturally has a quota to contest for the Daluo Golden Pool. In the past, Nine Nether was not here, so the quota was temporarily transferred. Now that she

has come back, the quota should be returned."

The Spiritual Pupil King smiled and did not say anything. Hearing this, Lord Blood Hawk glanced at the Spiritual Pupil King. Seeing that the latter did not speak, he could only nod, before he said, "Since the Condor King has spoken, the quota shall be returned to the Nine Nether Palace. As for the one thousand drops of sovereign spiritual liquid, the Nine Nether Palace can keep them and does not need to return them to us. Anyway, the Nine Nether Palace now has many uncompleted things waiting to be done, all which would need a lot of sovereign spiritual liquid, right?"

When he spoke this last part, he smiled at Nine Nether. The clear taunt could be seen in his smile.

Nine Nether also replied to him with a smile, only her smile was filled with coldness. Then, still smiling, she said, "Since we have settled everything about the quota, let's discuss the cities that were originally under the ruling of the Nine Nether Palace."

Hearing this, Lord Blood Hawk's face instantly darkened. He was not too concerned about the contest for the Daluo Golden Pool. After all, even if Mu Chen could participate in the contest, he did not think that Mu Chen could stand out among all of the commanders to obtain one of the few quotas. As such, he felt confident that he could compromise.

However, Nine Nether seemed to also want to take back the authority to rule the cities that were already under his control at the moment. This was not something Lord Blood Hawk could tolerate.

Every year, those cities would turn in a large amount of sovereign spiritual liquid. For the Blood Hawk Palace to develop rapidly and become stronger continuously, sovereign spiritual liquid was the most essential item. Therefore, he would definitely not return these cash cow cities willingly.

"Nine Nether, you have just returned. Don't you think your

appetite is a bit too big?" Lord Blood Hawk said in a cold tone.

"I'm simply taking back the things that belonged to our Nine Nether Palace in the first place," Nine Nether said tonelessly.

"We did not take over those cities by force. You have left the Nine Nether Palace for many years, so how will those cities get any protection from you? Since you cannot protect them, they will naturally find another, better lord," Lord Blood Hawk said with a sneer.

"Lord Blood Hawk, we all know what is happening. Why do you need be so high-sounding? The tricks that you used, those secret threats, you still think that I don't know?" Nine Nether contradicted him directly.

In the palace, the faces of the two were both icy, neither willing to compromise. The other lords also remained silent, letting the two argue, which clearing indicated that they did not want to be involved in the mess.

"You two, please stop arguing."

On the lotus platform, the Spiritual Pupil King, who had not spoken yet, smiled suddenly. His completely dark pupils scanned everyone, as he added, "We in the Daluo Territory have our own rules. Everything within the rules is allowed. As for the ownership of those cities, if you don't like the situation now, you can launch an attack. Go ahead and still that sentence, as long as it's within the rules."

Hearing this, Nine Nether frowned slightly, while Lord Blood King laughed complacently. Being lords in the Daluo Territory, they naturally knew the rules in the Daluo Territory. The regions under the Daluo Territory were extremely huge. There were many cities, most of which were ruled by the Daluo Territory directly, while the remaining terrains were controlled by the nine lords. The nine lords were actually in disharmony, and there were frequent conflicts among them, due to the regions under their

ruling.

The Daluo Territory did not stop these conflicts. However, there was one rule, which was that the lords could not be directly involved in such conflicts. Only their subordinates could contest in such a situation.

At the moment, the Nine Nether Palace was indeed considered as being the weakest among the nine lord-level forces. Even for commanders, there was only Mu Chen, who had just become qualified.

On the other hand, the other lord-level forces had many powerful subordinates. If they started to fight, the Nine Nether Palace would obviously be at the losing end.

Hence, the Spiritual Pupil King's words seemed to be neutral, but he actually prevented Nine Nether's attempt to take back those cities. After all, the Nine Nether Palace could not rely on Mu Chen alone to fight against the many powerful people from the other forces.

Nine Nether gritted her teeth and wanted to say something, but saw the Condor King shaking his head gently at her. Only then, she reluctantly swallowed what she wanted to point out, instead saying in a cold voice, "Since this is the case, we shall see what will happen."

"Anytime." Lord Blood King smiled, not taking Nine Nether's words seriously, as they appeared to be fierce, but actually lacked confidence. After all, there was a huge difference between the strength of the subordinates of the two. Although Mu Chen did defeat Zhao Zhong previously, the latter was only considered as being average among all of the commanders in the Blood Hawk Palace.

Seeing this, Mu Chen did not say anything. Instead, moving his body, he appeared behind Nine Nether.

"Mu Chen, you are awesome," Tang Rou moved closer to Mu Chen and said, smiling. Her face was filled with joy. No matter what, Mu Chen had gained some honor for the Nine Nether Palace this time.

Tang Bing also nodded gently, then gave a rare smile to Mu Chen.

"I risked my life to fight, and finally got a smile from sister Tang Bing. Not an easy thing!" Mu Chen said, seeing that smile. Mu Chen then laughed uncontrollably.

Tee-hee.

At the side, Tang Rou covered her mouth and also giggled. Clearly, she could tell that Mu Chen was trying to tease Tang Bing.

Tang Bing blushed slightly, as she stared at Mu Chen in embarrassment. Then, her face restored its iciness, and she said, "When you really obtain the quota to enter the Daluo Golden Pool, I will smile until you are tired of it!"

"Then, it seems that I have to work hard!" Mu Chen said, seeming to be eager.

Tang Bing gave a soft humph and turned her head away, but the corners of her rosy lips curled up uncontrollably. Her originally tense mood had also relaxed quite a bit.

When Nine Nether realized that she could not reconquer the lost cities at this Meeting of the Nine Lords, she stopped saying anything else. In any case, she had already gotten the quota for Mu Chen. As for those things that were lost, she still had time in the future to reclaim them.

In the next part of the meeting, there were again discussions about other issues, but Nine Nether did not speak at all. After about two hours, the meeting concluded.

When the meeting ended, Nine Nether stood up directly and brought the three to the outside of the palace. At the entrance of the palace, they happened to meet Lord Blood Hawk and his

people. The two stared at each other, their eyes filled with coldness. It was as if, even the surrounding temperature had dropped.

"Ha, Nine Nether, it's good for a young person to have a dashing spirit. But remember, the stiffest tree is the most easily cracked," Lord Blood Hawk smiled and said.

"Lord Blood Hawk, you also need to remember that, if you are too greedy, your belly can't take it," Nine Nether said tonelessly.

"Haha, even if I eat the Nine Nether Palace, my belly wouldn't burst," Lord Blood Hawk replied, smiling. Then, he glanced at Mu Chen, who was beside Nine Nether with some coldness flashing in his eyes. Without saying anything else, he stepped out and left the place.

Wu Tian and Cao Feng also passed by them. The former stopped briefly beside Mu Chen. Smiling, he extended his arm and tapped on Mu Chen's shoulder in a friendly manner. He then said softly, "Bro, if you want to participate in the contest for the Daluo Golden Pool, then I have to remind you that..."

His voice paused, as his lips suddenly curled up to form a ferocious smile.

"Be careful not to be beaten to death by me."

He laughed, then tapped on Mu Chen's shoulder again, before leaving elegantly.

Staring at the back of Wu Tian as he walked away, Mu Chen muttered, "Indeed, I really want to... beat him to death."

Chapter 674: Cultivating the Great Solar Undying Body

At the door of the main hall, Nine Nether could hear Mu Chen's murmurs. A smile appeared on her usually cold countenance. "He's very noisy. It's alright if you beat him to death."

"I'll try my best." Mu Chen nodded.

Tang Bing and Tang Rou glanced at each other and smiled helplessly as they stood behind them. They didn't know where Mu Chen got his confidence from, as Wu Tian was a lot stronger than Zhao Zhong. He was considered one of the top among the Commanders in the Daluo Territory, and if they truly clashed, they couldn't imagine Mu Chen's fate.

This fellow was like a newborn calf who was not afraid of tigers. Young people were truly fearless indeed.

"Let's go."

Nine Nether smiled. The chilly aura in the main hall dissipated with a wave of her hand as she attempted to bring them away.

"Nine Nether!"

There was a sudden sound behind her, and Nine Nether stopped in her tracks. She turned to see Xu Qing, who was dressed in green robes. His eyes were bright and happy as he stared at Nine Nether.

"Oh, it's Xu Qing. What's the matter?" Nine Nether looked up and smiled. A cold resistance infused her seemingly gentle tone.

Nine Nether did not have an approachable disposition to begin with, and despite being acquaintances with Xu Qing in the past, they barely knew each other.

Looking at Nine Nether's eyes, Xu Qing froze. His usual calm demeanor vanished instantly as his heart raced. His eyes lit up brightly with heat and excitement.

"Welcome back," Xu Qing said softly.

"Thank you."

Nine Nether was neither cold, nor gentle when she nodded, and she had no intention of carrying on a conversation with Xu Qing as she turned around and left.

Upon seeing this, Xu Qing, who had gathered up the courage to say something more, became crestfallen as he shrugged his shoulders in self-mockery. However, his look of admiration at the retreating silhouette remained unabated.

"Tsk tsk. Looks like you didn't end up any better than me." Behind Xu Qing, there was suddenly a gloating voice. He turned his head and saw Zhou Yue smiling at him.

"At least I wasn't chased away," Xu Qing retorted. The fact that Zhou Yue liked Tang Bing was known by many. When he had hidden in Nine Nether Palace, he had been banished by Tang Bing wielding a sword.

"To put it this way, we are in a similar predicament." Zhou Yue smiled as he narrowed his eyes at the tall silhouette following behind Nine Nether and whispered, "I have heard about it. The man who came back with Nine Nether is called Mu Chen... It seems that this time, Nine Nether is going to let him represent the Nine Nether Palace in the battle at the Daluo Golden Pool. What do you think?"

"Haha, the fight won't get to us anyway." Xu Qing smiled and he knew that no matter if Mu Chen was an ordinary figure or not, he would never shake his chance to use the Daluo Golden Pool because he had absolute confidence in his strength. As the leader of the top four Commanders, he had the capability to prove his worth, and not through mere lip service.

"That is true. There will be a good show to see this time, and I would like to see how far this Mu Chen can go," Zhou Yue said.

Both of them smiled as they turned to leave.

...

Several silhouettes flitted across the sky as Mu Chen approached Nine Nether and stated solemnly on the way back to the Nine Nether Palace, "Xu Qing has intentions towards you."

"Shut up." Nine Nether rolled her eyes.

Tang Bing and Tang Rou smiled.

Nine Nether turned to look at Mu Chen as she stated seriously, "You have seen Wu Tian and Cao Feng. How is it? Are you confident? If you want to get a slot at the Daluo Golden Pool, you have to defeat at least one of them."

"It's hard to say now."

The young man pondered. A reassuring smile appeared on his handsome features as he clenched his fist.

"But in two months' time, I will win."

In two months, he should be able to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body successfully, and by then, he would also possess the Sovereign Celestial Body, rendering him invincible among opponents of the same rank.

Even if Wu Tian had the capability of a Second Grade Sovereign, he would not have any trace of fear.

Tang Bing and Tang Rou looked at the self-confidence on the young man's face and were somewhat surprised. They did not know too much about Mu Chen, so they did not understand how he could make great progress within the short period of two months. After all, at his current stage there was still a big gap between him and the likes of Wu Tian and Cao Feng.

Even though they had some doubts in their hearts, they did not speak any more when they saw Nine Nether nod gently. They trusted Nine Nether, and she trusted Mu Chen, so they also

believed in Mu Chen.

Perhaps he could really do it.

Tang Bing and Tang Rou both looked at each other and whispered to Mu Chen, "All the best." Encouragement and anticipation blossomed on their beautiful faces, which were almost identical. This would be the first battle at the Nine Nether Palace after their return, so it was of great importance.

Looking at the encouragement and expectation in the eyes of the two beautiful girls, Mu Chen also raised his head, took a deep breath, and then smiled. It seemed that he must attain the quota at the Daluo Golden Pool.

However, what made him more excited was the fact that he could finally cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body after coveting it for so long...

That would be the starting point of his road to becoming the unparalleled Sovereign Master.

...

Blood Hawk Palace.

Lord Blood Hawk sat on the throne with a somber expression. His eyes were closed, but his overflowing murderous intent made many of the strong men in the hall afraid to speak.

Anyone could see that Lord Blood Hawk was in a murderous fury at this moment.

A strong man in the Blood Hawk Palace asked in a whisper, "My lord, are we slowing down our actions to merge with and annex Nine Nether Palace?"

"Slowing down?"

Lord Blood Hawk opened his eyes and cast a cold glance, and the strong man who had spoken trembled suddenly, feeling cold all over.

"She is merely a woman with whimsically unrealistic thoughts. Why would I be afraid of her?" Lord Blood Hawk stated in a chilling tone.

"Pass down the order to speed up the contact with the various city owners under the Nine Nether Palace. As long as they change sides to my Blood Hawk Palace, I can give them a lot of benefits. If not, it is akin to looking down on my Blood Hawk Palace, and if I pursue matters in the future... " Lord Blood Hawk waved his hand, and smirked coldly.

"Yes my lord!" The high-ranking officials in the Blood Hawk Palace hurriedly agreed.

Lord Blood Hawk's glance turned towards Wu Tian and Cao Feng as he stated nonchalantly, "In the battle of Daluo Golden Pool, I have already garnered the slots for both of you. I hope you won't disappoint me."

Wu Tian and Cao Feng clasped their fists in response.

"In addition..."

A chilling smirk appeared at the corners of Lord Blood Hawk's mouth as he said, "It seems like Nine Nether regards that fellow, Mu Chen, very highly. Since she is so confident... In the battle of the Daluo Golden Pool, destroy him."

Upon hearing this, Wu Tian glanced at Cao Feng. Cruel smirks appeared on both of their faces.

"We always had the intention of doing so."

...

Nine Nether Palace, Cultivation Chamber.

Mu Chen sat quietly, his face calm, and there was no ripple of spiritual energy fluctuation around him. He did not begin to practice cultivation directly, but sat still for nearly four hours, waiting for his mind to reach the true state of tranquillity as he

slowly opened his eyes.

He formed seals with both hands, and a beam of dim light emerged from his body. It hovered in front of him, transforming into a mysterious black page. It was the Immortal Pages that hid the method of cultivation of the Great Solar Undying Body.

Mu Chen glanced at it silently. This page of ancient black paper contained a secret that would make the most powerful Sovereigns go into a frenzy. The value of the Primordial Immortal Body was enough to cause even a Heavenly Sovereign to lose his composure.

It was indeed extremely fortunate that he could obtain it.

After summoning this page of mysterious black paper, Mu Chen's seals changed again, and three masses of light surged out of the Mustard Seed Bangle. Within the three masses of light, there was a constant spread of terrifying spiritual energy fluctuations. The sounds of waves of water rang in the air, a sign that the spiritual energy was very powerful.

Within these three light masses were the three cultivation ingredients that Mu Chen had expended much effort to obtain.

Nine Suns Zoysia.

Void Great Solar Fruit.

Undying Divine Leaf.

The three ingredients were incredibly rare, and the fact that Mu Chen could gather them all must have meant that he had expended much energy and effort. Thankfully, fortune favors the brave, and now all three ingredients were gathered together.

The originally unattainable Great Solar Undying Body could truly be cultivated now.

Mu Chen's long fingers touched the Immortal Pages, only to see faint lights surging on the mysterious black paper. Finally, a torrent of light poured out, entering his body as it travelled along

and through his fingers.

The majestic and ancient information exploded in his mind. The torrent made his body tremble, but he forcefully willed himself to endure it as he constantly received the volume of information regarding the complex cultivation methods of the Great Solar Undying Body.

The reception lasted a full dozen minutes before it was over.

Mu Chen's eyes opened suddenly as he fixed his gaze on the three natural treasures before him. His eyes were solemn. From the prior information, he knew that he only had one chance to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body.

This was not only because of how rare the ingredients were, but an even greater reason was that if cultivation failed, it would be difficult for the body to adapt to the Great Solar Undying Body again. Hence, even if one gathered the ingredients again, it would be impossible to cultivate it successfully.

Such a harsh reality caused Mu Chen's heart to tremble in trepidation.

However, Mu Chen quickly suppressed his shock, and as he took a deep breath, his dark eyes no longer held any hesitation.

No matter how difficult it was to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body, he would not give up!

What's more, he would definitely succeed in cultivating it!

He had promised the girl!

Mu Chen conjured up seals with both hands, his gaze sharp and determined.

Let's begin then!

Chapter 675: Nine Suns as it's Form, the Envelopment of One's Form with the Great Solar Energy

Mu Chen's heart was as calm as quiet waters, as the spiritual energy around him withdrew in quiet restrain, just like a deep pool, whose depths could not be seen. As his mind calmed, the Sovereign Sea in his body, however, began to rage with tumultuous waves.

Whoosh.

The vast and majestic Sovereign Sea shimmered with purple hints. Its huge waves surged, the sound of water rattled, and a massive amount of spiritual energy condensed within the Sovereign Sea.

To condense and cultivate the Sovereign celestial body required a vast, almost terrifying amount of spiritual energy, and the present Mu Chen must be prepared for it. Within the turbulent Sovereign Sea, a golden light slowly hovered from the sea, and sat cross-legged amidst the waves. It was Mu Chen's spirit, its expression solemn.

Hoo.

A breath of spiritual energy, tinged with a purple flame, gradually emitted from the spirit's mouth. Its gaze turned somber, as its palms conjured complex and unique seals.

Boom!

Just as the seals were completed, a loud rumbling road rang out. Huge pillars of spiritual energy, bursting out of the Sovereign Sea, could now be seen.

Bong! Bong!

The light pillars of spiritual energy soared toward the sky, then

suddenly plunged down, like majestic dragons, before finally clashing together harshly. The entire scene was an overwhelmingly shocking sight!

The entire Sovereign Sea was shaken, as turbulent waves raged on, and a brilliant purple light from the sea spread in the air. In the center of the collision, the violent clash of spiritual energy created a sense of distortion within the space.

Mu Chen's spirit lifted his head to glance at the bright scene before him, as he conjured seals again with his small palms.

Boom.

The Sovereign Sea shook again, and countless beams of spiritual energy surged toward the sky, like water anacondas, before finally roaring toward the place filled with purple light. The magnificent scene appeared as if a whale was sucking water, which was extraordinary.

The magnificent spiritual energy converged toward the location continuously, and with its constant surge, the purple light of the land grew brighter. Amid the glimmering brightness, a massive shadow could be seen, forming vaguely.

This was the first step to cultivating the Sovereign celestial body, which was to cultivate its embryonic form using one's own spiritual energy. This step also depended only upon one's own spiritual energy.

In the vast Sovereign Sea, constant pillars of light, with great spiritual energy, soared into the sky. As they did so, Mu Chen's spirit waved his hands, causing them to finally infuse themselves entirely into the massive shadow. The powerful spiritual energy within the Sovereign Sea was consumed and expended at an alarming rate.

However, this step was not much of a threat to Mu Chen, who had a strong foundation in cultivation, as the spiritual energy in

his Sovereign Sea was entirely made possible through his own self-cultivation. Coupled with his fusion with the Unperishable Flame, the quality of his spiritual energy was superior to that of ordinary spiritual energy.

When the surging of energy lasted about ten minutes or so, the riot in the Sovereign Sea gradually subsided, and a glaring purple light permeated the air of the Sovereign Sea. Mu Chen's spirit lifted his head to glance at the sky, which was now covered with purple light.

The sky suddenly began to shake, as a massive purple shadow, the height of which was about a thousand feet, slowly stood upright in the sky, terrifying spiritual energy fluctuations rippling around its body. The embryonic form of the Sovereign celestial body had now been formed!

Mu Chen looked at the purple shadow, heaving a quiet sigh of relief. However, he then tensed up again, for he knew that the real cultivation was just beginning.

"Nine Suns Zoysia, transform!"

A low murmur sounded in Mu Chen's heart. In the cultivation chamber, the Nine Suns Zoysia, which had been hovering in front of Mu Chen, shivered suddenly, then transformed into a beam of bright light, rushing straight into Mu Chen's slightly open mouth.

Boom!

The sky above the Sovereign Sea seemed to be torn apart at this time, only to reveal a dazzling ray of light that was descending from the sky, as if the sun were falling. Within the light, one could see a swaying Zoysia, above which, there seemed to be nine scorching suns rising.

Mu Chen's spirit stretched out his fingers and pointed in the air.

"The Nine Suns as its form."

The Nine Suns Zoysia descended straight, as had been

commanded, then landed on the massive purple shadow's crown. As soon as the Nine Suns Zoysia entered the giant shadow, it disintegrated sharply, as nine scorching suns surged out, then finally suspended themselves in the head, heart, limbs and other important parts of the giant shadow.

Whoosh.

When the nine suns returned to their position, they seemed to burn in an instant, the terribly high temperature, which they had emitted, spreading rapidly. The immense spiritual energy that was within the massive shadow also burned at an astonishing speed.

The huge form of the giant shadow was also rapidly shrinking. In accordance to this speed, it would only take a few moments for this embryonic form of the Sovereign celestial body that Mu Chen had expended so much effort to cultivate, to be burned out completely by the nine scorching suns. Once the embryonic form of the Sovereign celestial body was burned to nothing, Mu Chen's efforts would have been all for naught.

In the cultivation chamber, Mu Chen's eyes, which had been tightly shut, now suddenly opened, as he flicked his fingers. The Mustard Seed Bracelet on his wrist trembled, as a torrential current surged out.

When the torrent rushed out, dense fog rose in the cultivation chamber. This fog was what the spiritual energy had transformed into. The current was like a river brook, and it was condensed from the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. Moreover, in this little river brook, there were at least ten thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid!

Mu Chen had known long ago that, if he wanted to cultivate the "Great Solar Undying Body", he would need a massive amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. Thus, he had been asking Nine Nether to break the seal of the Spiritual Condensing Bowl, which would allow him to obtain close to another fifty thousand drops of

Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

This was an extremely large number, and Mu Chen could feel that this amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid already accounted for most of all the spiritual power that was stored in the Spiritual Condensing Bowl. However, in order to successfully cultivate the "Great Solar Undying Body", paying the price of fifty thousand Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was clearly worth it!

As soon as the spiritual energy river that had been transformed from Sovereign Spiritual Liquid appeared, it was absorbed into Mu Chen, who sucked it in with his mouth. His body shook violently, and as he didn't dare allow such a terrifying amount of spiritual energy to remain in his body, he directly surged it into his Sovereign Sea. As it traveled, it rushed into the embryonic form of the Sovereign celestial body.

Boom!

In the sky of the Sovereign Sea, numerous cracks opened, and floods of spiritual energy poured down, surging into the Sovereign celestial body.

Whoosh!

With the addition of such a huge amount of spiritual energy, the shrinking speed of the embryonic form of the Sovereign celestial body finally slowed down. A wave of magnificent spiritual energy was incessantly burned by the nine scorching suns. But as it burned, a golden mist rose, which curled up and was eventually absorbed by the massive Sovereign celestial body.

Golden spots of light began to appear on the massive Sovereign celestial body, all of which shimmered with purple light. Under the burning of the nine scorching suns, the spiritual energy was consumed at an extremely alarming rate. In only half a day, the spiritual energy river stream, which was made up of ten thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, was completely burned out.

The effect of the spiritual energy river stream was that it allowed the embryonic form of the Sovereign celestial body to become brighter, as more golden spots appeared...

The seals of Mu Chen's spirit changed again. The sky crumbled again, as cracks appeared, and the mighty torrents of spiritual energy descended. Clearly, he intended to again use the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid that had been prepared prior.

If the first step was dependent upon how strong one's spiritual energy was, the second step would be determined by how much wealth one had...

The speed at which spiritual energy was consumed in the process of cultivating the "Great Solar Undying Body" was also a shock to Mu Chen. If he had not been lucky enough to have won the " Spiritual Condensing Bowl " in the Spiritual Academy Competition, and it just so happened that an ancient sect had accumulated such a massive amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, it seemed that, even if he did gather the ingredients successfully, he would fail, because he couldn't accumulate such a large amount of the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

After all, an ordinary Sovereign celestial body would merely require a maximum of one to two thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. However, this amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, when applied to this context, was entirely insufficient.

Mu Chen gasped quietly in his heart, as he tried to focus. The second step would be to allow Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to continuously surge into the embryonic form of the Sovereign celestial body.

This process took him close to eight days. In these eight days, the surging of spiritual energy did not cease at all, and all fifty thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid had been expended entirely.

As the last drop of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid had been

exhausted, even Mu Chen, who had such an optimistic outlook, had been terrified. He knew that, if others found out that he had used fifty thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in order to cultivate a Sovereign celestial body, they would be shell-shocked. However, the fifty thousand drops of the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid had clearly had a remarkable effect.

Within the Sovereign Sea.

Mu Chen's spirit looked up in the sky. He saw a gigantic shadow, the height of which was about a thousand yards, stand up. This shadow no longer shone with a purple light, but an intense gold.

The golden flow of light pervaded every corner of its huge body, as if it was a golden Buddha, oppressive and mysterious. An invisible, oppressive feeling permeated the air, which was terrifying.

Mu Chen clearly felt that, within the golden shadow, the nine scorching suns were still burning, but could no longer burn the Sovereign celestial body. That was because the Sovereign celestial body was now beginning to take shape.

The second step "Nine Suns as its form" had been successful! Mu Chen heaved a sigh of relief in his heart, but his body tensed up again in the next moment. His gaze turned increasingly somber, for he knew that the next step would be the most dangerous step in cultivating the "Great Solar Undying Body".

If he was unable to persist, then all of his efforts would be for naught.

In the cultivation chamber, Mu Chen opened his eyes to stare at the fruit before him. That was the Void Great Solar Fruit, and the spiritual energy it possessed was more terrifying than that of the Nine Suns Zoysia.

Mu Chen stared at it, his gaze resolute. He grabbed the Void Great Solar Fruit, and stuffed into his mouth, his dark eyes filled

with determination. He did not want to fail at this point, not after so many years of planning and preparation!

Envelopment of one's form with the Great Solar energy!

Chapter 676: Successful Cultivation of the Celestial Body!

The calm Sovereign Sea suddenly raged, and the surface of the golden shadow that stood above the Sovereign Sea rippled.

An indescribable fury descended from the sky, enveloping the entire Sovereign Sea.

Mu Chen's spirit looked up solemnly, and the sky above the Sovereign Sea seemed to be torn apart by a great crack in which a dazzling ray of light permeated the whole sea.

Boom! Boom!

A terribly oppressive pressure descended, only to see a huge golden sun tearing apart the space with a domineering aura and surging into the Sovereign Sea.

The golden sun was clearly one transformed from the Void Great Solar Fruit.

The fierce golden rays wrapped around the golden sun. The terrifyingly high temperature permeated the Sovereign Sea, causing the spiritual energy within the sea to evaporate.

The power of the Void Great Solar Fruit had been more overwhelming than that of the Nine Suns Zoysia.

Mu Chen looked at the scene with shock in his heart. He took a deep breath and suppressed his terror. His hands flashed quickly as he conjured seals, his deep voice reverberating in the Sovereign Sea.

"Envelopment of one's form with Great Solar energy!"

Buzz.

As Mu Chen's roar lingered, the golden sun slowly set and entered the crown of the massive golden shadow bit by bit.

Boom!

The golden flames suddenly poured into the golden shadow, and golden drops of liquid on the gilded surface of the body dripped down as if it had been melted.

Mu Chen's spirit flushed red. He could feel that in this golden shadow, it was as if there were a burning furnace. The golden flames rose and raged as its power increased sharply, as if it were about to burst through the golden shadow.

Mu Chen's eyes were somber. If the previous Nine Suns Zoysia helped to strengthen and condense the embryonic form of the Sovereign Celestial Body, the Void Great Solar Fruit would come to test its firmness. If it was successful, the Sovereign Celestial Body would be truly cultivated, but if it failed, the golden sun would completely destroy the unqualified Sovereign Celestial Body.

Whoosh.

With the golden flames above the golden sun growing brighter and brighter, golden liquid dripped down faster and faster on the surface of Sovereign Celestial Body, and the huge Sovereign Celestial Body gradually shrank.

Mu Chen's gaze grew increasingly somber.

The gold flames emitted from the golden sun grew more and more violent, and the intensity of the frenzy was still rising. At this rate, the Sovereign Celestial Body would not be able to withstand the onslaught.

However, Mu Chen had no route of retreat. If he failed, he would no longer have a second chance to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body, and this was an outcome he could not bear.

Mu Chen gritted his teeth as he stared fixedly at the Sovereign Celestial Body dripping constantly with golden liquid.

Time flew by in the blink of an eye.

Half a day passed in an instant.

Drip.

Golden liquid flowed down like a stream on the surface of the golden Sovereign Celestial Body, reducing the majestic Sovereign Celestial Body to a fraction of its original size. Its body distorted as if it had been burned to the limit by the high temperature.

A tiny golden flame seeped through the pores of the Sovereign Celestial Body and wound around the body's surface.

Mu Chen's gaze stared pointedly at the spot between the Sovereign Celestial Body's eyebrows as a golden sun transformed into a fireball, its golden flames writhing in a frenzy like coiling snakes.

The golden sun was now too bright to look at.

The violent fluctuations were still rising.

Gradually, Mu Chen's face became twisted. His eyes were bloodshot, and his palms quivered. He looked at the deformed Sovereign Celestial Body and his face paled. He knew that the Sovereign Celestial Body he had condensed could not bear the burning of the golden sun.

That power was too brutal.

"It's going to explode..."

Mu Chen's heart palpitated vigorously. In the middle of the Sovereign Celestial Body's eyebrows, the golden light grew brighter and brighter, and the violent fluctuations showed that the Sovereign Celestial Body had reached its limit.

The golden sun flickered with light like a quietly beating heart, and in that moment, its light suddenly solidified, and a beam of golden bright light burst out.

Whoosh!

Numerous golden pillars of light surged fiercely from within the

Sovereign Celestial Body as this originally indestructible body suddenly exploded!

The instant the Sovereign Celestial body exploded, Mu Chen conjured seals with both palms.

In the cultivation chamber, the silently awaiting Undying Divine Leaf shot directly into Mu Chen's forehead, and at the same time, a narrow beam of light skimmed through the sky of the Sovereign Sea, surging into the exploding Sovereign Celestial Body.

Boom!

Terrifying golden shockwaves raged as turbulent waves roared in the Sovereign Sea. The space was intensely distorted, even rendering the Sovereign Sea close to bursting.

Mu Chen's spirit hid within the depths of the Sovereign Sea to prevent itself from being impacted by the terrible shockwaves.

The havoc continued for a long time, and then finally gradually weakened. Mu Chen's spirit emerged from the depths of the Sovereign Sea, and he immediately looked towards the sky permeated by golden light.

The golden shadow was no longer there, as it had apparently been destroyed by the shockwaves.

Had it failed?

Mu Chen stared at that area and suddenly sat quietly cross-legged. His hand conjured seals, and he recited the training chant of the Great Solar Undying Body. It flowed smoothly and quietly within his heart, like flowing water.

"My heart is as the Great Sun, brilliant and everlasting..."

The training chant rang like a song of bells in Mu Chen's heart as he came to a realization. His hands conjured seals as he growled, "Undying Protection!"

The golden light filled the land as it suddenly rippled and spread.

Within the golden light, an ancient dead leaf was quietly suspended in the air, and then it disintegrated into tiny spots of light and scattered out.

These lights seemed to possess a magical ability to recover, and amid the fluctuations, swaths of golden light gathered together. With the convergence of the golden light, a huge golden shadow condensed together bit by bit.

In a short time, the golden light filled the land as a Sovereign Celestial Body condensed and formed again.

Moreover, the Sovereign Celestial Body condensed, and this time dazzled brighter as it was shrouded in golden light. Its gilded body was as if it were the most solid entity in the world, rendering it invincible.

Furthermore, on the surface of the golden Sovereign Celestial Body, some dark purple patterns could be seen. The patterns were simple yet sophisticated, and upon closer inspection, were images of rising suns.

It was as if 10,000 suns had risen in the sky, forming a grand and majestic scene.

This Sovereign Celestial Body sat cross-legged quietly in the sky, and in the silence, golden light flowed. An indescribable sense of ancient majestic aura filled the atmosphere, shocking Mu Chen.

"Without destruction one cannot be formed... One can only be formed after destruction..." Mu Chen murmured to himself.

Now that the Sovereign Celestial Body had been formed, there was no doubt that it was more perfect compared to the one he had condensed previously, as there were no signs of flaws nor blemish on it.

It was clear that the true Great Solar Undying Body had to go through prior destruction to finally become more perfect and powerful with the power of the Undying Divine Leaf.

"Is this..."

Mu Chen lifted his head, shock written in his eyes as he said, "The Great Solar Undying Body?"

The golden light dissipated little by little, and the majestic golden Sovereign Celestial Body became clearer. Its face was no different from Mu Chen's, but from a distance, it resembled a giant golden Buddha with the power to suppress heaven and earth.

Behind the Sovereign Celestial Body's head there was a huge golden sun hanging in the air. Golden fire surged around the burning sun, mysterious and overwhelming.

The cultivation of the Great Solar Undying Body finally succeeded!

Irrepressible ecstasy flashed in Mu Chen's eyes as he finally succeeded in cultivating the Great Solar Undying Body after much effort!

He had been waiting for this moment for many years.

Mu Chen took a deep breath as his spirit moved, appearing above the crown of the Great Solar Undying Body before gradually descending into it.

As the spirit fused with it, the Great Solar Undying Body's eyes opened suddenly. Golden light permeated the air, emitting a majestic and mysterious aura.

In the cultivation chamber, Mu Chen's tightly shut eyes opened suddenly as he sat up abruptly. Golden light surged out from within his body, and a massive golden silhouette appeared.

Crash!

The cultivation chamber trembled violently, and the golden Sovereign Celestial Body stood above it. Immediately, a huge crack appeared in the chamber as it finally collapsed with a deafening rumble.

Nine Nether had been sitting on a stone platform outside the cultivation chamber. She looked up sharply toward the cultivation chamber filled with golden light, and a thrilling spiritual energy fluctuation soared to the sky.

"Has the cultivation succeeded?"

Nine Nether's heart skipped a beat as she soared into the sky, her hands conjuring seals. A beam of massive spiritual energy descended and enveloped thousands of yards in the vicinity.

As the light shrouded the area, a golden Celestial Body of about a thousand yards burst out from the cultivation chamber as it stood tall in the heavens and earth.

Nine Nether looked up as she saw the golden Celestial Body that resembled a giant golden Buddha with a golden sun hovering behind it. Shock was written all over her beautiful face.

She knew that the Sovereign Celestial Body that Mu Chen had been cultivating was extraordinary, but she did not expect it to be so spectacular and majestic.

"This is the Great Solar Undying Body?" she murmured, as shock and horror filled her heart.

Chapter 677: Nine Nether Troop

The vast golden Sovereign celestial body stood tall in heaven and earth, as golden light permeated throughout all. The spiritual energy between heaven and earth showed signs of rampage, with torrents of converging spiritual energy wrapping around the Sovereign celestial body, painting a majestic sight.

Nine Nether hovered in mid-air, as she gazed at the Sovereign celestial body, shock written in her eyes. Although she had the physical constitution of a Divine Beast, and thus, could not cultivate a Sovereign celestial body, she was still knowledgeable and experienced enough to have seen many of the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies.

However, she couldn't help but feel shocked at what she now saw, for she found that most of the Sovereign celestial bodies which she had seen did not seem to have the power of this Sovereign celestial body now before her.

Nine Nether surveyed her surroundings, as she thought of how fortunate it was that she had isolated this area. Otherwise, many would have noticed the commotion by now, and in that case, Mu Chen's hidden means would have been exposed.

"This is the power of the Sovereign celestial body?"

The golden Sovereign celestial body opened its golden eyes, filled with infinite majestic authority, and its great hands, which were transformed by Mu Chen, slowly clenched, causing the space to twist and distort. An indescribable force of terror rippled through the limbs and shook people, rendering them with the impulses to howl skyward.

The spiritual energy between heaven and earth roared, then transformed into a rainbow of light, which was then inhaled by the Sovereign celestial body. As it breathed, clouds and mist lingered and curled, emitting a spiritual aura.

It was only at this moment, that Mu Chen realized the true extent of the Sovereign celestial body's power. Its was a power that was akin to beholding a high mountain in awe and admiration. If he had not possessed a hidden ace up his sleeve, like the Spiritual Array Master during his battle with Liu Ming, it would have been extremely difficult for him to defeat the latter.

After all, the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body that Liu Ming had cultivated had been very powerful too. However, Mu Chen was confident that, with his current ability, he could demolish and destroy the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body directly.

Although he was unclear which grade of the Sovereign celestial body the "Great Solar Undying Body", which he had cultivated, could match up to, he was sure that it was definitely countless times more powerful than the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body.

Buzz.

The golden celestial body emitted a slight buzzing sound, as it began to shrink rapidly amid the flickering golden lights. After a few short moments, a slender figure appeared above the sky.

The figure was naturally Mu Chen, as he glanced down to look at his hands, a look of unconcealed glee on his face. He was very satisfied with the power of the "Great Solar Undying Body".

After all these years of expectation, there was no disappointment. After successfully cultivating the "Great Solar Undying Body", he could truly be considered as a First Grade Sovereign!

The him currently was anticipating the battle of the "Daluo Golden Pool" in the near future, for he wanted to borrow the power of the "Daluo Golden Pool" to perfect his "Great Solar Undying Body". Just as the "Great Solar Undying Body" vanished, in the depths of Daluotian, numerous glances were suddenly cast toward Nine Nether Palace.

"These fluctuations... Is that lass Nine Nether up to something?"

One of these glances came from the Condor King, who was one of the three Kings in the Daluo Territory. He gazed toward the direction of Nine Nether Palace, and despite Nine Nether's swiftly setting up a spiritual energy barrier to mask and isolate Mu Chen's Sovereign celestial body, powerful Sovereigns like the Condor King could still sense that something was amiss. Although the moment was too short for him to perceive what it was clearly, he could still sense the burst of spiritual energy fluctuations.

Another glance came from the Spiritual Pupil King. As he narrowed his eyes, the space before him rippled, and his gaze seemed to pierce through the space, shooting straight into Nine Nether Palace. However, Mu Chen now had reverted to his original state, with only traces of lingering golden light in the sky left to reveal the unusual spiritual energy fluctuations.

The Spiritual Pupil King retracted his gaze, his expression calm. He shut his eyes, and with the extraordinary divine abilities of his eyes, he knew that the unusual fluctuations were caused by the young man named Mu Chen. However, he did not pay much attention to this, as Mu Chen was merely a lad that had just stepped into the Sovereign-stage, merely a nobody that did not deserve his attention.

As they retracted their gazes, a bleary-eyed man opened his eyes abruptly. The man was in an attic, hidden even further in. For the first time, there was a look of wonder on his usually lazy expression.

"What a powerful Sovereign celestial body..." He murmured in a low tone.

...

"Congratulations, you finally got what you desired."

Although Nine Nether had set up the spiritual energy barrier in the nick of time, she did not know that the commotion had already attracted the attention of the top three aces in the Daluo Territory.

She moved and appeared in front of Mu Chen, her eyes crinkled with mirth, as she knew how long Mu Chen had prepared for this day to come.

Mu Chen grinned as he asked, "Looking at my 'Great Solar Undying Body', which grade do you think it belongs to among the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies?"

Nine Nether pondered and replied, "It's not easy to determine, as we have not pitted them against each other. Moreover, many powerful Sovereign celestial bodies possess their own unique ability, but judging from its majestic aura, this 'Great Solar Undying Body' is at least within the top 50."

"Only the top 50?" Mu Chen was dissatisfied with the ranking.

In any case, the "Great Solar Undying Body" was one of the necessary conditions to cultivate the "The Primordial Immortal Body", and the "Primordial Immortal Body" was ranked fourth in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies!

"Don't be greedy, a Sovereign celestial body ranked within the top 50 is already considered as being a sect's precious treasure, even in the forces within the Daluo Territory. Even Seventh and Eighth Grade Sovereigns would desire it and be willing to offer their services to the elders just to cultivate it, let alone ordinary folk."

Nine Nether rolled her eyes at Mu Chen, as she thought: This fellow, did he think a Sovereign celestial body ranked within the top 50 was just a common commodity?

Mu Chen rubbed his nose sheepishly, as he knew Nine Nether was right. Even the young hall master of Tian Xuan Hall could only cultivate the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body, which was ranked 97th.

However, he could also feel that there seemed to be a lot of mystery hidden within the "Great Solar Undying Body", and now

that he had just cultivated it, it was completely impossible for him to use its full potential. Otherwise, he believed that Nine Nether would never just give an evaluation of it being in the mere top 50 ranking.

With a wave of her hands, Nine Nether dispersed the shrouded aura of spiritual energy. Not far away, two beams of light surged and appeared in front of him. It was Tang Bing and Tang Ruo, and the two beautiful women's eyes were appraising Mu Chen. They were both somewhat surprised, as the oppressive spiritual energy, which emanated from Mu Chen, was obviously much stronger than it had been a month ago.

"Looks like you have succeeded in cultivating your Sovereign celestial body?" Tang Bing asked in astonishment.

Mu Chen smiled and nodded, as he glanced at Tang Bing and asked in surprise, "Have you advanced through?"

The spiritual energy fluctuations around Tang Bing had become much stronger than they had been a month ago, so clearly in this month's period, she had successfully advanced through and entered the Sovereign-stage.

"It's all thanks to your Sovereign Spiritual Liquid." Tang Bing was elated to have advanced to the Sovereign-stage, revealing as such with a dazzling smile that was now blooming on her usually cold, expressionless face.

Mu Chen smiled, and with a flick of his fingers, a beam of light surged towards Tang Bing, who then hurriedly caught it. A crimson red scroll laid within the beam of light.

"This is the method of cultivation of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. I believe it will help you greatly." Mu Chen smiled.

After snatching Liu Ming's Mustard Seed Bracelet, he had found the method of cultivation of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body within it. He did not care for the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body at

this point, but no matter what, this was a Sovereign celestial body that had a famed ranking, and ordinary Sovereigns would desire it. Thus, it was perfectly suitable to gift it to Tang Bing.

Upon hearing that this was the method of cultivation of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body, which was ranked 97th in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies, Tang Bing was stunned and immediately shook her head, declining it.

"It's too much of a gift, I cannot accept it."

After all, not everyone could have the opportunity to cultivate the "Great Solar Undying Body", and Tang Bing had originally wanted to cultivate any Sovereign celestial body. After her abilities had increased, she would then choose to cultivate a stronger Sovereign celestial body. She had not expected that Mu Chen would gift her a Sovereign celestial body that had such a reputable ranking.

"Hehe, Mu Chen, are you trying to court my sister? That's generous of you, what with the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, and now the Sovereign celestial body." Tang Rou teased him playfully, as she grinned cheekily.

"You mischievous lass! I'll tear your mouth out!" Tang Bing blushed. She grit her teeth in a show of mock anger, as Tang Rou giggled, hiding behind Nine Nether hurriedly.

After getting teased by Tang Rou, Tang Bing was at a loss of what to do. She held onto the red scroll, knowing that she couldn't accept it, nor could she return it, so she stomped her foot in exasperation.

"It's alright." Nine Nether finally spoke with mirth in her tone.

She wrapped her arm around Tang Bing's slender waist in an embrace, as she smiled and said, "Just accept it for the time being, as you do need a Sovereign celestial body that suits you now anyway."

Upon hearing Nine Nether's words, Tang Bing nodded and thanked Mu Chen.

"Thank you, I will return you this favor I owe in the future."

Mu Chen was about to decline, but when he saw how serious she was, he just nodded, as he knew that this girl had her own set of principles.

"Bing'er, how's the strength of our Nine Nether Palace now?" Nine Nether asked abruptly.

"Is Sister referring to the Nine Nether Troop?"

Upon seeing Nine Nether nod, Tang Bing smiled and replied, "Rest assured, in these years since Sister left, I did not grow lax. Our Nine Nether Troop is even stronger now than when you first left."

Nine Nether nodded assuredly, as she said, "Now that Mu Chen is one of the Commanders of our Nine Nether Palace, according to the rules, he should lead the Nine Nether Troop, agreed?"

After all, Tang Bing had been the one in charge of the Nine Nether Troop these years, and it was only fair to gain Tang Bing's permission before letting Mu Chen become the Commander.

Upon hearing this, Tang Bing nodded without any hesitation, and replied, "No problem."

As she finished speaking, she suddenly glanced at Mu Chen with a smile. "However, there are many strong men in the Nine Nether Troop, and each of them are unruly and defiant, so I'm afraid Mu Chen would not be able to tame them."

Mu Chen, who had originally wished to decline this, lest Tang Bing feel dissatisfied that he was going to meddle in her affairs, now raised his brows in interest, saying with amusement in his tone, "Let's have a try then."

Chapter 678: Commanding the Nine Nether Troop

The distribution of power in the Daluo Territory was a little out of the ordinary. With the exception of the army that the Daluo Territory itself ran, every Lord had its own army. If these Lords wanted to gain a larger territory, they had to use their own troops to seize and annex them in territories outside of the Daluo Territory. Thus, each faction of the Lord-ranked individuals vigorously developed the army under its command to make the faction stronger.

For example, the Asura Palace's Asura Troop, Cracking Mountain Palace's Cracking Mountain Army, Blood Hawk Palace's Blood Hawk Troop...

Of course, although these armies were strong and domineering, everyone knew that the most fearsome fighting force in the Daluo Territory was the army directly under its command, the Daluo Celestial Army—except that this army was not under the control of any Lord. It belonged to the unfathomable Sleeping King, and of course, the mysterious Dominator, who was always difficult to find.

The Nine Nether Troop was an army under the Nine Nether Palace.

However, due to the fact that Nine Nether had been away for many years, and because she was not good at managing the army, when she left, the Nine Nether Troop was considered to be the weakest of the Nine Lords' Armies. Fortunately, Tang Bing was diligent in training the troops in the years of Nine Nether's absence, so the Nine Nether Troop gradually become strong. Although they were unable to match up to the Ashura Troop and other powerful troops in terms of resources, they were obviously much stronger than before.

Nine Nether Palace, Training Ground.

In this vast training ground, there were countless black figures standing in silence. They wore black armor and stood upright like a rock, unmoving. Their breathing was consistent, and their majestic aura was startling, as if thunder and lightning had struck.

On the raised platform in front, silhouettes skimmed through the air as Nine Nether, Mu Chen, Tang Bing, and Tang Rou appeared.

"Our respects to the Palace Master!"

When Nine Nether appeared, the thousand figures, as unmoving as rocks, bowed respectfully with their fists held to their chest. Their voices chorused in unison, reverberating like rumbling thunder.

As Mu Chen stood on the platform, he looked down at the army that resembled a mass of dark clouds, and his eyes were filled with wonder. It was indeed a true army, and it was as if they were breathing as one with their spiritual energy circulating around them, meeting without any resistance.

It was apparent that this had taken years of cooperation and camaraderie to achieve.

"The Nine Nether Troop has always remained at a scale of 1,000 people. We adopted an elimination system. At the end of each year, the last 100 people ranked in the assessment are eliminated and become other forces in the Nine Nether Palace. In the end, rookies who have performed well will replace them." Tang Bing smiled.

Mu Chen was slightly surprised and amazed at the girl's ability. She completely abandoned the advantage of quantity and sought to achieve only quality. This brutal elimination was the main reason for the increasing might of the Nine Nether Troop. Naturally, he could see that everyone in the troop had achieved the level of Three Sovereign Disasters, and the figures standing in the front showed signs of advancing into the Sovereign-state.

In the face of this army, even though Mu Chen had cultivated the Great Solar Undying Body successfully, if they struck together he would have to be cautious and avoid clashing head-on with them.

"You did well," Nine Nether said in commendation. It looked like it had been the correct choice to entrust the Nine Nether Troop to Tang Bing.

"We had to resort to this as our Sovereign Spiritual Liquid could only develop and sustain a troop of this scale." Tang Bing smiled helplessly. She did want to expand the Nine Nether Troop, but due to the limited amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in Nine Nether Palace, expanding the army would only shake the foundation of the Nine Nether Troop instead.

"It has been hard on you." Nine Nether patted Tang Bing's shoulder. During these years, Tang Bing even distributed her own Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to the Nine Nether Troop. Nine Nether was ashamed of her own contribution when Tang Bing had sacrificed so much.

"It's alright." Tang Bing smiled as she glanced at the Nine Nether Troop. Her crisp voice turned colder. "From this day on, Mu Chen will be the Commander of the Nine Nether Troop."

Upon hearing her words, low murmurs sounded from the Nine Nether Troop which was usually as stable as a rock. Everyone looked towards the young man on the platform before becoming silent.

Silence, at such times, was clearly a sign of opposition.

Tang Bing raised her brows as she asked nonchalantly, "Does anyone have any objections?"

A voice finally sounded. Standing at the front of the Nine Nether Troop was a tall man with the stature of an iron tower. He wore black armour and was armed with a metal spear, his expression firm. "Commander Tang Bing, if you were the one who

commanded the Nine Nether Troop, I believe none of us would have any objections.

"We are aware of the difficulties that Nine Nether Palace has faced over the years, and you have contributed your own Sovereign Spiritual Liquid and distributed it to us, so we fully respect you. If your earlier words were orders, we would have followed them. But, I am afraid that some of my brothers will not accept it. "

Mu Chen looked at the man who was as sturdy as an iron tower, and was surprised to find that this man's strength had reached the level of a First Grade Sovereign, but judging from his spiritual energy fluctuations, he had yet to cultivate a Sovereign Celestial Body.

This level of ability astonished Mu Chen, as he did not expect to find Sovereign Masters in the Nine Nether Troop.

Mu Chen's gaze shifted and found that to the man's left and right, two figures stood still, and the spiritual energy fluctuations of the two men were not weaker than his own.

Three Sovereign Masters.

"The three of them were the strongest and most prestigious of the Nine Nether Troop, and they all had high hopes of being promoted to Commander." Tang Rou stood beside Mu Chen as she introduced the three men to him softly. "The man who spoke is Qiu Shan, standing on his left is Bei Mo, and to his right is Lan Hai.

"They were originally wandering practitioners, but after offending a sect, they were hunted down and eventually saved by me. I then let them join the Nine Nether Troop, and in these years, they have been very loyal. Despite Blood Hawk Palace offering huge sums of money to tempt them to leave, they chose to remain here," Tang Bing commented.

Mu Chen nodded. Being able to join the Nine Nether Troop was

considered a pretty good outcome for ordinary wandering practitioners. At least they could obtain free Sovereign Spiritual Liquid here. However, the fact that they could resist the bribery of Blood Hawk Palace surprised Mu Chen as he thought, Looks like these three men do know how to repay the kindness shown to them.

"If you want the Nine Nether Troop to truly respect your command, it's up to you to prove your worth to them," Tang Bing said softly. Although she could command the Nine Nether Troop to follow orders, that would result in the Nine Nether Troop growing resentful and harboring thoughts of resistance. Thus, it could only depend upon whether Mu Chen could tame these recalcitrant guys.

Mu Chen smiled as he walked forward, appearing in the training ground.

"You all refuse to respect my command?" Mu Chen asked as he approached the three figures standing in front.

The three men did not speak as they glanced at Mu Chen nonchalantly. It was apparent that they did not hold much respect for him. They could tell that Mu Chen's ability was that of First Grade Sovereign, and probably stronger than they were, but that was not enough for them to thoroughly respect him.

"Just attack together. If you want to express your dissent, at least let me know if you're qualified to do so," Mu Chen stated calmly.

Rage surged in the three men's eyes as they stated in a low timbre, "We have yet to cultivate the Sovereign Celestial Body."

The implication was that if Mu Chen used the Sovereign Celestial Body to suppress them, there was no way he would gain their respect.

"I will not use the Sovereign Celestial Body," Mu Chen stated nonchalantly.

"Alright!"

The three men's gazes suddenly turned sharp and with no hesitation, they stepped out, and three specters surrounded Mu Chen. Their palms dealt blows with the force of thunder and were as swift as lightning, sweeping towards Mu Chen's vital parts. The moment the three men moved, they exhibited a chemistry in their cooperation.

The magnificent spiritual energy of the three men encompassed the might of wind and thunder as they dealt their blows.

Mu Chen remained motionless but clenched his fists tightly. His skin turned silver at an astonishing speed, and a low rumbling sound thundered as if it were ringing through the bones.

In the face of such a fierce attack, he remained still.

Bong!

The aura of the three men's blows landed heavily on Mu Chen's body as astonishing spiritual energy erupted due to the impact. The earth beneath their feet immediately disintegrated, forming a huge crack.

The surface of Mu Chen's body rippled with waves of impact that were clearly visible. His body was a resplendent silver, and even his eyes had become silver bright. Thunder circulated on his body, and he resembled a thunder god who had descended onto the earth.

Qiu Shan and the other two's faces twisted in shock as they could feel that their blows had landed on an indestructible rock that had been hardened by the impact of thunder and lightning striking it countless times.

"What a powerful physical form!"

Shock flitted across the three men's hearts as they had also cultivated a physical form, but it was no match for Mu Chen's.

"Retreat!"

Sparks of thunder burst out from Mu Chen's silver eyes. As thunder surged and spread, a terrifying spiritual energy wreaked havoc, causing the three men's bodies to shake violently as they fell in a state of embarrassment. Their feet left deep trails as they scrambled on the ground.

Low gasps of shock came from the Nine Nether Troop, as many men were overwhelmed at the scene before them. They did not expect that the alliance of Qiu Shan and the other two would fail to scratch the young man even in the slightest.

"That's awesome," Tang Rou gasped loudly, with astonishment in her eyes.

Tang Bing nodded as she glanced at the tall and slender figure standing before the Nine Nether Troop. That figure had such a majestic aura, it made everyone focus their attention on him. This young man seemed to have such a unique charm. No wonder Sister Nine Nether valued him so much.

"If you are not convinced, feel free to challenge me again." Mu Chen's silver eyes gazed at the three men nonchalantly.

Upon hearing this, Qiu Shan and the other two smiled bitterly as they shook their heads despondently. The gap between them was too insurmountable. Their joint attacks had failed to even scratch Mu Chen's physical form, and this confrontation proved that they were not in the same league as Mu Chen.

Upon seeing this, the silver light surrounding Mu Chen gradually dissipated. The lightning runes on his chest, which had been concealed by his clothes, also faded silently. Upon closer inspection, there had been the maximum number of ten lightning runes.

Unknowingly, Mu Chen's Thunder God Physique had reached its maximum potential.

No wonder he dared to resist the three men's brutal attacks using

his physical form.

"Commander Mu Chen."

Qiu Shan and the other two retreated a step as they clasped their fists in respect. Under Mu Chen's crushing, dominating strength, they were thoroughly convinced of his ability and hence respected him fully.

Chapter 679: Willing Submission

"Greetings, Commander Mu Chen!"

When Qiu Shan and the other two had no choice but to admit their defeat, the Nine Nether Troop finally lowered their heads. The sound of their neat voices resounded like thunder throughout the plaza.

With a calm expression, Mu Chen looked over at that army, which resembled black clouds, before turning his attention back to Qiu Shan and the other two. He then said, "You are all seniors of the Nine Nether Troop. For the past few years, despite going through the toughest times in Nine Nether Palace, you never left. Accordingly, as the new commander, I will reward those who have gained merit."

When he spoke to this point, he paused. Only when he saw the shock in Qiu Shan and the other two's gazes, did he continue to say, "I have a scroll, which holds the method to practicing 'Heavenly Flame Celestial Body', and I will teach it to you later."

"Heavenly Flame Celestial Body?"

Qiu Shan and the other two's expressions changed instantly. They stared at Mu Chen in slight disbelief. "The Heavenly Flame Celestial Body, which is ranked 97th?"

Not only emanating from them, but there were also bursts of outroar coming from within the entire Nine Nether Troop. Clearly, they knew about the title of this Heavenly Flame Celestial Body.

Their gazes turned fiery right away. Although this Heavenly Flame Celestial Body was only ranked toward the end of the 99 Sovereign Celestial Body, it was still on the list. Thus, it was evidently tougher than those others, which could not even get on the list.

Even in the Daluo Territory, a Sovereign Celestial Body of this rank was not something anyone could practice. But now, Mu Chen was using it as a reward. Such a reward could not be seen as a small one.

"Thank you, Lord Commander!"

Due to the enticement of that Heavenly Flame Celestial Body, Qiu Shan and the other two's expressions became more excited. They immediately cupped their fists and thanked him with a respectful tone.

Finally, their feelings of unfairness dissipated completely. After all, someone who was able to reward the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body so easily, albeit with even their young age, must have a verve incomparable to their own.

Mu Chen waved, before sweeping his eyes over everyone and saying with a deep voice, "Hereafter, within the Nine Nether Troop, as long as someone possesses an outstanding war achievement, not only can they obtain enough Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to sprint towards the Sovereign-level, they also stand the same chance to acquire the method to practice the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body after their successful sprint. Of course, you will have to look at your own good fortune, as to whether you can successfully practice it or not."

Wow.

There was once again a burst of outroar within the Nine Nether Troop. Many people licked their lips with fiery gazes. For the past few years, they too were aware of the plight of the Nine Nether Palace. Thus, they usually used their Sovereign Spiritual Liquid carefully. Although no one actually said anything, everyone had the same hopes of obtaining some Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in order to accelerate the speed of their practices.

Furthermore, in order to sprint towards the Sovereign-level, one would require a large amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, which

needs a long time to store. But Mu Chen's words dispelled their biggest concerns. In addition to that, was the enticement of obtaining that Heavenly Flame Celestial Body afterwards.

"But the Nine Nether Troop is always recuperating. How are we to obtain war achievements?" There were still some perceptive people within the Nine Nether Troop, who asked this with a small voice right away.

It was then that everyone snapped out of their thoughts and nodded. For the past few years, due to the decline of the Nine Nether Palace, the Nine Nether Troop never had the chance to go to war. Although the territories belonging to the Nine Nether Palace were being continuously conquered, the Nine Nether Palace was without a master. Thus, despite feeling sullen and hateful, they did not dare take any action.

"The past should be left in the past..." Mu Chen said lightly. "From today onward, we will take back what truly belongs to the Nine Nether Palace. We will fight back against those who still dare to oppress us. So, we must leave those days of recuperation behind us. Those who are not satisfied can leave the Nine Nether Troop, as from today onward, the Nine Nether Troop will be the sharpest spear of the Nine Nether Palace, which will be directed at all our enemies."

He said this calmly, but it was enough to make the whole Nine Nether Troop dumbfounded. Then, their bodies began to tremble in excitement, with some of them even becoming teary-eyed, due to their toilsome endurance for the past few years.

In Daluotian, the Nine Nether Troop had held the lowest social status. No matter where they went, they would attract disdainful looks. In fact, some malicious people would refer to the Nine Nether Palace as the Women's Palace, and to the Nine Nether Troop as the Women's Troop. All this was due to the fact that, for the past few years, every time the Nine Nether Palace was being provoked, they would choose to simply grin and bear it. In the end,

they even readily surrendered their place in the Daluo Golden Pool.

After a long period of time, even they felt slightly numb. That was why, when they heard what Mu Chen said, it seemed to encircle around the Nine Nether Troop's determination, and they were suddenly uncontrollably overwhelmed by their emotions.

"As the Commander commands!"

All of the Nine Nether Troop stood still and, just like thunder, they lowly roared in an orderly fashion.

On the high platform, Tang Bing, who was watching this scene, couldn't help but bite her red lips with her pearly white teeth, as her beautiful eyes gazed at that slender shadow. No matter how strong she was usually, she was still ultimately a woman. Thus, she lacked a sense of bloodlust in her bones, which only men had. When it came to defense, Mu Chen would most certainly be inferior to her. But when it came to offense, clearly she would be inferior to Mu Chen.

Although the Nine Nether Troop gave her great respect, it was still rare to have a moment such as this, where they were overwhelmed by their emotions.

"How about it?" Nine Nether asked with a smile.

Tang Bing nodded lightly, before saying with a smile, "Elder sister Nine Nether has good judgment. Mu Chen is definitely much stronger than Cao Feng."

She pouted slightly, revealing a rare sense of femininity, before saying, "But this fellow may be a bit too generous. How can I give out so much Sovereign Spiritual Liquid?"

Tang Bing could be considered as the housekeeper of the Nine Nether Palace, as she was in charge of the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. In the past, she had to live through her days, using them only sparingly. She was unlike Mu Chen, who was like a lion with his mouth opened wide, for he let out grand promises, such as

being able to sprint towards the Sovereign-level, as well as guarantees in obtaining Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

"He probably wants to fuel war by warfare," Nine Nether said, while she lazily stretched. A cold color flit through her beautiful, long, and narrow eyes. "It's just like what Mu Chen said. From today onward, the Nine Nether Palace will be changing their ways, whereby we will take back everything which once belonged to us."

Tang Bing nodded silently, for even she had a slight hope in her heart. Of course she had hoped to be able to see a Nine Nether Palace that was filled with vitality and bloodlust, where any enemies who came would receive their terrifying revenge.

For the past few years, the Nine Nether Palace had been bullied terribly. It wasn't that she did not feel angry about it, but they were in such uncontrollable circumstances that Lord Blood Hawk would always force them to make mistakes, so that they would then have an excuse to disband the Nine Nether Palace. Thus, no matter how wronged she felt, she would never give the opponent a chance.

Mu Chen was rather satisfied with the eruption of enthusiasm by the Nine Nether Troop. He nodded, and without saying another word, he turned back to glance at the high platform. He knew that he now had completely acquired the respect of the Nine Nether Troop.

"I did not expect you to be so familiar with this carrot-and-stick trick," Nine Nether smiled happily and said, while looking at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen smiled. This trick of his could not be considered as new, but it was certainly effective.

"The Nine Nether Troop is not bad," Mu Chen complimented. He was extremely satisfied with this Nine Nether Troop. It was not weak, whether it be with regards to their vigor or their strength. Their only defect was their slightly low number of people, but they

still had a lot of potential.

"Of course," Tang Bing smiled. There was a hint of proudness in her eyes, which she failed to conceal. This was because of the fact that, for the past few years, she had focused all her attention on this. Otherwise, how could a Nine Nether Palace that had lost Nine Nether be able to support themselves until Nine Nether had returned once again?

"But it seems to have brought trouble to elder sister Tang Bing," Mu Chen said lightly.

After the Nine Nether Palace lost Nine Nether, from the fact that Tang Bing was still able to train the Nine Nether Troop to the point they were now, and never stopped enduring through the many provocations, it was obvious that she must have sacrificed a lot. Indeed, it must have been extremely difficult for a girl like her to have done this.

No wonder everyone in the Nine Nether Troop treated her with the greatest respect, including Qiu Shan and the other two. Mu Chen could see that, if they revered Nine Nether, then they must have had an immense and sincere respect for Tang Bing.

Tang Bing was slightly startled. She looked over at the smile on the beaming face before her eyes, feeling a light bump on the seemingly soft area of her heart, as well as a sour sting on her pretty nose. Just because she never spoke about the unjust treatment she had received for the past few years, it didn't mean that it didn't exist.

It was just that, after losing Nine Nether, someone had to support the Nine Nether Palace on their shoulders, and she was that model. Thus, she could only show her cold and rigid side, while trying her best to strive on until Nine Nether's return.

"Don't worry, elder sister Tang Bing. In the future, if anyone dare come and cause trouble in the Nine Nether Palace again, I will beat them until they cannot be recognized by even their own parents,"

Mu Chen said with a smile. The grin on the youngster's handsome face at this moment was gentle and brilliant. It made Tang Bing's pretty face flush slightly. She even lost her usual coldness and rigidness, as she nodded lightly.

"But don't think that, just because you said a few complimenting words, that you don't have to consider the huge amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid which the Nine Nether Troop will need. We need so much that you won't be able to take them out, even if you sold me." Tang Bing regained her original colder expression quickly, as she looked over at Mu Chen, saying so with a smile.

Mu Chen nodded. This was definitely a problem. The territories of the Nine Nether Palace's subordinates were severely eroded, and the remaining Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in his hands could not last for long. Thus, if they wanted to continue on for a long time, they would have to rely upon themselves.

"I can only rely on all of you for this sort of thing. But, I will keep my eye on Lord Blood Hawk," Nine Nether said with a smile. According to the rules in the Daluo Territory, the King could not take any active battle action and only servants could enter into combat. This was also the reason that Lord Blood Hawk was not even in the slightest bit afraid of them, because he refused to believe that the small amount of people in the Nine Nether Palace could defeat his Blood Hawk Palace, which was filled with a galaxy of talent.

Mu Chen nodded and stretched. He gazed into the distance with a sharp eye. "After the battle of Daluo Golden Pool, we should begin to take back what we have lost."

"How are your preparations going?" Tang Bing asked curiously. After all, this was the first time, after so many years, that the Nine Nether Palace would be participating in the battle of Daluo Golden Pool. It was assumed that the other sects must be keeping a close eye on them.

"Everything is in order."

Mu Chen smiled faintly. His bright eyes were filled with confidence. After completing his practice of The Great Solar Undying Body, he was no longer afraid of any opponents of the same level.

But the battle this time was of extreme importance to him and the Nine Nether Troop. Thus, he could not treat it lightly, despite his capabilities.

Mu Chen lightly touched the Mustard Seed Bracelet. Suddenly, he recalled a secret divine art named 'Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art', which was in a scroll that he had snatched from Liu Ming.

Chapter 680: The Strange Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art

Mu Chen quietly sat cross-legged on a hill in Nine Nether Palace. There was a golden scroll in between his palms, and golden lights continuously emanated from it.

After a long while, Mu Chen opened his eyes and looked at the golden scroll. He was baffled and felt at a loss.

The golden scroll contained the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art that he had snatched from Liu Yan.

Mu Chen had been studying it for three days, but he was unable to get anything out of it. He did not have any clue on how he could cultivate the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art.

Mu Chen's expressions kept changing. Suddenly, he formed a seal with his hands. As the seals changed, majestic spiritual energy swirled out and turned into a Purple Spiritual Dragon in his palms. The Purple Dragon roared, and the crying of a dragon resounded indistinctly.

Boom!

As Mu Chen threw out a blow with his palm, the Purple Spiritual Dragon whizzed out. It struck a mountain, and cracks started to form on it.

Mu Chen stared at the cracks and frowned. When he had condensed the Purple Dragon, he had used the seal for the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art. Although he had successfully cultivated it, the power was extremely weak...

Given Mu Chen's current strength, he could easily flatten the mountain. However, after using the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art, his power seemed to have weakened.

The Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art was full of oddity.

"Why is this so..." Mu Chen muttered. He was baffled. This was his first time encountering such a strange Divine Technique. No wonder the owner had auctioned it off. It was difficult to cultivate.

Mu Chen pondered this while his hand held onto the golden scroll. The power of the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art could not be what he had displayed. In this case, he might have cultivated it incorrectly.

However, was this not the way to cultivate Divine Technique?

Mu Chen shut his eyes and ran through the cultivation method in his mind. He immersed himself in the words and tried to find out what he had missed.

Mu Chen was in this state for two hours. Suddenly, he paused. His intuition made him stop at one of the lines in the training chant.

"Gather the energy in the Dragon and Elephant..."

Mu Chen frowned. His dark eyes were glittering. Is it referring to the gathering of the spiritual energy in the Dragon and Elephant? He had tried it before...

"Unless I have gathered at the wrong place," Mu Chen muttered. He suddenly had a thought. His mind went into the Sovereign Sea, and majestic spiritual energy continued to whoosh in the purple Sovereign Sea.

Mu Chen's spirit floated up from the Sovereign Sea. He then stood on the surface of the Sea. After pondering for a while, he suddenly formed a seal, and the speed became increasingly fast. Afterimages formed, and one could not see them clearly.

"Rise!" Mu Chen's spirit shouted.

Boom!

The Sovereign Sea raged, and several spiritual energy beams shot up into the sky. The beams crossed one another's paths in the sky,

and spiritual energy raged. Indistinctly, it turned into a humongous Purple Dragon.

The huge dragon occupied the horizon, and powerful spiritual energy fluctuations swirled out like a windstorm.

The huge Purple Dragon was condensed by the Dragon Seal of Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art. It was powerful, but something seemed to be lacking in this dragon.

It was similar to a Divine Artifact without a spirit.

Mu Chen's spirit waved his hand, and the Purple Dragon disappeared into thin air. Majestic spiritual energy returned to the Sovereign Sea. Once again, he shut his eyes and went into deep thought.

Half a day passed by.

Mu Chen opened his eyes and looked at the purple Sovereign Sea. Purple flames were moving on the surface of the Sea.

They were the Unperishable Flame.

Mu Chen stomped his feet, and the spiritual energy shot up again. As the seals changed, a huge Purple Dragon formed in the sky.

This time around, when the huge Purple Dragon had been formed, purple flames from the Sovereign Sea swirled out and covered the huge Purple Dragon.

Crackle. Crackle.

The huge Purple Dragon was covered in purple flame. Its body speedily shrank, and it became crystal clear. From afar, it looked as though it were made of purple crystal.

Purple flame was moving in its eyes. It was like a finishing touch which gave life to a dead object that had been formed by the spiritual energy.

Roar!

When the huge Purple Dragon had shrunk to less than 100 feet, its body was dazzling like a gem. The Purple Dragon looked up into the sky and roared. The cry of a dragon resounded in the Sovereign Sea and stirred up a huge wave.

The Purple Dragon flew in the sky and roared again. Suddenly, it whizzed down into the Sovereign Sea.

Mu Chen lowered his head and looked at the Sovereign Sea. The Purple Dragon was lying in the Sea as though it were in a deep sleep. Purple flames moved on its body as it slept. It seemed to be fortifying itself.

As Mu Chen looked at the Purple Dragon lying in the deep Sovereign Sea, he was enlightened. The Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art was unlike the usual Divine Technique. It could only be condensed in the Sovereign Sea. It had to be kept in the Sovereign Sea and be fortified by the spiritual energy.

One would need a special item like the Unperishable Flame in order to condense the Purple Dragon. It would be the finishing touch to bring the Purple Dragon to life.

"Gather the energy in the Dragon and Elephant. The Dragon and Elephant will cross paths and consume the heaven and the earth..." As Mu Chen muttered, his eyes became brighter. In the next instant, he formed a seal and shouted, "Elephant Seal!"

Boom! Boom!

Another majestic spiritual energy shot up into the sky. This time around, it was not a Purple Dragon that had been condensed. It was a huge Purple Elephant.

The huge elephant stepped in the air and looked as though it could uphold the heavens and the earth. It looked majestic.

Mu Chen merged the Unperishable Flame with the huge elephant. Its eyes were surging with flame, and it came to life.

"Dragon and Elephant cross paths!"

Mu Chen lifted up his hand and the Purple Dragon that was lying in the Sovereign Sea whizzed up. It then collided against the huge Purple Elephant that was in the sky.

When the dragon and elephant collided, purple lights raged out. A bright photosphere appeared in the sky, and the dragon and elephant crossed their paths inside it.

Swish. Swish.

Purple lights glittered before a terrifying power burst out. The photosphere that was filled with horrifying power suddenly dimmed down. Majestic spiritual energy spread out in all directions, and the photosphere turned into spiritual energy light spots and came down from the sky.

As Mu Chen looked at it, he turned pale. Had he failed? Was the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art so weird?

Mu Chen stared at the light spots in the sky and gritted his teeth. If this were to happen to ordinary people, they would have given up after so many tries. However, to Mu Chen, it made him more determined to succeed.

He did not believe that he could not handle this Divine Technique!

Mu Chen changed the seal again.

The spiritual energy in the Sovereign Sea started to whiz. The Purple Dragon and Purple Elephant continued to condense and cross paths...

However, it always ended up in a failure.

Hoof.

Mu Chen's spirit was panting hard. He had failed many times. He did not know why he would always fail at the last step. When the dragon and elephant crossed paths, they were unable to merge together and exude terrifying power.

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and muttered, "This is not working..." He sensed that once the dragon and elephant came into contact with each other, they would start to disappear. It was like two fires coming together, and he could not bring about any changes.

If he could succeed in this step, he would be able to bring out the power of the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art... However, this step was not easy.

Mu Chen's spirit laid on the surface of the Sea. His eyes were glittering, and he kept thinking.

The last step was the crucial step to the power of the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art. Even if he had successfully merged the two powers with the same properties, it would only enhance its power slightly.

Do they need a power with a different property?

Mu Chen squinted. The spiritual energy in his body had merged with the Unperishable Flame. When he used the spiritual energy to condense the dragon and elephant, they would have the same properties.

He needed a special power that had a different property from the Unperishable Flame.

Where could he get such a power?

Mu Chen's expressions kept changing. Suddenly, a thought came to his mind.

Mu Chen opened his eyes and formed a seal with his hands. Lightning started to flash and thunder sounds traveled out of his body. His body had turned into lightning.

Thunder sounds were heard in the Sovereign Sea, and dark lightning landed from the sky.

Mu Chen's spirit waved his hand, and spiritual energy gathered together and turned into a huge elephant. The huge elephant

looked up into the sky and roared. It devoured the dark lightning.

Swish. Swish.

The huge elephant that was purple in color speedily turned dark. It then turned into a huge Black Elephant. Lightning was glittering on top of its head.

Mu Chen looked at the Black Lightning Elephant with joy. He waved his hand, and the Purple Dragon in purple flame whizzed out. It then hung itself before the Black Lightning Elephant.

Purple Fiery Dragon. Black Lightning Elephant.

Two different giants hung in the sky. Indistinctly, a destructive fluctuation rippled out.

Mu Chen's eyes shone brightly.

The feeling is right!

This is the power of Nine Dragon and Nine Elephant Art!

Chapter 681: Peak of the Golden Pool

On the top of the peak, Mu Chen opened his eyes abruptly. One of his eyes was suffused with purple flames, while lightning flickered in the other, making him look extremely mysterious and somewhat eerie.

He stood up quickly and swayed his sleeves. Two beams of rainbow-like rays radiated from his palms with lightning speed. They then transformed into a purple dragon and a black lightning elephant in the sky.

As the colossal creatures pervaded the sky, the waves of spiritual energy within the world started fluctuating vigorously.

"The convergence of the dragon and the elephant!"

Mu Chen formed seals on both of his hands. The roars of the dragon and the trumpets of the elephant thundered in the air. The two Herculean creatures appeared, then zoomed past in the sky like comets, before colliding into each other.

Thump!

A terrifying burst of spiritual energy blasted across the place. Two elementally different forces heavily collided into each other. At that very moment, the space began to distort and purple flames and black lightning ricocheted around. Then, a disc that was several meters wide gradually appeared.

The disc was separated into two sides — black and purple. The purple dragon lurked around it, while the lightning elephant stood upright. The scene looked as majestic as a Dragon-Elephant Sacred Pearl. The convergence of the two terrifying powers had led to a horrific transformation that would make one's hair stand on end.

Ka-cha!

The space seemed as if it was unable to resist such forces, as hairline cracks started to spread across the sky...

Mu Chen's expression turned solemn at that very moment. This force seemed to be a little out of his control. The Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art was truly frightening.

On the surface of the Dragon-Elephant Disc, a violent energy started to bounce around frantically, to the point that it looked as if it was going to shatter itself into pieces.

Zip!

The Dragon-Elephant Disc began to vibrate at a higher frequency, before it then emitted a loud buzzing sound. As Mu Chen witnessed the scene, he quickly snapped his fingers. The Dragon-Elephant Disc then transformed into a raging beam of rainbow-like rays and sped into the distance.

"Argh..."

Mu Chen lost control of the Dragon-Elephant Disc. His mouth twitched the moment he realized that the Dragon-Elephant Disc was heading in the direction of the Nine Nether Palace. The beam of ray zoomed across the sky, then started to fall toward the Nine Nether Palace.

Swish!

A beam of light started radiating from the Nine Nether Palace; it appeared on the sky and started transforming into a human-like figure. The radiating figure turned out to be Nine Nether. She was stunned at the sudden attack, but she immediately identified the source of it. An exasperated expression suddenly appeared on her beautiful face.

"This fellow."

Nine Nether grumbled a little, then immediately held her fair hands out. A majestic wave of spiritual energy spiralled out and transformed into a pair of giant wings of rays. The wings acted like a shield, purposed for the protection of the frontlines of Nine Nether Palace.

Dong!

The Dragon-Elephant Disc bombarded the wings of rays vigorously. A terrifying wave of spiritual energy blasted into the air. It looked like a grand firework display from a distance.

The people in the Nine Nether Palace also lifted their heads up. They were stupefied by the sight.

Most of the impact from the burst of spiritual energy after the explosion of the Dragon-Elephant Disc was resisted by the wings of rays. However, as the impact faded away, the wings of rays shattered into pieces, only to reveal Nine Nether's beautiful face! She looked a little stunned.

Mu Chen's offensive attack had actually broken through her shield! Although this was merely a spontaneous act, she still had the abilities of a Grade Four Sovereign. Her status was three grades higher than Mu Chen's. Hence, even if he resorted to all sorts of tricks, it would still be rather difficult to compensate the gap between their abilities.

Nine Nether's beautiful eyes lit up. She took a step forward and immediately appeared on the peak, right before Mu Chen. The latter just laughed a little, as he quickly tried to explain himself. "It's just a slight mistake."

"What was that?" Nine Nether did not put the blame on Mu Chen. Instead, she asked him this out of sheer curiosity.

"It's the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art that we got from the auction," said Mu Chen with a smile. He had no intentions to keep it a secret from her.

"Oh? You have managed to cultivate it?" Nine Nether arched her brows slightly. Her beautiful eyes widened in astonishment. She had studied its cultivation technique, but she was still stuck in a hopeless tangle. Mu Chen had actually successfully cultivated it?

"Well, I sort of found my way around it." Mu Chen nodded his

head. He did not hide anything from Nine Nether. He told her all about the information that he had discovered.

After hearing Mu Chen's new discovery, Nine Nether's brows furrowed slightly. She said, "The Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art cannot be directly exercised. It has to be cultivated in the Sovereign Sea. Plus, to put it another way, we still have to use two distinctly different forces to change the elements of the dragon and the elephant."

Mu Chen nodded his head. This was the most essential and difficult part of the process. Had he not trained his Thunder God Physique, he would not have possessed the power of lightning, which was essential to cultivate the Dragon-Elephant.

"You only managed to possess the powers of lightning with the aid of the Thunder God Physique. Hence, I'm afraid that it would be rather difficult for you to rely solely on these powers to successfully cultivate the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art," murmured Nine Nether. Although Nine Nether had yet to manage successfully cultivating the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art, she had still seen and learned a great deal over the years.

Mu Chen nodded his head upon hearing Nine Nether's statements. His brows furrowed. Presently, he merely cultivated the rudimentary stage of the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art. Thus, he could still manage to withstand the impact by relying on the mere powers of lightning from his Thunder God Physique. However, once he had accomplished this even further, his current powers of lightning would not be sufficient to withstand the demands of the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art.

If one was able to cultivate the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art to perfection, they would be able to extricate nine dragons and nine elephants. However, Mu Chen could merely extricate a dragon and an elephant currently...

"What should I do then?" Mu Chen stared at Nine Nether,

scratching his head over the vexing question.

Nine Nether thought for a moment. She smiled and said, "It is rather difficult, but it seems pretty easy as well. All you need to do is to fuse some sort of lightning elemental energy."

Presently, Mu Chen's spiritual energy had coalesced with the powers of the Unperishable Flame. If he could fuse it with another type of lightning elemental energy, he would then possess a spiritual energy of two different elements. As such, his spiritual energy would be a perfect fit for the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art.

Mu Chen could not help but roll his eyes. He went through a torturous process when he attempted to fuse his spiritual energy with the Unperishable Flame. The process of fusing another special energy would be extremely difficult and dangerous. It was definitely not as easy as one-two-three.

There were many Sovereign Masters, who did not have the courage to fuse two distinctly different elemental energies together throughout their lives. This was due to the fact that, if the two energies were to be in conflict with each other, the impact would definitely be extremely severe.

"Although this might be a strenuous task to an ordinary person, I believe that you might have what it takes, as you have trained the Thunder Body Physique. Your body and the spiritual energy inside of it have a certain level of adaptability to the powers of lightning. Thus, as long as you find a lightning energy that is on par with the powers of the Unperishable Flame, you could give it a try," said Nine Nether, a serious tone in her voice.

"A lightning energy that could rival the power of the Unperishable Flame..." Mu Chen smiled wryly. The Unperishable Flame was not like any sort of common power that could be sourced and cultivated easily. It would be difficult to find the perfect lightning energy to match its powers.

"There's no need to rush. Just take your time to find it. If fate allows it, you'll definitely be able to find it," Nine Nether pat Mu Chen's shoulders gently, attempting to console him.

Mu Chen nodded his head. This was the only mindset that he could currently have. However, it was fortunate that he was not pressed for time. He still had sufficient time to figure out a way to make the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art work. "

"The Daluo Golden Pool Contest is going to start in three days." Nine Nether stared at Mu Chen with her dazzling eyes. Her lips then puckered into a smile. "The reputation and honor of the Nine Nether Palace is in your hands this time."

"I'll obey your commands, Your Highness." Mu Chen smiled as he saluted her. A burning spirit of enthusiasm flickered in his jet black eyes. This was his first battle since his arrival in the Daluo Territory.

It felt just like when he had first arrived at the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. He was not known for anything back then, just like the present him in the Great Thousand World. However, he knew that one day, when he was able to stand out from the various talents and prodigies in the Great Thousand World, he would finally be able to fulfil the promises of the girl who he yearned for deeply. He kept anticipating for that day to come.

On the mountain peak, the young man raised his head and stared at the zenith. His lips curled up into a smile. He looked confident and charming.

Luo Li, one day, I'll fight them all for you...

...

Three days passed in the blink of an eye.

Dong! Dong!

On the third day, the morning light spilled through the dark night and illuminated the ground. The sound of beating drums

gradually rumbled across the world within the Daluo Territory. Everyone was filled with a fiery will to fight. At that very moment, it was as if the spiritual aura in the world started moving around restlessly.

A colossal figure swept across the sky. The piercing howls of the wind reverberated across the heavens and earth.

The Daluo Golden Pool Contest was considered as being one of the grandest occasions in the entire Daluo Territory, as various sects would aggressively compete against one another, just to stand out from the rest. Thus, in order to achieve excellent results, various sects would send their best powerhouses for the contest, along with the expectation that they would be able to increase their sects' prestige in the Daluo Territory.

Evidently, the Daluo Golden Pool was one of the main draws of the contest. The fact that the Golden Pool's magical powers could further refine the Sovereign Celestial Body to perfection was a selling point for numerous Sovereign Masters.

In the depths of the Daluo Territory, there was a towering, verdant mountain. The peak of the mountain dazzled in gold. It was extremely eye-catching. This was where the Daluo Golden Pool was situated.

The mountain was also known as the Peak of the Golden Pool. It was a forbidden sanctuary in the Daluo Territory. On ordinary days, laymen were forbidden from entering the mountain. The mountain would only be open to the public when the Daluo Golden Pool Contest begin.

Presently, their fighting spirit lingered at the foot of the Peak of the Golden Pool. Loud cheers filled the air.

A sea of people flooded the place. It was an incredibly remarkable scene.

Nine gigantic stone platforms stood erect at the foot of the

mountain. The stone platforms were incredibly wide, and one of them towered up into the skies. Eight centaurs with incredibly powerful presences stood quietly. Their overwhelming presences were rather terrifying.

Eight figures sat quietly on the thrones, which were situated right on the stone platforms. From a bird's eye view, they looked as ferocious as wolves and eagles. Many powerhouses did not dare to look them straight in the eye. No doubt, the nine kings of the Daluo Territory were rather prominent figures.

Among the nine stone platforms, the last one was left empty. Everyone was clearly aware of it, but none of them were surprised by the sight. They knew that the site belonged to the Nine Nether Palace. However, over the years, the Nine Nether Palace had always been absent. Thus, everyone had gotten used to it.

In the eyes of many, the Nine Nether Palace had long ceased to exist in the Daluo Territory. They were merely regarded as an empty-title.

Bam!

As everyone secretly curled their lips in disdain, a huge explosion suddenly erupted in the sky. Many people lifted their heads up, as ominous dark clouds gathered overhead, before finally smashing onto the barren stone platform.

Thousands of black armor-clad army troops stood still. Despite being silent, their fiendish aura caused many raised eyebrows.

At the very front of them, a slender young man with a dashing face lifted his head up calmly. His gaze pierced right across the eight stone platforms. There was no hint of fear in his jet black eyes.

Chapter 682: The Battle of Daluo Golden Pool

When the army that resembled dark clouds quietly stood tall atop the ninth stone platform, the commotion of heaven and earth gradually subsided as astonishment flashed in many people's gazes.

The aura that this army emanated was no weaker than the strongest army under the other eight Lords.

"That's the Nine Nether Troop of the Nine Nether Palace?"

"I didn't expect the Nine Nether Troop to have such a majestic aura. Didn't they say that the Nine Nether Troop was the weakest army in Daluo Territory? Doesn't seem like it at all, judging from this aura."

"Yes, seems like the rumors are not credible. Nine Nether Palace has always been low-key, but they have been silently training their capabilities and biding their time. It's said that the master of Nine Nether Palace, who had been missing many years, has returned, and I'm afraid Nine Nether Palace is going to rise soon."

"It's not going to be so easy. During the time Lord Nine Nether was in Daluo Territory, Nine Nether Palace also remained mediocre and was completely unable to match up to the other eight Lords. Even if Lord Nine Nether is back now, I'm afraid it's no simple feat to compete with the other eight Lords."

"..."

Many glanced at the unmoving army as murmurs spread in the crowd. Nine Nether Palace did not have a famed reputation in Daluo Territory, as Nine Nether in the past did not have a strong ability. When she became the Palace master, there was gossip and rumors about it, but due to the Condor King's support and the support from the Nine Netherbird Clan, no one commented openly. However, it was clear that they had their suspicions and

doubts over Nine Nether's position.

Just as the crowds were focused on the Nine Nether Troop, their gazes landed on the slender young man with a calm expression standing right in front, prompting them to ask in curiosity, "Who is that young man?"

"He seems to be the new Commander of Nine Nether Palace named Mu Chen, and he was brought back by Lord Nine Nether."

"Such a young Commander? Hmph, this Lord Nine Nether still treats matters as if they were child's play. Does she think that anyone in this Daluo Territory can rise up in ranks?" Some couldn't resist scorning coldly, clearly envious that Mu Chen could become Commander in Daluo Territory at such a young age.

"Although this Mu Chen is young, it's said that he has advanced into the Sovereign-stage, and two months ago, a Commander under Lord Blood Hawk had challenged him to a duel but was defeated in one move."

"Haha, defeating Commander Zhao is nothing. Lord Nine Nether seems to want this Mu Chen to fight for a slot at the Golden Pool, and this would inevitably pit him in a fight against the four great Commanders. Although this Mu Chen does have some capability, he still lacks experience to match up to the four great Commanders."

"Mmhmm... Your words do make sense. Lord Nine Nether seems to be overly hasty this time. I'm afraid it will not only fail to bring honor, but they will only disgrace themselves..."

"..."

Whoosh!

After the Nine Nether Troop appeared, three beams of light soared across as one landed atop the throne on the ninth stone platform, drawing many glances.

The graceful silhouette was slender and svelte. She wore black

armor that accentuated her delicate curves, and she tied her hair up casually, presenting a valiant and heroic charm. The long pale legs under her armor attracted many heated gazes, and some people's mouths went dry upon seeing such a beauty before them. The beauty had a bodacious figure and cold but elegant features.

Not to mention, a brilliant lady who possessed such a high rank would arouse people's desire to conquer her.

This slender figure was of course, Nine Nether.

Her beautiful eyes swept the surroundings as she sat atop the throne with Tang Bing and Tang Rou on her left and right. They had the same facial features, but exhibited completely different demeanors, and their arrival became the center of attention.

"Haha, Nine Nether, your Nine Nether Palace has finally arrived. I thought you had forfeited your chance and in that case, that would be belittling the slot that you expended much effort to get." As Nine Nether appeared, a loud and boisterous laugh rang from a stone platform not far away. Lord Blood Hawk looked in Nine Nether's direction.

Upon hearing his words, she leveled a cold glance at Lord Blood Hawk and stated nonchalantly, "I won't trouble Lord Blood Hawk to show concern regarding the matters of my Nine Nether Palace."

Lord Blood Hawk smiled as his palm rubbed the armrest of his throne. A chilling and sinister glint flashed in his crimson eyes.

Anyone could clearly feel the tense atmosphere between Nine Nether and Lord Blood Hawk, and all the other Lords looked on coldly from the sidelines with no intention of meddling.

Within the Daluo Territory, the ranks of the Nine Lords were not low, and with the exception of Nine Nether Palace in the past, their capabilities were on par with each other, thus no one was willing to bow down to another. They had also crossed swords to fight over profits and resources, thus they were no stranger to such

battles, and were clearly not foolish enough to get embroiled within such conflicts unless they would be impacted directly. After all, Nine Nether was no longer like her past self, as her capabilities could now intimidate the other Lords.

Mu Chen stood silently in front of the Nine Nether Troop. His calm gaze swept towards the direction of Blood Hawk Palace. Atop the vast stone platform was an army clad in blood red armor. A malicious aura surrounded this army, and they were clearly a ferocious army adept in battle. This Lord Blood Hawk was domineering, and he had many strong men under his command.

Behind Mu Chen, Qiu Shan murmured quietly, his tone filled with resentment, "Commander Mu, this is the Blood Hawk Troop of Blood Hawk Palace. It is commanded by both Wu Tian and Cao Feng. The cities belonging to Nine Nether Palace were wiped out by them, and many of these cities were forced to change their allegiance to Blood Hawk Palace.

"Cao Feng is a lowly animal. If it weren't for our Lord Nine Nether, he would have been reduced to a dead dog, but now he's actually helping others to fight against Nine Nether Palace. That piece of s***. If there were a chance, the Nine Nether Troop would not let him off!" Qiu Shan gnashed his teeth, clearly enraged at Cao Feng's betrayal.

Mu Chen nodded slightly, his expression calm. He was about to speak when he felt two cold glances cast towards him. He lifted his head and saw Wu Tian and Cao Feng, who were standing in front of the Blood Hawk Troop staring at him.

The three men made eye contact. A cruel smirk pulled at the corners of Wu Tian's mouth, while Cao Feng's gaze remained cold, enmity apparent in his hostility.

In the past when he had been in Nine Nether Palace, the Nine Nether Troop had been in his control, and Mu Chen's position was exactly the same as his previously. Clearly, Nine Nether intended

to replace him with Mu Chen.

Although he had betrayed Nine Nether Palace and left, Cao Feng still felt uneasy. If Mu Chen had done a more capable job than Cao Feng, wouldn't others say that he was inferior to Mu Chen?

As someone who was also brought into Daluo Territory by Nine Nether, this was something that a petty person like Cao Feng could not take lying down. His personality was clearly one capable of letting others down, but he would not allow others to let him down.

Cao Feng turned his head as he whispered to Wu Tian, "If there's an opportunity, I will try my best not to let him leave the Peak of the Golden Pool."

"Haha, looks like you do dislike this fellow a lot." Wu Tian smiled as he patted Cao Feng's shoulder saying, "There are bound to be casualties in the battle of the Golden Pool. It doesn't matter how heavy the blows dealt are. However, our main goal is to reach the peak. As for this fellow, our Lord has ordered people to deal with him specifically, so I believe he won't even get the chance to see the Golden Pool."

Upon hearing this, Cao Feng smiled regretfully as he thought, Oh well, this is for the best. If this fellow doesn't even get the chance to see the Golden Pool, that would just highlight his incompetence, and Nine Nether Palace will become a laughing stock.

As Cao Feng and Wu Tian appraised Mu Chen with malicious intention, Qiu Shan warned Mu Chen in low tones, "Commander Mu, in the battle of the Golden Pool, you have to be wary of these two fellows."

Mu Chen nodded slightly. He could clearly see Wu Tian and Cao Feng's gaze, as if they were cats toying with a mouse. However... he smirked. It was hard to say exactly who was the mouse in this equation.

A fragrance suddenly materialized as Tang Bing walked slowly towards Mu Chen, her beautiful eyes surveying the surroundings. She then smiled at Mu Chen, and her charming smile drew many heated gazes.

"What can I do for you, oh Palace Keeper Tang?" Mu Chen smiled teasingly.

Tang Bing rolled her eyes at Mu Chen as she replied, "Sister Nine Nether wants me to tell you that close to one hundred people will be joining the battle of the Golden Pool, and they are no weaklings."

"Why are there so many participants?" Mu Chen asked in surprise. Didn't they say that slots were limited?

"In this battle of the Golden Pool, the three majesties decided to increase the number of slots, thus the participants are no longer limited to the men under the Nine Lords, but also now include other subordinate forces in Daluo Territory."

At this point, Tang Bing looked towards the direction of Blood Hawk Palace. Worry was apparent in her eyes as she continued, "This is not good news for you. As far as I know, among these subordinate forces, some are on good terms with Blood Hawk Palace, and they might stop you from getting near the Golden Pool in order to please Blood Hawk Palace."

Mu Chen's brows knitted together. After all, he was on his own, and just dealing with Wu Tian and Cao Feng would expend much of his effort. If more people were out to make trouble for him, then it could spell disaster.

This Blood Hawk Palace was indeed detestable.

Tang Bing saw Mu Chen's frown and bit her lips slightly. She glanced at the stone platform a distance away as she gritted her teeth and turned.

"Sister Tang Bing, what are you doing?" Mu Chen looked at her in

bewilderment.

"I..." Tang Bing blushed as she said softly, "I'm going to look for Zhou Yue and ask him to lend a hand to help you get rid of those pesky obstacles so that you can conserve some energy."

Although she did not harbor any feelings towards Zhou Yue, she could seek his help at these times.

Mu Chen was stunned. He glanced at Tang Bing before retracting his gaze. He said coldly, "I wouldn't want to trouble Miss Tang Bing."

Tang Bing's expression changed as she bit her lips and stared at Mu Chen, clearly sensing the coldness in his tone. Ever since they had known each other, it was the first time she saw Mu Chen's hostile side. Her eyes welled up with hints of tears, moving those who saw her.

"Ahem, Commander Mu, Sister Tang didn't mean anything. She just wanted Nine Nether Palace to perform well this time to avoid disgracing Lord Nine Nether," Qiu Shan hastily commented. He was a lot older than Tang Bing, but he respected her very much.

Upon saying this, he then turned to Tang Bing whose eyes were slightly red with tears.

"Sister Tang, if you had really approached Zhou Yue, not only does it not reflect well on Nine Nether Palace, but others might say that Commander Mu had to rely on a lady to persuade others to help in a mere battle of the Golden Pool... Although we are aware of Commander Mu's ability, tongues might wag, and gossip is a fearful thing."

Tang Bing's eyes were red with tears. Her usually strong character refused to show a weak side even now as she stared at Mu Chen.

"I am not belittling you. I heard that Lord Blood Hawk has engaged four First Grade Sovereigns to form an alliance to deal

with you, coupled with Wu Tian and Cao Feng. No matter how strong you are, do you think you can escape unscathed?"

Mu Chen's eyes narrowed as he glanced Tang Bing. Here eyes were still red with tears, but she was wearing a stubborn expression. His heart softened, and his cold expression became gentler as he said softly, "Sister Tang Bing, rest assured, if they really are out to get me, even if I can't leave the Peak of the Golden Pool, I will make sure all of them stay to accompany me."

The young man's voice was calm and soothing, but underneath was a palpable ferocity and a confidence that could not be concealed. He was not conceited, but it was not mere bravado, either.

Tang Bing gazed at Mu Chen. The young man's calm tone made her lose her courage to retort, hence she could only bite her red lips as if being bullied.

Thus, Mu Chen quickly felt hostile glares directed towards him, even among the Nine Nether Troop. This showed that Tang Bing was more well-loved in the hearts of the Nine Nether Troop and was far more important compared to him as their Commander.

"Ahem."

In the face of increasingly hostile glares, Mu Chen coughed sheepishly as he murmured, "Sister Tang Bing, don't be like this. Rest assured, I have strong bones. It's not that easy for people to beat me to death."

Tang Bing finally smiled as she glared teasingly at Mu Chen saying, "I don't care if you get beaten to death. It's me being meddlesome and asking for trouble. I deserve to get scolded."

She couldn't help but to have slight resentment in her tone, as it was the first time in years someone had spoken to her in such a cold tone.

Tang Bing turned to leave after saying her piece.

"Sister Tang Bing, rest assured, as long as I'm here, no one can disgrace Nine Nether Palace." Mu Chen smiled.

Tang Bing paused in her tracks as she harrumphed softly, "Prove it with your performance. If not, don't even think about getting a drop of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid from me."

"Yes, I will follow the orders of the honorable Palace Keeper." Mu Chen smiled and clasped his fists.

Tang Bing pursed her lips, ignoring Mu Chen as she returned with quick steps.

Mu Chen turned as he stared at the stone platform where Blood Hawk Palace was. A chilling glint flashed in his dark eyes.

Since you want to play, I'll have fun playing with you then.

Chapter 683: The Battle of Reaching the Peak

Dong! Dong!

When the intense fighting spirit beneath the sky and the earth had reached the extremity, the melodious bell rang and eventually resounded throughout the horizon. As rang, its sound lingered continuously around the place.

In the sky, some rays of light were condensed, and some space distorted. Three light shadows slowly emerged, representing the supremacy within the Daluo Territory: The Condor King, the Spiritual Pupil King, and the unfathomable Sleeping King.

As soon as these three appeared, innumerable people on the ground bowed to, and saluted, them in awe. Even the Nine Lords slightly lowered their heads. The three kings were the only ones standing indifferently, beneath the sky and the earth – their statuses were simply untouchable. After the Condor King waved the sleeve of his robe, everyone suddenly felt a stream of soft power rushing toward them, making their bodies become stiff again.

"Presumably, the rules of the Daluo Golden Pool are known to all of you. So, I'm going to say no more about that. And no one cares how you make it to the mountain peak. In here, the result – not the means – is the only thing that matters."

"There are only four spots available for the entry to the Daluo Golden Pool. Your skills will decide how you may contest for it."

Little by little, the old voice of the Condor King spread everywhere, while the atmosphere beneath the sky and the earth became terrifying, and the eyes of many powerful people present were getting sharp. Every single one of them, who was qualified for the competition, was an outstanding person in their own clan

or group,and none of them would get scared facing any sort of competitors. One must undergo a cruel fight in order to take the four spots from all of these strong candidates.

"The time has come," the Spiritual Pupil King said frigidly, as the lights in his eyes flashed.

Both the Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King turned their eyes on the ever-drowsy man beside them. The Condor King smiled, commanding, "Brother Meng, please unlock the Peak of the Golden Pool."

Though they were known as the Three Kings together, the Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King were fairly polite to the Sleeping King, who would never intervene in the internal affairs of the Daluo Territory. They were fully aware of the fact that this man – among the Three Kings – was the one most trusted by the Lord of the Territory.

"Mmm." The Sleeping King yawned, without caring about how this act would make him look, and nodded unhurriedly.

Buzz...

Each of the three kings started to shoot a light ray from their hands, each of which went directly into the Peak of the Golden Pool. Afterwards, everybody witnessed that the spaces surrounding the Peak were gradually distorted, but the appearance of the Peak itself was getting clearer and clearer.

Boom!

When the Peak of the Golden Pool became clearer than ever, an indescribable and majestic spirit energy swept across the entire area, and the sky, as well as the earth, seemed to be dyed in gold. A golden flood torrent poured down from the towering mountaintop, making it look like the Peak of the Golden Pool was actually made of gold.

"That is known as the Golden Pool Torrent," said Qiu Shan, who

was standing beside Mu Chen. "It is extremely powerful and can be compared to the force of tens of thousands of sea waves scouring at the same time. Only the top powers at the Sovereign-level may manage to resist it with an effort. All of the mountain climbers, however, must endure and survive the impact of the Torrent, before getting to the peak."

Mu Chen nodded, looking solemn-faced. He had surely perceived the formidable power of the golden torrent. The Daluo Golden Pool was indeed mysterious...

Dong!

As the brightness of the Peak of the Golden Pool reached its apex, the three kings in the air waved their hands simultaneously. The surrounding space rippled, while the clear and melodious bell reverberated back and forth. A sense of feverish excitement was seen in everyone's eyes.

"The Match of Daluo Golden Pool – begins now."

Whiz! Whiz!

Immediately after the cold voice of the Condor King came out from the clouds, numerous light beams of Spiritual Energy rushed toward the sky, and an abundance of light shadows rose straight up from the ground. One after another, they were all heading toward the Peak of the Golden Pool, with fury, at a lightning speed.

"Commander Mu, this time, it all depends on you!" The three mightiest ones among the Nine Nether Troops, Qiu Shan, Bei Mo, and Lan Hai, gave a fist-wrapping salute to Mu Chen in a grave manner. Their home, the Nine Nether Palace, had almost been forgotten over the years. Now, whether they would make a good start or not, would completely depend on how Mu Chen could perform in the match.

Mu Chen cracked a smile, then nodded without a word. He stood on his tiptoes and turned into a light streamer, skimming over the

skyline. Then, under the gaze of numerous spectators, he dropped into the lofty Peak of the Golden Pool.

Sitting on the stone terrace-based throne, Jiu You stared into Mu Chen's back. Her slim hands clasped the armrests for a second. If we could only see how Mu Chen could amaze us, then...

"Sister Jiu You, do you think Mu Chen can obtain the entry to the Golden Pool?" Anxiety was obvious on Tang Rou's beautiful cheek. All of the girls knew that this match of the Golden Pool was critical for the Nine Nether Palace.

"Rest assured. Mu Chen won't disappoint us." A smile appeared on Jiu You's pretty, oval-shaped face. She apparently had great confidence in Mu Chen.

"See how I will punish him if he fails." Tang Bing gazed at Mu Chen's back, too, with a slight sense of bitterness in her voice.

Tang Bing's words made Jiu You smile again.

In mid-air, the three kings waved their sleeves, causing a series of spatial fluctuations, followed by the condensing of their spiritual energy. The energy then formed into a group of light glasses, upon which the images of all people entering the Peak of the Golden Pool were reflected.

...

Boom!

A split second after Mu Chen had landed his feet on the Peak of the Golden Pool, the vast, overwhelming golden torrents rushed toward him all at once, as if they were going to crush everything – including mountains – into power. Under this impact, everyone, who had not yet achieved the Sovereign-level, would be torn to pieces.

The golden torrents were reflected in Mu Chen's pupils. His face, however, was rather calm. He flicked his fingers, which shot out some burning, purple-colored spiritual energy that was twisting

like ribbons, breaking the torrents apart.

Rustle!

When a crack appeared on the torrents, Mu Chen dashed into it, like a ghost, then ran toward the peak at full speed, following the trace of the crack. At the same time, bursts of spiritual energy fluctuations were continually seen everywhere. All the people climbing up the mountain were trying as hard as they could to break the golden torrents by burning their energy and going straight to the peak.

Everyone knew that, no matter how fast they could get there, only four of them would eventually get the spots of entry. This fierce competition meant that almost everyone else was an enemy. Thus, to obtain a spot, one must reduce the number of rivals over and over again.

Because of this, the match showed its cruelty from the very beginning. As some of the competitors were attempting to tear down the golden torrents to make their way to the peak, others were hidden in the dark, seeking to launch a swift and vicious attack.

Aging bursts of spiritual energies spread across the tall the rugged mountains, with lights flashing and killers roaring incessantly.

Dong.

Mu Chen stepped onto a rock with so much pressure that it immediately blew up and turned into powder. Mu Chen's body then flew past the ground, like a shadow. But right after he left the area, there was an ear-piercing sound, charging at him from the back.

However, the sudden attack Mu Chen encountered did not panic him. He made a backhand attack in return, transforming his spiritual energy into a huge palm that collided with the other

source of energy in the back.

Dong!

This rampant release of spiritual energy was followed by a muffled groan that belonged to a man who was knocked into the air by the shock wave. The man was then swallowed by the golden torrent, before he backed out awkwardly, having no intention of provoking Mu Chen anymore. Mu Chen also did not want to be aggressive. Hence, as he caught a glimpse of the man, he, too, started rushing out once again.

In just ten minutes, Mu Chen had already faced nearly ten attacks – of course, they were all random, and none of them was made intentionally against him. People entering this place had no allies, while the more enemies they could kill, the more opportunity they would get.

Mu Chen looked up, as he could see that about ten figures were at the forefront of everyone in the golden torrent. Those were the "the first echelon" in the match, each of whom were one of the strongest competitors, with enormous power.

Mu Chen did not squeeze himself into the first echelon, because he knew that showing all his strengths at this moment would not be the wise thing to do. Also, as Tang Bing had reminded him earlier, Lord Blood Hawk had already sent someone to target him. Loss, or even death, was right ahead, unless he remained cautious.

Zip!

While Mu Chen was sunken in his thoughts, two light shadows clashed with each other, not far from where he was staying. One of them sent out a slap that tore the golden torrents, then rapidly hit the other's chest.

Puff.

Blood was spat out of the mouth of the man being hit, as his body was knocked backwards into the air. The other man, who won the

fight, was not following up – he glanced at the surroundings and discovered Mu Chen nearby.

The two stared at each other, both of their bodies taut with vigilance. Mu Chen calmly observed this man. Despite his rather ordinary appearance, he had a tall and strong body that made him look like an iron tower. His eyes, however, were full of caution. This man had unusual strength.

Mu Chen was a little amazed, because he felt a rare, strong fluctuation of spiritual energy on the man's body, and more surprisingly, the man did not seem to be anyone from the Nine Lords' side. Otherwise, he would have had to be from the affiliated powers in the Daluo Territory.

The tall man glanced at Mu Chen, who looked young, but made him smell a great danger, as clearly this young person, who was seemingly gentle and calm, harbored a beast hidden inside him. Thus, he posed a very big threat.

As a result, the man nodded to Mu Chen in a friendly way and left for another direction. He had made it obvious, wordlessly getting his message across: let's just go about our own businesses.

After watching the man disappear, Mu Chen slowed his pace. Inside his eyes, there was a drastic change of expression, because he now felt four insidious fluctuations of power approaching him speedily.

Those sent by Lord Blood Hawk had finally come to kill him.

Chapter 684: Battling the Four Sovereigns

The golden flood poured down from the majestic peak of the mountain, and the whole world seemed to become brilliant with golden hues. The spiritual energy between heaven and earth fluctuated restlessly.

In the vast open space of the forest, Mu Chen stopped in his tracks, his young face calm and serene with a chilling glint in his dark eyes.

He slowly turned his head and surveyed his surroundings as golden light permeated the area, obstructing his line of sight. However, he could clearly sense the eerie motions of four entities full of murderous intent.

"Since all of you are here, get out and show yourselves. Why hide like rodents?" Mu Chen smirked coldly as he scoffed in disdain, his voice ringing through the forest.

"Since it's already four versus one, don't tell me you still want to preserve face?" As Mu Chen's voice rang out, the forest remained silent. However, this silence only lasted for a few moments and then the slight rustle of footsteps was heard. Four figures stepped out from within the gold light and stood at a near distance from Mu Chen.

The four wore robes of different colors, and the emblem on their sleeves was an indicator that they hailed from different forces. However, it was clear that these forces had links to the Blood Hawk Palace.

The four people just stood there in silence, but powerful waves of spiritual energy emanated from them. Even the earth under their feet collapsed slightly. Their cold gazes locked onto Mu Chen like those of venomous snakes.

Mu Chen also focused his gaze on the four with his dark eyes, and

judging from the oppressive spiritual energy from them, the four were at the level of First Grade Sovereigns and had reached their maximum potential. In terms of ability, they were comparable to that of the various Commanders in Daluo Territory.

Lord Blood Hawk had indeed expended a lot of thought and effort to deal with him.

Looks like it would not be a smooth journey to reach the Peak this time.

Just as Mu Chen was stopped under the Peak of the Golden Pool, countless gazes suddenly shifted to the light glass of spiritual energy where he was, apparently aware of the situation.

As they saw the four men in front of Mu Chen, shock flitted across their gazes as murmurs and whispers sounded among the crowd.

"Those four fellows... seem to be the leaders of Beimang's Four Valleys. Judging from the scene, it looks like they are going to deal with the new Commander of Nine Nether Palace..."

"Heh, Beimang's Four Valleys seem to be on good terms with Blood Hawk Palace. Looks like Lord Blood Hawk has made it clear that he's going to suppress Nine Nether Palace, not even giving them a chance this time."

"Exactly. These four leaders have been First Grade Sovereigns for many years, even compared to the Commanders in our Daluo Territory, they are considered one of the best. Now that the four have made an alliance, I'm afraid that things are not looking good for this Mu Chen."

"..."

As murmurs sounded within heaven and earth, there were many glances cast towards the direction of Nine Nether Palace, some of them sympathetic and regretful, while some were delighted at their misfortune.

Seeing the crowd's glances, Nine Nether remained expressionless, but her eyes stared at the light glass of spiritual energy, and a cold glint flashed within the depths of her eyes.

Beside her, Tang Rou's face was full of anxiety, and even Tang Bing bit her lips, sweat pooling in her palms as she understood the precarious situation that Mu Chen was currently in.

"It's the leaders of Beimang's Four Valleys, those four b*st*rds!"

"I remember them." Nine Nether's eyes were hooded, and her was tone nonchalant, but Tang Bing could sense subtle rage and murderous intent from her. Clearly, Lord Nine Nether already bore a grudge against Beimang's Four Valleys.

Tang Bing nodded in assent. If they had the opportunity in the future, the first they would not let off would be Beimang's Four Valleys.

"Sister Nine Nether, will Mu Chen be alright?" Tang Rou couldn't help but to ask worriedly. Although she knew that Mu Chen was not weak, there were four opponents after all, and each of them was no slouch.

Nine Nether gazed towards the light glass of spiritual energy. Upon seeing the young man's calm expression and composed demeanor, Nine Nether smiled. Mu Chen now was no longer the inexperienced brat that she could frighten easily in the past...

"He will win."

Nine Nether sat upon the throne, crossing her long and slender legs gracefully. She turned her head slightly, her elbows resting against the armrest as her hand supported her face. Her hair was loosely tied up, and strands cascaded down casually. Confidence surged in her wild and untamed gaze.

Tang Bing and Tang Rou looked at each other, and although they were unsure why Nine Nether had so much confidence in Mu Chen, due to her trust, their anxious and tense emotions also

began to relax.

...

In the open space of the forest, the five figures had clearly become the focus of countless people, but they did not pay attention to that as subtle murderous intent permeated the atmosphere.

The four figures were rather thin, and this was especially true of the man standing in the center among them. He looked as gaunt as a skeleton. His sunken eyes glinted eerily and were as unsettling as a venomous serpent.

"You must be Mu Chen..."

He stared at Mu Chen, his gaunt features twisting into a grimace as he let out a ferocious smile and stated hoarsely, "You will have to stop here, as someone doesn't want you to go up."

Beside him, a man dressed in black also stared coldly at Mu Chen.

"We don't want to kill you, as that would undoubtedly offend Nine Nether Palace. However... if you choose to be stubborn, then the Peak of the Golden Pool will be a good grave for you, too."

Mu Chen glanced at the four men before him, his eyes looking towards the ground.

"If the four of you don't leave now, I'm afraid you no longer will be able to leave."

His calm voice rang throughout the forest, stunning the four men as unsettling smiles appeared on their faces, the malicious glint in their eyes growing.

"What an interesting fellow..."

"Let's kill him then?"

"Mmhmm..."

The cruel smirks on the four men's faces grew, and in the next

instant, they vanished from where they had previously stood.

Whoosh!

Just as they disappeared, the space around Mu Chen had waves of fluctuations. As four specters emerged, four gaunt God of Death's palms carrying the aura of death surged as fast as lightning towards Mu Chen's vital parts.

The four of them had no intention of fighting one on one with Mu Chen. They dealt brutal blows together, clearly intending to get rid of Mu Chen as quickly as possible.

Crash!

The blows of the four landed on Mu Chen's body like booming thunder, but their withered faces changed slightly as the aura of their blows made contact.

The aura of their blows passed directly through Mu Chen's silhouette.

"Afterimage?"

The four Sovereigns' eyes narrowed. Mu Chen's speed was actually faster than theirs?!

Boom!

A low rumbling of thunder roared suddenly as thunderbolts swooped past the four's eyes. Thunder and lightning burst out, and four massive palms transformed from thunderbolts landed on the vital areas of the four's backs.

This counterattack was extremely strange, causing even the four experienced Sovereigns' faces to become somber. They waved the sleeves of their robes hurriedly as their majestic spiritual energy formed a Spiritual Energy Screen behind them as a form of defense.

Boom!

The huge palms of thunderbolts broke through the Spiritual

Energy Screens with one blow, but in this moment of defense, the four figures moved and dodged the brutal attack agilely.

The four men retreated swiftly as their gaunt faces became increasingly solemn, and murderous intent grew in their eyes.

"You do have fast reactions there."

Thunderbolts condensed in mid-air as they coalesced into Mu Chen's figure. He was shining resplendently, his body entirely silver, clearly a result of impelling the Thunder God Physique to its maximum potential. He glanced at the four men and smiled in astonishment.

After activating the Thunder God Physique, his speed had reached a terrifyingly fast stage, but the four men could still dodge his attacks, proving that their combat instincts were not weak.

The four Sovereigns stared at Mu Chen with chilling gazes. As they took a deep breath, their hands suddenly clasped together, and then a sharp spiritual energy storm rampaged that was clearly visible even to the naked eye.

Circles of spiritual energy raged in a frenzy as four massive shadows formed swiftly around the four men.

"Withered Wood Celestial Body!"

Accompanying the booming, cold voices and the shadows around the four men converged, transforming into four identical massive shadows. The Sovereign Celestial Body that the four men had cultivated came from the same origin.

The four Sovereign Celestial Bodies towered in the heavens and earth like giants, and were grayish-black in color. From afar, it looked as though they were withered wood that stood tall, and an aura of death emanated from them.

As the four Sovereign Celestial Bodies breathed, their spiritual energy transformed into hurricanes that raged and howled in the heavens and earth. Its terrifying aura caused the top powers on the

entire Peak of the Golden Pool to look on solemnly with astonishment.

"Since you refuse to take the easy way out, hand over your life then!"

The four Sovereign Celestial Bodies glared at Mu Chen with murderous rage, and their eerily chilling voices thundered within the heavens and earth as their massive palms dealt direct blows, covering the sun and enveloping the mountain and forest.

Boom!

The earth began to collapse even before the blows of the massive palms landed.

Although the Withering Wood Celestial Body was not within the ranks of the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies, four of them appearing at the same time still possessed immense power.

A terrifyingly oppressive spiritual energy descended from the sky as Mu Chen's body was pushed down towards the ground. He lifted his head, and the enveloping grayish-black massive palms reflected in his dark eyes as a cold smirk appeared on his face.

Spinning one hand and clenching the other, the space behind Mu Chen began to twist and distort as the Sovereign Sea emerged with a roar. Suddenly, the temperature within the heavens and the earth increased tremendously as different colors flashed in his eyes.

"I'm afraid people like you are unworthy to take my life!"

The young man stood as straight as a spear, his cold voice thundering through the heavens.

Chapter 685: Brutal Thunderbolt Means

Boom!

The space behind Mu Chen twisted violently, and within this distorted space, the vast Sovereign Sea roared. Its majestic spiritual energy then surged out, resisting the oppressive pressure entirely.

Mu Chen lifted his head, the light of the four massive palms reflecting in his eyes. His hands conjured up seals, a brilliant spiritual light surged out within his body, and in that beam of light, the roar of a dragon thundered.

Crash!

The four massive palms crashed down, as swift as lightning, heading towards where Mu Chen was standing. The earth trembled, before huge cracks spread extensively through the ground, causing the land to collapse.

Countless gazes focused on the light glass of spiritual energy, as they thought: The new Commander of Nine Nether Palace should be done for at this point! The alliance of four First Grade Sovereigns at their most powerful was, after all, not to be underestimated.

Nine Nether's expression remained calm, while Tang Bing and Tang Rou paled. Four Sovereign celestial bodies stood tall in the heavens and earth, as they stared at the collapsed ground. However, their expressions changed when they did not see any sign of Mu Chen.

"Be careful!" The four shouted.

Roar!

However, just as they shouted, the space behind them was torn apart suddenly, as the silhouette of a dragon, which had been formed from Buddha's light, surged out from within the crack of

the space. The expressions of the four Sovereigns twisted, as terror flashed in their eyes.

With the ability of First Grade Sovereign, how was it possible for Mu Chen to maneuver spatial cracks? That was only a feat that people, who had surpassed Fifth Grade Sovereigns, were capable of.

However, Mu Chen clearly did not intend to provide an explanation for their queries. The dragon surged out of the spatial cracks, transforming into a slender figure, as light shimmered throughout the entire space. He conjured up seals with a cold expression, as the roars of a dragon and elephant thundered within the Sovereign Sea.

Boom!

Two beams of boundless light, one purple and one black, surged out from the Sovereign Sea. They were as swift as thunderbolts, and transformed into a massive violet dragon and black elephant.

Mu Chen clasped his hands together, as the purple flame surrounding the violet dragon and the black thunder surrounding the thunder elephant clashed together violently. A terrifying spiritual energy burst out, causing the four Sovereign celestial bodies to dissipate.

Whoosh!

Mu Chen's hands trembled slightly, his expression somber. The seals were changing at a dizzying speed. Within the frenzy of spiritual energy, a Dragon Elephant Disc of approximately a few feet condensed and appeared.

The disc was purple and black, and it had patterns of dragons and elephants standing majestically upon it. Then, an indescribable wave of terrible spiritual energy emanated, causing the space to burst into tiny cracks.

"Kill him!"

The four leaders of Beimang realized the horrifying power that the Dragon Elephant Disc possessed, and their hearts sunk in terror as they shouted.

"Withered Wood Fingers!"

The four roared simultaneously, as immense spiritual energy raged, transforming into four energy light beams that resembled withered wood. The spiritual energy surged towards Mu Chen with a speed as swift as thunderbolts.

As Mu Chen lifted his glance, a cold flint flashed in his dark eyes, and the changing seals froze.

"Dragon Elephant Disc!"

His slender finger pointed in mid-air, as the Dragon Elephant Disc transformed and soared out as a beam of light. Wherever the disc skimmed through, a long trace appeared, as the space was torn. Attacks from both parties surged through the horizon and collided together violently, as the crowd watched on.

Boom!

A storm of spiritual energy raged fiercely, all of which could been visibly seen. As the forest below was destroyed instantly, wild and unparalleled spiritual energies eroded each other continuously.

"That Mu Chen actually blocked the attacks from the four Sovereigns?" Some gasped in shock, because where the frenzy of spiritual energy had swept, the purple and black beam of light did not show signs of weakening.

"This Mu Chen does have powerful means!"

"To become the new Commander of Nine Nether Palace, he's not simple indeed."

"..."

"Mu Chen blocked it!" Surprise surged in Tang Bing's and Tang

Rou's gazes.

"Both of you have been underestimating Mu Chen." Nine Nether smiled, as she had experienced the power of the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art first-hand, and if the four fellows before her thought that this could withstand Mu Chen's attacks, they were simply too naive.

Crash!

Just as this thought crossed Nine Nether's heart, blinding purple and black light burst out in the sky, as purple flames and black thunder permeated the places of impact, causing the four huge fingers that resembled withered wood to explode and disintegrate into smithereens. All of this came about as effortless as breaking a dead branch from a tree, causing many people's eyes to widen in shock.

"Retreat!" Terror surged in the eyes of the four leaders of Beimang, as they shouted hurriedly.

The four Sovereign celestial bodies retreated, a thousand feet in distance flashing by with the movement of their feet.

Mu Chen stared at the four hastily retreating figures, a cold smirk appearing on his face. If the power of the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art was limited to this, it would be undeserving of the rank of Perfect Divine Art.

Whoosh!

With a flick of his fingers, the rampaging purple flames and black thunder condensed and converged, entwining with each other like two beams of light. Then, with a whoosh, they disappeared within heaven and earth. In an instant, it appeared before the Sovereign, who was the gauntest, and his face twisted in terror, as he realized he had become Mu Chen's target.

Rather than injuring ten fingers, completely breaking one finger would deal more damage. Although Mu Chen' s Nine Dragon Nine

Elephant Art was immensely powerful, his cultivation was, after all, still shallow, so it was impossible to defeat all four Sovereigns easily, but it was sufficient to defeat one.

"Technique of Withered Wood!"

The gaunt Sovereign roared, as withered patterns spread on the Sovereign celestial body. Looking from afar, it looked as if it was a withered wood standing tall within heaven and earth.

Boom!

However, Mu Chen paid no attention to that, as the purple flames and black thunder light beams transformed into a violet dragon and thunder elephant, colliding on the massive Sovereign celestial body violently, with a brutal manner that threatened utter annihilation.

Crash!

In the moment of impact, a terrifying shockwave raged, like a volcanic eruption. Then, the Withered Wood Sovereign Celestial Body disintegrated and exploded. A floundering figure shot out, blood gushing as he fell harshly, the collision causing a huge deep pit in the ground. After the impact, his breaths were weak, as he was clearly severely injured, to the brink of death.

Gasp.

The crowd gasped, as no one had imagined that, within moments, Mu Chen would have defeated a Sovereign, who could employ a Sovereign celestial body.

"Big Brother Withered!"

The remaining three Sovereigns had shocked expressions, before their eyes flashed with growing murderous intent, and they stared at Mu Chen, as if they wanted to devour him.

"We are going to tear you apart!"

The three men roared, as massive Sovereign celestial bodies

surged towards Mu Chen, the spiritual energy within heaven and earth shaking and rampaging with their fists.

"Activate!"

Mu Chen's dark eyes were still cold, as he saw the three men attacking again. Lifting his hands, he watched as the forest below him crumbled, and a Spiritual Array formed by three black lotuses appeared.

"Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array!"

Mu Chen's seals changed, as the three black lotuses soared and merged together in a row, bombarding the Sovereign celestial body violently.

Boom!

A beam of black light spread like ink drops, and the Sovereign celestial body that resembled a withered wood turned black, like cold stone, then exploded, disintegrating with cracks.

Spurt.

As the Sovereign celestial body was destroyed, the Sovereign fell, blood spurting out, revealing the severity of the injury. The two Sovereign celestial bodies that had rushed out stopped abruptly, fear surging in their eyes. They could not imagine how they had suffered such heavy casualties in just mere minutes.

Of course, not only did they not comprehend this, but even the crowd, who had been watching the battle, were dumbfounded, and they could only stare in shock. Mu Chen's strength seemed to be, at best, equivalent to those of the four leaders. However, why was his combat power so terrifying, that he could annihilate two people within mere moments in two rounds?!

In the sky, the two Sovereigns did not dare approach, as they did not know what other tricks the young man had hidden up his sleeve. If history repeated itself, the two men, who had gone before, would have acted as their warnings.

"Retreat!"

Their gazes flickered, and they roared. The two moves, which Mu Chen had used to easily defeat the Sovereigns earlier, were too great a deterrent, and they were thoroughly horrified. The two Sovereign celestial bodies retreated, losing their desire to battle entirely.

"I'm afraid it's too late to leave now!"

Upon seeing the two retreating figures, Mu Chen scoffed coldly. Since he had made his move, he would not show mercy. Moreover, this was not Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, so being too soft and indecisive was an utterly foolish thought.

He conjured seals once again, as a beam of light surged out from his crown violently, and a Pagoda roared and expanded, trapping and suppressing the third Sovereign celestial body within. Atop the Pagoda, a golden dragon roared, as golden flames surged. Within a few moments, the third Sovereign celestial body was burned to nothing, and a charred figure fell helplessly, with little trace of life. Another Sovereign had been defeated!

The last leader was now scared out of his wits, as he scrambled to escape desperately. From a distance, it seemed as if a giant had rushed out to the peak of the Golden Pool, as he dared not stay at all.

Mu Chen looked at the desperately escaping figure, and did not pursue him, but rather just heaved a sigh of relief. Continuously displaying three aces up his sleeve had exhausted him, and he could barely withstand it, as most of the spiritual energy in his Sovereign Sea had been expended.

However, he was immensely satisfied that he could defeat three First Grade Sovereigns with such a swift speed. His figure descended slowly from mid-air, his dark eyes sweeping across some areas, as the figures retreated hastily, not daring to show any hostile intent. Mu Chen ignored them, as he flew towards the peak

of the Golden Pool, thinking that no one would dare mess with him now.

At the bottom of the Golden Pool Peak, countless people gazed at the travelling figure in the light glass of spiritual energy. The commotion within heaven and earth quieted into silence, and shock was etched on everyone's faces. They had now realized the terrifying tricks up Nine Nether Palace's new Commander's sleeve, as

one versus four, with the one killing the three, was certainly a result to be feared.

In the sky, the Three Kings gazed at the young man's silhouette in the Spiritual Energy Screen, astonishment flashing in their eyes. Even the unfathomable Sleeping King had opened his eyes.

This young man... was not at all simple.

Chapter 686: Daluo Golden Platform

"Mu Chen... won!"

Atop the stone platform where Nine Nether Palace was, the two sisters Tang Bing and Tang Rou stared at the Spiritual Energy Screen in a daze as the young man's silhouette continued on his way. They then regained their senses, surprise surging in the eyes, as Tang Rou cheered gleefully. Even Tang Bing, who was the more stoic of the two, smiled softly.

The capability Mu Chen exhibited had truly surprised everyone.

The four leaders of Mangshan Mountain were rather well-known in the Daluo Territory and had good capabilities. An alliance between the four could resist even a Second Grade Sovereign, but they had suffered such a humiliating defeat at the hands of Mu Chen.

The young man's performance had everyone looking askance in fear and awe.

Among the Nine Nether Troop, Qiu Shan and the others also watched with astonishment as their respect for Mu Chen grew. No matter where it was, strength always reigned. If the Nine Nether Troop had a Commander like him, it might not be a bad thing.

"The battle of ascending the mountain has just begun. If he fails to obtain a slot in the end, it doesn't matter how stellar his performance was." Nine Nether remained the calmest of the three as she smiled at the elated sisters.

"Even if he fails, Mu Chen is young, after all. He just arrived in the Daluo Territory, so even if he fails, it's justifiable. What's more, he would easily be victorious next time if he fails this time." Tang Rou argued and defended Mu Chen, as he had already done a good job.

Tang Bing, however, did not say anything as she stood beside

them. Compared to Tang Rou, she was the more mature one, and although she knew that Mu Chen did perform well, sometimes reality was cruel. No matter how outstanding you were, only people standing at the zenith would receive the glory.

People who failed and end up as others' stepping stones would just be neglected and forgotten.

If Mu Chen failed to obtain a slot, perhaps the shock that he had caused would vanish instantly. At most, people would feel regretful for him and then promptly forget him, as he would just be considered a failure by then.

Nine Nether glanced at the two girls who had reduced their cheering, her red lips curling. She then gazed at the Spiritual Energy Screen and murmured, "However... Mu Chen won't lose that easily..."

As cheers erupted in the arena where Nine Nether Palace was, silence loomed in Blood Hawk Palace where the atmosphere was tense and unnerving. Many strong men stared at each other at a loss for what to do as they furtively glanced at the throne where Lord Blood Hawk sat without expression. They did not dare to disturb him, for they could sense the burning rage in his heart.

Crack.

The armrest on his throne Lord Blood Hawk had been gripping now had small cracks running through it. His chest heaved in agitation as he tried to suppress his fury.

"Four imbeciles indeed..." he murmured, a chilling glint flashing in his eyes as he stared at the Spiritual Energy Screen. He leaned on his throne with a nonchalant expression on his face.

The fact that Mu Chen could break through the barricade of the four Mangshan Mountain Sovereigns did surprise him, but it didn't matter as long as Mu Chen failed to obtain the slot. Otherwise, all his effort would be for naught.

The battle of the Golden Pool had only just begun.

...

On the majestic peak of the Golden Pool, golden torrents poured down. The magnificent sight amazed yet also terrified many. Fortunately, it was not targeted at a specific person. If that had been the case, even the Nine Lords would find it hard to ascend to the peak, let alone First and Second Grade Sovereigns.

In the sea of forests that glimmered with the golden light of the Buddha, two figures stood tall, glancing towards the direction where Mu Chen and the four leaders of Mangshan Mountain had had a fierce battle.

"That Mu Chen actually defeated the four Sovereigns of Mangshan Mountain?" Wu Tian stared into the distance. They had witnessed the battle, and Mu Chen's strategies were indeed powerful. It was no wonder he could defeat the First Grade Sovereigns easily.

Wu Tian's eyebrows were knitted together, but he then smiled and said, "Things have become interesting then."

He was astonished that Mu Chen could defeat the four First Grade Sovereigns, but that was about it. With his ability now, it was not difficult to achieve because the four Mangshan Sovereigns were not a threat.

The differences between the different Sovereign ranks could not be easily compensated by quantity.

"Looks like the heavens are giving me a chance," Cao Feng narrowed his eyes and smiled faintly.

"Heh heh, we can let others witness the vast difference between the previous and current Commanders of the Nine Nether Troop." Wu Tian smiled as he continued, "However, we can ignore him for the time being. Let's ascend to the peak first. I'll see if we can rise in position this time."

He turned to look at the depths of the peak of the Golden Pool and licked his lips, resembling a starving wolf who had his eyes targeted on a goal and would not rest until he got it.

"Oh?"

Cao Feng raised a brow. "You intend to target Zhou Yue?"

Wu Tian was ranked third among the Four Great Commanders, and if he defeated Zhou Yue, he would be able to rise a rank. However, Zhou Yue was a great Commander under Lord Mountain Cracker, and had had illustrious battle achievements over the years. He was considered an influential figure in the Daluo Territory and was a formidable opponent.

Although Cao Feng's ability had improved by leaps and bounds due to leaning on the resources of Blood Hawk Palace, he was aware that in this short period of time, it was difficult for him to shake up the positions of the Four Great Commanders. However, if it was Wu Tian, he might have the ability to do so...

"I'm pissed off at this third position."

Wu Tian grinned, revealing his white teeth. With a flourish of his sleeve, he said nothing more and surged forward like a majestic eagle, tearing the golden torrents apart and flying as swift as lightning towards the peak of the mountain.

Upon seeing this, Cao Feng followed closely, and they saw some strong men along the way. The latter, however, did not dare to target them, as both were members of the Four Great Commanders, and that would be akin to courting death.

Just as Wu Tian and Cao Feng were about to continue ascending the mountain, another two figures stood in the deeper parts of the mountain. They were the other two of the Four Great Commanders: Xu Qing, who was ranked first, and Zhou Yue, who was ranked second.

They glanced at the place where Mu Chen had battled previously,

surprise flashing in their eyes. However, they didn't comment on it, though interest colored their features. It looked like the battle of the Daluo Golden Pool would see some unexpected odds...

...

Just as everyone was still recovering from their shock at Mu Chen's battle, Mu Chen, as the key character, was heading to the peak at top speed.

Roar!

In the majestic golden torrents, a dragon's roar could be heard as the silhouette of a dragon soared through the space. It circled in the golden torrents, its speed surpassing that of some of the top powers ahead.

The expressions of those top powers changed as they hesitated, but they did not take action, as they had no confidence in besting someone who had defeated four Sovereigns from the Mangshan Mountains.

This silhouette of the dragon was of course transformed from Mu Chen. He had obtained the Physical Divine Art, Dragon Soaring Art from the Sovereign White Dragon. This Divine Art had helped Mu Chen a lot in the past, but as his abilities increased, the effect of the Dragon Soaring Art weakened until he successfully advanced into the Sovereign-stage...

After advancing into the Sovereign-stage, Mu Chen could finally maximize the highest potential of the Dragon Soaring Art, which was Dragon Soaring. At this stage, he could transform into a dragon's silhouette and lend its divine strength to tear apart space in short distances. He could evade the all-enveloping barricade of the four Sovereigns of Mangshan Mountain exactly because of this power of the Dragon Soaring Art.

Mu Chen now was confident that if he activated the maximum potential of the Dragon Soaring Art, even a Second Grade

Sovereign would be unable to catch up to him.

It was this speed which allowed him to surpass the second echelon formation, and catch up with the first echelon formation.

After experiencing the previous battle, he no longer had to conceal his abilities, and everyone would have to consider carefully before targeting him after his display of power.

Whoosh!

The space distorted wherever the dragon's silhouette passed through as it appeared a thousand feet away in a flash. Within the dragon's silhouette, Mu Chen's swept around his surroundings as he neared the peak of the Golden Pool.

He could sense that this arena had 20 or more spiritual energy fluctuations in total, and each of them was immensely powerful in comparison to the Sovereigns he had met before.

People who could enter the first echelon formation were clearly the aces among all the participants.

Mu Chen lifted his head and glanced into the distance as a platform shimmered with gold light. Gold light circulated atop the platform as if crafted from gold. He knew that that was the Daluo Golden Platform, which was the only pathway to the Daluo Golden Pool.

One was only qualified to ascend to the peak by passing through the platform.

With a tip of his foot, the silhouette of the dragon surged forward, but just as he soared a hundred feet, he stopped abruptly as he transformed into his human form while the form of a dragon dissipated.

Mu Chen stood silently in the air as he narrowed his eyes and surveyed his surroundings. Many figures separated by a distance from each other also stood silently in this vast sea of forests.

These figures had eyes as sharp as eagles and peregrines, and powerful waves of spiritual energy circled them like a prelude to howling winds.

These characters were all qualified to reach the Daluo Golden Platform, however, there were not many positions there. Thus, if one wanted to reach the platform, they would have to depend on absolute power to get there.

Mu Chen gazed at the billowing robes and sharp eyes. As he licked his lips, a fiery combat instinct and desire blazed in his dark eyes.

This is the last step. No one can stop me!

Chapter 687: Courageous Spirit

In the sea of forest, bathed in golden light, Mu Chen stood in mid-air, his dark eyes looking forward with a sharp gaze, as seven figures could be seen amid the forest.

These seven figures were standing around, about a thousand feet apart, as majestic spiritual energy surged around them, drawing howling winds. They stared at each other with dread and guarded expressions. They were clear that, if they wanted to ascend to the Daluo Golden Platform, they would have to pose as each other's greatest obstacles.

These seven figures were all aces, who hailed from various forces in the Daluo Territory, and any one of them would not be weaker than the four leaders of Mangshan Mountain. Otherwise, they would not be able to lead the first echelon formation among the other competitors. Also, it was precisely because of their strong capabilities, that the battle would culminate in an inevitable fierce struggle between evenly-matched opponents.

No matter who wished to ascend to the Daluo Golden Platform from this direction, they would draw the enmity and attacks of these seven figures. Hence, when Mu Chen had appeared, seven glances were immediately drawn towards his, before they turned solemn, as they had recognized Mu Chen as the opponent who had exchanged blows with the four leaders of Mangshan Mountain, due to the aftermath of the fierce battle. The combat strength that Mu Chen had displayed had shocked them all.

The seven figures frowned, as they had not thought that Mu Chen would come from their direction, and they knew then that they had gained a fearsome opponent. After witnessing Mu Chen's previous battle, they all understood that, if they fought him one on one, none of them would be Mu Chen's match.

The seven figures glanced at each other knowingly, as their gazes

flickered, reaching a common understanding. Although this Mu Chen was formidable, if he wanted to get through them, they would have to form an alliance to overwhelm him and get him to understand that, no matter how powerful he was, he had to adhere to the rules in their territory.

Mu Chen observed their gazes, his expression remaining calm, as he knew exactly what these seven figures were planning. However, he did not have any intention to retreat. Instead, he took a deep breath, the resolve in his dark eyes turning sharp.

So what if seven Sovereigns were out to stop him? Even a powerful Sovereign like Luo Tianshen failed to stop his tracks, let alone these characters before him? Although the path in front of him was full of prickly thorns, even if he had to bleed, he would break through fearlessly!

Crash!

Mu Chen stepped out abruptly, and as the space behind him distorted, the Sovereign Sea appeared faintly. Then, as if purple flames rose, spiritual energy fluctuations started emanating from where his body acted as the core. The spiritual energy then surged and swept across the entire space, causing the sea of forest below them to crumble and collapse.

Whoosh!

Mu Chen stepped heavily, as his figure transformed into a stream of light, surging forward to the Daluo Golden Platform.

"Stop right there!"

The seven Sovereigns roared in anger when they saw how Mu Chen ignored them blatantly, as he headed straight toward the Daluo Golden Platform.

This Mu Chen was too arrogant, does he see them as nothing?

Fury boiled in the seven's eyes, as they struck at the same time, causing a fierce ribbon of spiritual energy to sweep across the

space. It appeared as if a raging dragon that was surging towards Mu Chen with a speed as swift as lightning.

In the sky, Mu Chen's silhouette halted abruptly. He turned to glance at the ribbon of spiritual energy, a cold glint surging in his eyes. He paused in his tracks, as an obsidian beam of light soared into the sky from his crown, an ominous aura erupting from it.

Within the pillar of light, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar emerged, then expanded profusely to a few hundred feet tall, as if it was a massive pillar that was reaching to the heavens. Mu Chen crossed his arms lightly in front of his chest. As he dealt a brutal blow with the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, the space in front of him shattered, and a pervasive demonic aura caused the heavens and the earth to be shrouded in dullness.

Boom!

As the Great Meru Demonic Pillar landed heavily, it shattered the seven ribbons of spiritual energy. As they erupted, they headed straight towards the three Sovereigns, who were still right in front, with a dizzying momentum.

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar surged forward fiercely with a looming shadow and demonic aura, causing the sea of forests below to be torn apart instantaneously. Meanwhile, the three Sovereigns, who were tangled in the attack, twisted their expressions in shock, clearly aware of how terrifying Mu Chen was.

Boom!

Three Sovereign celestial bodies appeared, surrounding their bodies, their massive sizes colliding with the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. The collision was so devastating, it unleashed a storm that destroyed the sea of forests within a thousand feet radius.

The three Sovereign celestial bodies retreated quickly, their massive feet causing the ground to shake and develop deep pits. As

they regained their stability, terror surged in their eyes.

They now understood the fear that the four leaders of Mangshan Mountain had felt. This young man before them was bound to deal fatal blows, without mercy, if he decided to get serious.

They lifted their heads to see Mu Chen hovering in mid-air, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar emanating an ominous demonic aura behind him, as if it was a Primordial Demonic God. Flames burned in the slender young man's dark eyes, as his handsome face remained expressionless, but his gaze caused their hearts to tremble in trepidation.

His was a gaze of pure determination that nothing could waver. To continue on his journey, the young man was willing to pay the price of even his life, and any opponent that stood in his way would be burned to ashes below his feet.

Boom!

Taking advantage of the moments of their shock, Mu Chen moved swiftly and appeared atop of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, just as the pillar transformed into a beam of lurid light and surged out. Although his speed was extremely fast, if the seven Sovereigns were out to stop him, they could have done so easily.

However, no one dared to take action, for they could sense the malicious aura from Mu Chen that they dreaded, and the latter's determined gaze let them understand that, once they took action, the young man would begin a battle that would only stop when one party was dead.

They had expended much effort to reach this phase of cultivation, and thus valued their lives highly. Although a slot to use the Daluo Golden Pool was highly valuable, it was insignificant compared to one's life.

Furthermore, even if they had ascended to the Daluo Golden Platform, they would have to face the powerful Four Great

Commanders. Thus, it would be unwise to battle with such a persistent and fierce character now.

The gazes of the seven figures flickered, as hesitation and conflict surfaced in their eyes. Mu Chen, however, ignored them.

As he stood atop the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, the winds howled, causing his robes to billow. Flames seemed to be surging within the young man's gaze.

Below the peak of the Golden Pool, many people watched the scene unfold with bated breaths, as Mu Chen rushing into the circle of seven Sovereigns was a shocking visual.

Tang Bing and Tang Rou gripped their hands together tightly, as their hearts jumped to their throats. However, while they felt extremely anxious, they also felt that Mu Chen in this current stage was so outstanding, that they could barely shift their gazes away. That young man might have been younger than them, but his courageous spirit easily crushed Sovereigns of the same grade.

Under countless gazes, Mu Chen barged into the circle of seven Sovereigns, but he did not pause at all. His expression remained calm, as he activated the Great Meru Demonic Pillar to surge forward, brushing past the seven Sovereigns.

Even till the end, the seven Sovereigns did not take action. And, when Mu Chen passed by them, they heaved a quiet sigh of relief in their hearts, as the young man's eyes made them understand that, if they had really wanted to take action, even if they could stop Mu Chen today, they would end up paying a heavy price.

They could not imagine why a young man had such a determined and sharp gaze, but many years of cultivation had allowed them to understand: this was a ruthless character, who they could not afford to provoke. Hence, they could only purse their mouths and feel a sense of relief. This young man would achieve extraordinary accomplishments in the future, and they would not be able to stop his footsteps.

Woah.

As Mu Chen passed through the circle of seven Sovereigns, the crowd below the peak of the Golden Pool gasped in shock and bewilderment, as many strong men were astonished and in disbelief. Also, since they were not involved in the situation, they naturally could not understand the actions of the seven Sovereigns.

In the sky, the three Kings gazed at the massive Spiritual Energy Screen. As they glanced at the young man standing atop the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, their expressions flickered.

"This Mu Chen has a promising future,so it looks like a strong character has finally appeared in our Daluo Territory."

The Sleeping King, who had always been watching with bleary eyes, opened his eyes wider, revealing that they were as deep as the dark sky, surging with wisdom. He glanced at the slender figure, then stated airily.

Condor King and Nine Nether were on rather good terms, so he just smiled. Then, the Spiritual Pupil King stated nonchalantly, "There are too many prodigies in this world, and impressive characters are as many as the stars in the sky. At the end of the day, there are too few who truly stand out."

Upon hearing this, the Sleeping King smiled cryptically, as he shut his eyes and reverted back to his laidback demeanor.

Atop the sea of forests, Mu Chen, who had now passed through the seven Sovereigns, waved his sleeve, summoning the Great Meru Demonic Pillar back into his body. He then leapt into the air with a tap of his feet, his figure surging out.

Then, in only a few moments, the resplendent shimmering Daluo Golden Platform appeared before him. He stepped out slowly, his feet landing on it, the sensation causing him to smirk. He had finally reached the Daluo Golden Platform.

Now, as long as he passed through it, he could reach the Daluo Golden Pool.

Chapter 688: Challenging Cao Feng

The shimmering golden platform was the only passageway to the mountain peak. Golden light permeated the atmosphere like a flowing golden liquid. It was extraordinarily dazzling.

Mu Chen stepped onto the golden platform as his gaze swept across his surroundings. The golden platform was about 10,000 feet wide and was very vast. There were only a few figures standing atop this vast golden platform.

To be precise, there were five figures.

Mu Chen had met all five figures. As expected, four of them were the Four Great Commanders of Daluo Territory, and the fifth was a muscular man whom he had seen when he entered the peak of the Golden Pool.

He didn't expect that this man could reach the Daluo Golden Platform.

Just as Mu Chen was appraising the five men on the Daluo Golden Platform, five glances also converged on him. With the exception of Wu Tian and Cao Feng's chilling gazes, the other three were astonished, as they had witnessed how Mu Chen had overcome the circle of seven Sovereigns.

That scene had shocked them, as they understood that Mu Chen didn't rely on merely his capabilities, but on his courageous spirit to stop the seven Sovereigns in their tracks.

In the world, there were many prodigies and even more people who possessed brilliant talent, but those who could become reputable Sovereigns in the end possessed an unwavering determination and an extraordinary spirit.

This spirit could be understood as a kind of fearless courage; that no matter what opponent one was facing, they would not retreat. Even if it were an insurmountable mountain before them, they

would charge head-on without a trace of fear.

In moments where chances of survival were extremely slim, as long as one fought for that sliver of hope for life, one would be able to be reborn.

The composed demeanor Mu Chen exhibited earlier had shocked them, and that shock was stronger than when Mu Chen had defeated the four Sovereigns of Mangshan Mountains.

Thus, even Xu Qing and Zhou Yue, who were ranked first and second respectively among the Four Great Commanders, looked at Mu Chen solemnly, ready to face him squarely.

"Heh heh, how interesting. I didn't think that two dark horses would appear this time. The competition is much stronger than before." Laughter rang out as Wu Tian smiled and appraised Mu Chen and the muscular man with a contemplative and teasing smirk.

Mu Chen's expression remained calm as he slowly stepped forward to the platform's northern corner. The Daluo Golden Platform now had six competitors, including Mu Chen. However, there were only four slots in the Daluo Golden Pool, so two competitors would be eliminated.

To overcome the numerous challenging obstacles to reach the Daluo Golden Platform, standing here were characters considered to be the best of the younger generation in Daluo Territory. If they wanted to defeat two competitors, the difficulty would be even more challenging than in any previous battle.

Mu Chen's gaze changed as his body seemingly relaxed, but the spiritual energy within his body was like a roaring, raging dragon prepared to deal with any attacks with terrifying power.

As Mu Chen remained silent, the five other figures said nothing more, but everyone could feel a tense atmosphere permeating the Golden Platform.

Between the six of them, which two would be eliminated?

Below the peak of the Golden Pool, everyone's gazes were focused on the Daluo Golden Platform as they anxiously looked on. This was the final battle. When the results were out, the four slots of the Daluo Golden Pool would be determined.

Judging from the current situation, Mu Chen and the muscular man were the most likely candidates to be eliminated. Although they were dark horses in comparison to the reputable Four Great Commanders, their foundation was still weaker.

Amid the attention, Wu Tian's gaze shifted like a venomous snake as he stood on the Daluo Golden Platform, glancing between Mu Chen and the muscular man. He smiled saying, "Both of you are newcomers, thus you can choose your own opponent in this final battle. Consider this a privilege given by us seniors. Of course... you can also choose each other to make it easier."

His smile was malicious, as the implication was clear. He wanted to turn Mu Chen and the muscular man against each other, and when one had won, he would vie for the last slot.

Mu Chen remained expressionless and ignored him, while Wu Tian smiled and turned his glance towards the muscular man.

Under Wu Tian's gaze, the muscular man's glance was also changing. Judging from the situation, it was clear Mu Chen was easier to deal with among the five. However, while he seemed coarse and thick in terms of mentality, he was extremely perceptive and had a keen sense that Mu Chen was not a simple character.

It seemed as if a fierce tiger was hidden in the depths of his seemingly polite dark eyes and if unleashed, would cause utter annihilation. Thus, if he had to choose an opponent from the five, he would not choose Mu Chen.

If this person became his enemy, he would have to live his life in

fear.

The muscular man's gaze flickered before he took a deep breath and smiled amiably at Mu Chen. He then glanced towards Wu Tian and clasped his fists in a bow saying, "Daluo Territory, Lion Tiger Mountains, Fang Lei, may I ask Commander Wu Tian for this duel?"

As he spoke, Wu Tian's expression darkened, his eyes glaring daggers at the muscular man as he did not expect that this fellow would not only ruin his plans but also provoke him directly.

Now that all Four Great Commanders are present, this fellow chose me instead out of the other three. Does he think that I am the weakest among the Four Great Commanders?

Wu Tian could not bear this provocation. He glared eerily at the muscular man named Fang Lei before smiling to reveal starkly white, beast-like teeth. "Good, excellent. You are very courageous."

Mu Chen was surprised at the muscular man's choice because judging from all the surface aspects, he posed a smaller threat in comparison to one of the Four Great Commanders. However, Fang Lei risked offending Wu Tian and gave up on battling him, which was an astonishing decision.

However, it was this choice that gave Mu Chen a chance, for he could avoid a continuous tag battle that would exhaust his energy.

Thus, he nodded at Fang Lei before slowly stepping out. His eyes flashed with a cold glint as he looked towards the Four Great Commanders. His gaze passed Xu Qing and Zhou Yue before stopping on Wu Tian and Cao Feng, both displaying calm expressions.

"Nine Nether Palace New Commander, Mu Chen. May I know if I can ask Commander Cao Feng for a duel?"

As Mu Chen's nonchalant voice rang out in the Daluo Golden Platform, the air seemed to have become frozen, and the

atmosphere instantly became electrifying below the peak of the Golden Pool.

Gasps of astonishment reverberated in the air as countless people were surprised. Their eyes lit up, and their interest was piqued because everyone knew the past relationship between Cao Feng and Nine Nether Palace, and now that Mu Chen was the new Commander of Nine Nether Palace, the old and the new commanders would be clashing, posing a very interesting confrontation.

They wanted to know rather badly if the old Commander, who had betrayed and deserted Nine Nether Palace, was more powerful, or was the new Commander, whom Nine Nether brought back yet again, indeed superior?

Nine Nether had already made a wrong judgment once. Would she make another this time?

Amid the commotion, everyone in the Nine Nether Troop had cold expressions and glared at Cao Feng resentfully. He had betrayed Nine Nether Palace, which was akin to betraying the Nine Nether Troop.

To them, there was nothing more hurtful than their Commander betraying and abandoning them.

Tang Bing and Tang Rou gripped their hands together tightly, anxiety written clearly on their faces. Although they knew that Mu Chen and Cao Fen's confrontation would happen eventually, now that the scene really appeared, they couldn't help but have conflicting emotions in their hearts.

Cao Feng's betrayal was considered a painful part of Nine Nether Palace's history, and they knew that Nine Nether was still hung-up on it. After all, it was hard to forgive and forget the betrayal from someone you trusted.

No one could resolve that knot in her heart except for Mu Chen.

He could do it because he was the new Commander of Nine Nether Palace, replacing Cao Feng. Thus, he had to erase all traces that Cao Feng had left behind.

It would not be difficult to do so, as long as he defeated Cao Feng. It would be akin to an official declaration to everyone in Daluo Territory that in the future, Mu Chen was the true Commander of the Nine Nether Troop in Nine Nether Palace.

The people and their reputations from the past would be overshadowed by his brilliance.

A traitor would be forgotten, and after ushering in the right person, Nine Nether Palace would exude her rightful glory.

Of course, the premise for that happening hinged on whether Mu Chen possessed the capability to erase all traces of Cao Feng. Their confrontation would be the moment of truth.

In Daluo Territory, countless people were waiting for this revelation.

Whether Nine Nether Palace could rise in glory was dependent on this battle.

Below the peak of the Golden Pool, countless gasps permeated the air. Cao Feng smiled faintly as he stood on the Daluo Golden Platform. He gazed at Mu Chen, and a cold smirk appeared on his face.

Mu Chen had chosen him to be his opponent; didn't that fulfill his wish?

He would make Nine Nether realize that she could not replace his outstanding abilities with just any person she found.

Cao Feng breathed out a puff of white mist before he stepped out, lifting his palms and bowing slightly to Mu Chen. His gaze was as chilling as daggers, as his laughter rang softly in the Daluo Golden Platform.

"Challenging me? I'll fulfil your wish then, but I hope you have the courage to pay the price..."

Chapter 689: The Duel Between the Old and New Commander

Amid the countless gazes, Cao Feng stepped out gradually, and with every step, the spiritual energy fluctuations emanating from his body increased at an alarming speed. Within a mere three steps, his spiritual energy fluctuations had surpassed that of the maximum potential of a First Grade Sovereign! In fact, the power of his spiritual energy had surpassed any opponent that Mu Chen had met on the peak of the Golden Pool!

As Cao Feng steadied his steps, with a sardonic smirk on his face, his spiritual energy fluctuations had reached that of a Second Grade Sovereign. The overwhelming oppressive energy he was emitting now enveloped the entire Daluo Golden Platform. Cao Feng had actually advanced as a Second Grade Sovereign!

Below the peak of the Golden Pool, countless gasps rang out in the air. No wonder Cao Feng was not fearful of Mu Chen's challenge, for he had reached a breakthrough, advancing him to the rank of Second Grade Sovereign successfully!

Tang Bing and Tang Rou's expressions became somber, as they were clear that the differences between every rank in the Sovereign-stage were significant. Thus, it was not easy to compensate for this difference in ability.

"Sister, Mu Chen won't lose, right?" Tang Rou pulled on Tang Bing's hand and asked quietly. She knew that, if Mu Chen lost this time, Nine Nether Palace's reputation would suffer a disastrous decline, and Lord Blood Hawk would then rake up past matters in an attempt to disband Nine Nether Palace.

Tang Bing hesitated slightly, before gritting her teeth. "Mu Chen is not an idiot, and I believe he had anticipated this to happen. Thus, he wouldn't be so confident, unless he already had methods to counter this."

At this moment, she had no other option but to have faith in Mu Chen.

Upon hearing this, Nine Nether couldn't help but smile, as she said, "Bing'er, you have finally shown some confidence in him."

Tang Bing blushed slightly, as she retorted stubbornly, "I'm just making considerations for Nine Nether Palace. He was so arrogant just now. If he loses, see how I will end him!"

A gentle smile bloomed, replacing Nine Nether's usual cold expression. As she stared at the huge Spiritual Energy Screen, her eyes narrowed at the two figures confronting each other. She then stated softly, "Rest assured... One mere Cao Feng is unable to stop him..."

.....

Cao Feng stood at the center of the Daluo Golden Platform, his gaze looming over Mu Chen. It was the ability of a Second Grade Sovereign that allowed him to have such confidence.

In Blood Hawk Palace, he had always remained low-key, leaving many decisions to be made by Wu Tian, as he had concealed his true capabilities. Other than Lord Blood Hawk, very few people knew that his abilities were barely less than those of Wu Tian.

Furthermore, he was more patient and knew how to bide his time, as compared to Wu Tian. In fact, if it wasn't for Mu Chen, he would have continued to hide his true strength, until he could utterly defeat the three other Commanders, who were currently ranked higher than him.

"Originally, I didn't intend to display my ability..."

A majestic spiritual energy rippled around Cao Feng, causing the space to fluctuate, resulting in a wave of ripples, which were visible to the naked eye. He glanced coldly at Mu Chen. "As the previous Commander of Nine Nether Troop, I believe I need to test if you are qualified enough to become the new Commander."

Mu Chen's brows knit together tightly, as he stared at Cao Feng, before stating slowly, "I hope you never speak this sentence again, as you are not worthy enough to have any relationship with Nine Nether Palace."

He paused for a moment, then continued, "Also, I would like to tell you something... You're an ungrateful and vicious animal. Thus, I want one hand from you to pay the price of the betrayal. Although I think this would dirty my hands, you must be accountable toward the thousands of brothers of the Nine Nether Troop."

Mu Chen's calm voice rang throughout the Daluo Golden Platform, leaving the five men dumbfounded upon hearing it. Even Xu Qing's and Zhou Yue's glances surged with astonishment. They stared at the composed young man with stunned expressions, as it was hard to imagine that such an arrogant threat was issued by such a seemingly gentle and polite young man.

His words had been akin to regarding Cao Feng as a fish on the chopping board, and as one who was on the verge of slaughtering him easily. They wondered if he had forgotten that Cao Feng had already advanced as a Second Grade Sovereign! Even though he had displayed outstanding combat ability, Mu Chen was still in no position to say such arrogant statements in front of a Second Grade Sovereign!

"Heh heh... how interesting." Wu Tian glanced at Mu Chen with an unsettling gaze as he cackled and wondered to himself: Was this new Commander of Nine Nether Palace foolish to such a degree?

Cao Feng stared chillingly at Mu Chen, his calm expression completely wiped off. As the corners of his mouth twitched, his face twisted maliciously.

"Heh heh..."

A chilling laugh emitted from Cao Feng's clenched teeth, as Mu Chen's words had angered him to the point where of incredulity.

Over the past years, it was his first time to have met such an insolent fellow.

He had originally intended to humiliate Mu Chen verbally. But, now that the latter had shocked him with such insolent words, it seemed that he did not view him as a threat in the slightest.

"Looks like the new Nine Nether's newly found Commander is truly disappointing," Cao Feng said stiffly.

Mu Chen knit his brows and frowned deeper, staring at Cao Feng, before stating, "Two hands."

"You insolent brat!"

Upon hearing Mu Chen's words, Cao Feng finally lost his calm composure. He began to laugh, his expression twisting into a grotesque grimace. He then surged out violently, as he swore to beat up this brat, to the point of crippling him. Then, he'd see if he still dared to say such foolish words!

Whoosh!

An enraged Cao Feng dealt a blow, its speed appearing in front of Mu Chen, as if it was a specter. Then, without any hesitation, a punch flew out, causing frenzied torrents of spiritual energy to surge out, as if a turbulent sea that was crashing toward Mu Chen.

The power of a Second Grade Sovereign had erupted with one blow of his fist. This blow was sufficient enough to defeat any First Grade Sovereign.

A storm of fists raged with the might of a tumultuous sea, as the golden platform quaked with the impact. Clearly, Cao Feng had not shown any mercy.

The punches expanded swiftly before Mu Chen's dark eyes, but he still showed no signs of retreating. He crossed his arms lightly, his eyes turning crimson red, as a demonic aura permeated the air and swept across the space violently.

Crash!

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar materialized between his arms, as he swung it harshly to block the barrage of punches.

Bong!

The collision caused a low rumble to erupt, as a frenzy of shockwaves wreaked havoc, causing small cracks to appear on the golden platform. That collision caused even Xu Qing and Zhou Yue to narrow their eyes.

Crash!

In the aftermath, where spiritual energy shockwaves wreaked havoc, two silhouettes fell backwards. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar spun in Mu Chen's hands, before crashing onto the ground heavily. He gripped the Demonic Pillar with one hand, as his body steadied, lifting his head to look at Cao Feng, who now had a gloomy expression.

"I see, that's all there is to a Second Grade Sovereign," Mu Chen stated calmly.

Although his ability was only that of a First Grade Sovereign, Mu Chen's spiritual energy had integrated with that of the Unperishable Flame, so it was naturally stronger than that of Cao Feng's. With the power of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar adding to that, even if it was a direct clash, Mu Chen would not be at much of a disadvantage.

"Aren't you scared that you would be disgraced later, after saying such words?" Cao Feng said scornfully, his gaze growing more chilling, as he clenched his fists.

Majestic spiritual light surged and swept across the space. Then, a crimson red spear appeared in his hand. The spear was blood red, as if it had been through a bloodbath, and it emitted a ghastly aura. At the tip of the spear, a blood red eye of an eagle stood, increasing its unsettling aura.

"That's the Blood Hawk Spear from Blood Hawk Palace, a Middle Grade Divine Artifact and a valuable treasure of Blood Hawk Palace. Lord Blood Hawk is sure generous, to give such a Divine Artifact to Cao Feng." Upon seeing the crimson Blood Hawk Spear, Tang Bing's heart tensed, as she commented.

Worry and anxiety was also written all over Tang Rou's face. With the Blood Hawk Spear in his grasp, Cao Feng's demeanor became more domineering. And, with a jerk of his spear, a sharp cry of an eagle rang out in the sky, immediately followed by a bloody aura ripple, as if it were tearing the sky apart.

Whoosh!

Cao Feng's figure surged out violently, as he transformed into many afterimages, his spear turning into crimson red torrential rain. The crimson rainstorm immediately shrouded Mu Chen, and a murderous intent swept across the entire arena. Mu Chen retreated half a step back, as the Great Meru Demonic Pillar swept out, blocking the spear with its massive size.

Clink! Clink! Clatter! Clatter!

The lightning-fast collision caused sparks to emerge, each clash resulting in terrifying bursts of spiritual energy, as the entire space distorted with the impact. Both parties did not use any defense, but wholly attacked in order to fend off their aggressors' attacks, which was very exhilarating to witness.

Countless people in the crowd widened their eyes to get a better look at the two blurry figures. However, no matter how fierce the other party's attack was, it was difficult for either to break through in order to land a definitive blow.

Shock surfaced in many people's eyes, as they realized that, in this head-on confrontation, Cao Feng, who was supposedly more powerful than Mu Chen, did not gain an upper hand in the least. Cao Feng had clearly realized this, as his gaze turned increasingly chilling. Then, with a tip of his toes, his figure surged into mid-air,

as the Blood Hawk Spear in his hand emanated a bloody aura of ten thousand feet, and a sharp and piercing cry of the eagle rang throughout the heavens and earth.

"Eagle Spear, Eagle Splitting the Space!"

A bloody aura spewed forth, as a Blood Hawk soared from the Blood Hawk Spear, its size was massive, reaching to nearly a hundred feet! It extended its wings, as it integrated with the fierce aura of the spear and rushed to envelop Mu Chen, with a momentum as swift as lightning.

"Just die!" Cao Feng roared, his growl permeating the atmosphere.

Mu Chen lifted his head. A sharp glance surged in his dark eyes upon seeing the brutal attack, causing him to pause to take a deep breath. His hand then jerked the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, causing it to land heavily on the ground, as ancient demonic runes glimmered on the primordial Demonic Pillar.

In that moment, an indescribable demonic aura permeated the heavens and earth, as if a primordial demonic creature had awakened, causing everyone to look on in shock. The crimson red in Mu Chen's eyes grew rapidly, as a low growl sounded in his heart.

"The Great Meru Demonic Pillar, Swinging Demonic Runes!"

Chapter 690: Blood Shadow Celestial Body

"Swinging Demonic Runes!"

When the low roar sounded off in Mu Chen's heart, scarlet ancient light runes appeared instantly on the body of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. The light runes spread all over the Great Meru Demonic Pillar like cracks, causing it to look as if it were going to break.

However, it was precisely this tattered appearance that caused an inexplicable ominous aura to sweep out from the cracks. It made the Great Meru Demonic Pillar look like a Demonic God that was going to wake up and be extremely horrifying.

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar was a Primordial Ominous Artifact and had been possessed by many sovereign masters in the ancient times. Although it was damaged at the moment, as Mu Chen became stronger, its power was slowly starting to be displayed. Ordinary Divine Artifacts would never be this fierce.

Bang!

As the Great Meru Demonic Pillar containing a monstrous ominous aura struck down forcefully, the space was instantly distorted, and the air in the entire sky started to explode. Eventually, the pillar collided with the incoming blood hawk in an extremely shocking way.

Dong!

The two crashed into each other, and an ear-piercingly low noise spread. A terrifying spiritual energy shockwave swept ferociously in all directions like a wave that was 100,000 feet tall.

Rumble.

The violent spiritual energy shockwave raged and seemed to have brought about the continuous roar of thunder.

Everyone stared at the area where the spiritual energy shockwave was the most destructive. There, a slender young man was standing, his body as straight as a spear. His hands held the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, and his feet rubbed against the ground as he gradually backed off.

Every time he stepped back, the ground was crushed into powder.

A scarlet color filled Mu Chen's eyes, and a low roar seemed to come from his throat. Then, he stomped his foot forcefully and instantly, the golden ground below him cracked open directly in a radius of hundreds of feet.

"Break!"

On his arms, his veins were wiggling like dragons. As he roared, an appalling ominous aura surged on the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

Tweet!

A sharp eagle's cry could be heard. Many tiny cracks appeared on the huge blood hawk and spread rapidly. In the end, the blood hawk exploded with a loud bang and turned into many blood-red light spots which filled the sky and gradually fell down.

In the sky, a muffled sound was also heard. In the majestic spiritual energy shockwave, a person seemed to have staggered. Mu Chen broke Cao Feng's attack by force, which obviously caused him to be affected as well.

Vroom!

With an icy expression on his face, Mu Chen stomped his foot and ascended, flying high into the sky like the giant Roc that had expanded its wings. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar quickly turned into a dark shadow which struck down hard at the place filled with violent spiritual energy.

Mu Chen's attack was especially fierce. Since he had a slight

advantage, he would not give his opponent any chance to relax.

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar tore the violent spiritual energy apart forcefully and smashed down at the figure within.

Dong!

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar stormed into the dense spiritual energy, but Mu Chen's look suddenly turned serious.

A devastating shockwave broke out, and the dense spiritual energy was immediately dispersed. Countless people looked at the place, and their eyes all narrowed suddenly...

A figure thousands of feet in size stood proudly at the region filled with the light of spiritual energy. The figure was blood-red throughout its body, as if it were solidified from blood. On the giant's surface there were strange runes formed from blood. Waves of terrifying spiritual energy fluctuations emanated from the figure and directly caused the entire space to tremble and distort along with them.

At the moment, the giant figure was blocking the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. The pillar struck down with its huge hand which was glittering with blood rays. As the blood rays surged, it was as if blood were continuously dripping down from it.

The giant figure was the Sovereign Celestial Body that Cao Feng had cultivated!

"This Sovereign Celestial Body..."

Mu Chen also stared at the scarlet Sovereign Celestial Body. From the Sovereign Celestial Body, he felt an incredibly powerful spiritual energy fluctuation. His eyes sparkled gently and he said softly, "It's actually the Blood Shadow Celestial Body which is ranked 99th..."

Although the Blood Shadow Celestial Body was only ranked 99th, it was in the rankings after all, and was naturally stronger than ordinary Sovereign Celestial Bodies. It seemed that Cao Feng was

indeed very valued in the Blood Hawk Palace. Otherwise, it would be difficult for him to obtain the cultivation method for the Blood Shadow Celestial Body. It was no wonder that he betrayed the Nine Nether Palace in the first place and sought refuge in the Blood Hawk Palace.

"Since you can force me into using the Blood Shadow Celestial Body, you are considered to have some abilities!" The Blood Shadow Celestial Body that Cao Feng had turned into stared at Mu Chen with his scarlet, beast-like eyes. His cold voice rumbled in the sky.

His voice was filled with rage. At first, he thought that since he was a Grade Two Sovereign, he would be able to defeat Mu Chen easily. However, after fighting he realized that he was actually not at an advantage at all. Instead, he was somewhat suppressed by the weird demonic pillar with the frightful ominous aura. How could he tolerate this?

At the moment, everyone in the entire Daluo Territory was watching them. If he were to lose to Mu Chen, he would no longer have a foothold in the future.

Hence, no matter what, he would definitely need to kill Mu Chen!

An intense killing intent flashed in the blood-red eyes of the Blood Shadow Celestial Body. Right then, his bloody palm slapped hard onto the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. A horrific spiritual energy exploded and caused the demonic pillar to be blown away.

Mu Chen backed off quickly. Waving his sleeves, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar whizzed over to him and stood straight on the ground. He stood on the top of the pillar, staring at the huge Blood Shadow Celestial Body with a freezing look.

"Blood Explosion Art!"

Killing intent surged in Cao Feng's heart. His bloody palms changed seals suddenly, and they grabbed towards Mu Chen from

afar like the claws of an eagle.

Bang!

His palms whizzed in the air, and even the sky seemed to have turned scarlet. In the distance, Mu Chen's body stiffened suddenly as the blood in his body actually showed traces of boiling and exploding.

Cao Feng's Blood Shadow Celestial Body could actually detonate the blood inside him from such a distance. The attack was indeed peculiar.

Bang!

Mu Chen stomped his foot abruptly, and brilliant lightning burst out. His body was quickly electrified and became covered in silver light, as if the Thunder God had arrived himself. Then, he punched forward, and the raging lightning, which whizzed past like thousands of lightning pythons, crushed the blood rays.

"Blood Shadow!"

Seeing that, Cao Feng gave a ghastly smile. Countless numbers of bloody waterfalls burst out from his body and flew towards Mu Chen like tens of thousands of shadows, covering the sky and the earth.

The blood shadows emitted waves of screams. As the soundwaves spread, everyone's heads began to hurt badly as if they were going to explode.

Mu Chen frowned slightly. His toes kicked on the ground, and he backed off quickly. The sound of thunder echoed in his ears, resisting the interference from the sharp soundwaves. Then, he punched out fiercely with both hands.

Bang! Bang!

Thunderbolt fist prints that blotted out the sky whizzed over and slammed into the countless blood shadows. Instantly, a continuous

rumbling sounded off in the sky. However, with each such impact, Mu Chen was blown away for over 1,000 feet.

Everyone could tell that this time, Mu Chen was at a total disadvantage.

At the Nine Nether Palace zone, Tang Bing and Tang Rou watched in horror, but did not speak because they knew how strong Cao Feng actually was at the moment.

"Now, you are just like a homeless dog. Where's your arrogance just now?"

Cao Feng gave a dour sneer, and his attack became more intense. Then, he stared at Mu Chen, who was just retreating, and the killing intent in his eyes suddenly became extremely strong. His hands abruptly formed a weird seal.

"You think you can just keep dodging?"

"Demonic Blood Clock, corrode the sky and melt the earth!"

Bang!

The sky suddenly turned dark, and even the clouds in the sky seemed to become blood-red. A bloody rain fell down from the sky and enveloped the entire place.

Mu Chen stopped. He frowned slightly because he felt an extraordinary spiritual energy fluctuation around him. Obviously, Cao Feng was starting to perform a real fatal blow.

"Should be about time..." Mu Chen lowered his head and muttered to himself. Meanwhile, his hands in his sleeves quietly formed the last seal.

Buzz!

The space around Mu Chen suddenly turned blood-red. Many blood shadows penetrated across space like vines, and in just a few breaths' time, they condensed around his body.

The blood shadows wound around Mu Chen, and an enormous

blood clock appeared out of thin air. Then, it engulfed Mu Chen in a peculiar way.

Buzz, buzz.

The blood clock stood in the sky. On its surface there seemed to be countless ferocious faces. Sharp cries could be heard continuously in the sky causing everyone to feel that their heads were in pain, as if they were going to explode.

As the blood clock appeared and engulfed Mu Chen, the expressions of many people changed, after which they shook their heads quietly. Even if a Grade Two Sovereign at the same level as Cao Feng were trapped in this kind of fatal attack, he would also definitely be very heavily injured.

It seemed that Mu Chen's outcome would be ominous rather than propitious.

At the Blood Hawk Palace zone, a mild smile appeared on Lord Blood Hawk's always dour face. His look was as cold as a viper and would cause anyone to tremble with fear.

This time, I'll see how embarrassed the Nine Nether Palace will be.

"Just die!"

In the sky, Cao Feng gave an evil smile, and a killing intent could be seen. Then, he changed his seals, and the blood clock started to suddenly vibrate, emitting many blood rays. If he were to detonate the blood clock, then Mu Chen, who was inside, would surely die!

"Demonic Blood Clock, explode!"

Bang!

The giant blood clock finally completely exploded. At the instant of explosion, there seemed to be an endless blood sea that swept across it. The smell of blood filled the whole place.

At the moment, the entire region of space appeared to be broken.

Many spatial cracks spread rapidly.

Everyone looked at the area.

The faces of the twin sisters Tang Bing and Tang Rou turned slightly pale, and their bodies trembled gently. Everyone in the Nine Nether Troop also watched with a dim expression, their faces pale.

Only Nine Nether was calm.

The blood sea filled the sky. All of a sudden, there seemed to be a limitless amount of light that radiated through the blood sea. Where the light passed, the blood sea was evaporated instantaneously. In just a few breaths' time, the blood sea that once filled the place vanished totally.

Cao Feng's expression changed drastically, and he suddenly lifted his head.

The many powerful people around also felt something and stared at the sky in the distance with an astonished look. Then, their eyes narrowed.

In the sky, an enormous bright figure stood silently. Behind the bright figure, a scorching sun was floating and emitting a seemingly endless amount of light. The flame of brightness swept across, and all the spiritual energy in the world began to boil and burn.

A frightening spiritual energy pressure enveloped the place.

In the sky, the looks of the three kings, who had been watching the battle, also turned solemn at the moment. Surprise surged in their eyes.

Chapter 691: The Power of the Great Solar Undying Body

The dazzling flame of brightness came down from the sky like a torrent. Where the flame of brightness passed, the monstrous blood rays that filled the sky were destroyed completely, at an incredible speed, as if they were snow that had come into contact with lava.

In just a few breaths' time, the dark sky became extremely bright. In the distant sky, the huge giant walked over by stepping in the air. The scorching sun behind its head was remarkably spectacular. Everyone watched the scene, dumbstruck.

"That's... that's Mu Chen's sovereign celestial body?"

"What celestial body is this? With such fluctuations, this is definitely not an ordinary sovereign celestial body. But by the looks of it, it also does not seem to be one of the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies..."

"So weird..."

Throughout the place, many whispers could be heard. The voices were mixed with shock and uncertainty. Clearly, the mysterious sovereign celestial body had caused them to become quite puzzled. In the sky, the three kings also stared at the mysterious sovereign celestial body in surprise, their eyes sparkling.

"This sovereign celestial body does not seem to be in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies ranking," the Condor King said in surprise.

The Spiritual Pupil King frowned slightly, then said tonelessly, "Although the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies ranking is authoritative, the world is too vast and huge, and it contains many strong sovereign celestial bodies that are not in the ranking. Furthermore, some people are very talented and can condense

some special sovereign celestial bodies, due to good luck."

Hearing this, the Sleeping King also nodded and said in a light tone, "That's right. There are too many wonders in the world, and the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies do not represent everything. However, although the sovereign celestial body is powerful, it still depends on the strength of the user himself. If the difference between the grades of two people is too huge, even a very strong sovereign celestial body cannot make up for the gap."

He paused for a while, glancing at the two sovereign celestial bodies that were facing each other in the sky. He then smiled and added, "But from the looks of it, the mysterious sovereign celestial body is enough to decide the outcome."

Even though Mu Chen was only a grade one sovereign, his combat force was no weaker than that of Cao Feng, who was a grade two sovereign. At the moment, both of them had summoned their sovereign celestial bodies. As a discerning observer, the Sleeping King could naturally tell that Mu Chen had an absolute advantage.

Hearing that, the Condor King also smiled, while the Spiritual Pupil King frowned, but did not say much. He was not very interested in the battle, because it was between two people of such low grades. Although Cao Feng was under Lord Blood Hawk, if he was considered to be so useless, he would have no more value, and could thus be abandoned.

...

In the sky, Cao Feng stared in horror at the mysterious giant, who was walking over in mid-air. He felt as if his heart was rolling in mountains of wild waves, because he could feel the pressure that penetrated across the space. The pressure was sufficient for him to know that the sovereign celestial body cultivated by Mu Chen was certainly stronger than his Blood Shadow Celestial Body.

"How can it be..."

Cao Feng roared in his mind. He naturally knew how precious such a strong sovereign celestial body was. Even though he had risked his life for the Blood Hawk Palace over these years, he had only managed to obtain the cultivation method for the Blood Shadow Celestial Body. However, the sovereign celestial body cultivated by Mu Chen was actually stronger than his Blood Shadow Celestial Body!

"It must be Nine Nether who gave it to him!" A flame of envy gushed out from Cao Feng's heart. His feelings towards Nine Nether were extremely complicated, as he felt both admiration and inferiority.

In the first place, he betrayed the Nine Nether Palace, partially because he knew that he did not deserve to be with Nine Nether at all. Therefore, he wanted to work hard. Precisely because of this, he could not control his rage and killing intent, when he discovered that Nine Nether had actually found another person to replace him in the Nine Nether Palace. He wanted to prove to Nine Nether that he was definitely irreplaceable.

"You think that you can win over me, just with this sovereign celestial body? Idiotic nonsense!" Killing intent surged in Cao Feng's eyes, rising like the tides. Then he roared suddenly, his hands quickly forming a seal.

Bang!

The appalling blood rays swept out wildly again. Giant columns of blood-red light burst out from the Blood Shadow Celestial Body suddenly, as viscous as blood.

"Sword of the Blood Shadow, spirit-slayer!"

All the blood-like viscous columns of light merged together wildly, then actually turned into a huge blood sword, which measured about a thousand feet large. On the sword, blood flowed down in streams.

Vroom!

The huge blood sword seemed to be distorted. It was like a shadow that was emitting a peculiar, ghastly fluctuation. In the next instant, the blood sword actually disappeared into thin air.

In the distant sky, the space behind the Great Solar Undying Body, which Mu Chen had turned into, suddenly cracked open. A blood ray flew out like a shadow, and without bringing about any fluctuation, it quietly struck down at the head of the Great Solar Undying Body.

Buzz!

However, just as the shadow-like blood sword was about to land its strike, a huge hand, which seemed to be burning with great solar flames, moved through the air to grab the blood sword.

Sizzle.

The huge hand grabbed the blood sword and clenched forcefully, causing the blood sword to shatter instantly. Blood burst out, then immediately evaporated into nothingness.

Wow.

Throughout the place, many people exclaimed in surprise. No one had expected that such a weird attack from Cao Feng would actually be blocked by Mu Chen so easily.

"Impossible!"

Cao Feng roared uncontrollably. His blood sword was condensed from the blood of many powerful people and spiritual beasts. Its hardness was no weaker than ordinary divine artifacts, but it was crushed into pieces by a single hand from Mu Chen's sovereign celestial body.

Flames of brightness surged in the eyes of the Great Solar Undying Body that Mu Chen had turned into, appearing emotionless. He stared at Cao Feng, as if he was looking at an ant

from above.

After truly activating the Great Solar Undying Body, he could feel the wildly skyrocketing power in his body. It was far greater than the power of Cao Feng at the moment. After all, the Great Solar Undying Body was one of the fundamental celestial bodies needed to cultivate the Primordial Immortal Body. Its powers were far beyond the expectations of most people.

Bang!

Mu Chen's look was emotionless. He clenched his giant fist and punched out. Brightness bloomed, and a sun-like fist print whizzed overhead. Flashing, it penetrated across space, then appeared in front of Cao Feng, striking down forcefully.

Against this kind of fierce attack, Cao Feng only managed to cross his arms before him to guard himself. Then, he felt a terrifying power burst out on his arms.

Dong!

A low roar spread across the sky. The huge Blood Shadow Celestial Body actually trembled, forced to take a step backwards. Every time he landed, he would leave a deep footprint on the ground below.

Bang!

The Blood Shadow Celestial Body stomped his foot suddenly. The ground cracked open, and only then did he stabilize his body. Meanwhile, Cao Feng's eyes were already completely filled with savage rage. The fact that he kept retreating had caused the killing intent in his mind to reach its maximum.

"I must kill him!"

Cao Feng bellowed in his heart, as he could not tolerate being defeated by Mu Chen. Over these years, he was even willing to stoop to betrayal, if it meant gaining greater power. If he was to fail here, all the hard work from these years would have been

worthless. Therefore, he must kill Mu Chen!

Cao Feng's eyes were blood-red. He raised his arms high, and a scarlet spiritual energy gushed out from his palms like the tides. This time, there was actually real blood gathering in the spiritual energy. It was the blood from Cao Feng's body.

Splash.

The viscous sound of water could be heard. A blood-red ball, about a thousand feet large, converged between the hands of the Blood Shadow Celestial Body quickly. The surface of the blood ball wriggled continuously. Many blood thorns extended out, then retracted back again.

An extremely violent and frightening fluctuation spread across the sky silently...

On the Daluo Golden Platform, Xu Qing, Zhou Yue and the rest, whose faces had already been filled with solemnity, saw the blood ball between Cao Feng's palms, and their expressions changed uncontrollably.

"This person is mad!"

They cursed in spite of themselves. They could naturally sense that Cao Feng had actually drawn out all of the blood in his body. Obviously, he had a real intention to kill, and wanted to eliminate Mu Chen completely!

However, he would have to pay a heavy price for this. Even if he won, he would definitely need more than half a year to recover gradually.

At the Nine Nether Palace zone, Tang Bing and Tang Rou both clenched their fists, as nervousness could be seen on their faces. Even Nine Nether also frowned, her face filled with coldness. Clearly, she had underestimated the extent to which Cao Feng wanted to kill Mu Chen.

She straightened her body slightly, ready to move out. Obviously,

once Mu Chen was in danger, she would save him.

"Demonic Blood Ball!"

Cao Feng's furious roar spread in the sky. Monstrous blood rays burst out, as the enormous blood ball instantly turned into a beam of blood-red light, striking towards Mu Chen, quick as a bolt of lightning.

Where the blood ball passed, all space was cracked apart, forming many fissures. The ground below was also torn brutally, resulting in an abyss-like fracture.

Mu Chen stared at the Demonic Blood Ball, which was flying towards him at an astonishing speed. Facing such a horrifying attack, he still did not dodge at all. His fist simply clenched slowly.

"I'll show you the true power of the Great Solar Undying Body."

Mu Chen muttered in his heart. Just then, his look suddenly became exceptionally penetrating, as an endless amount of light erupted from the center of his palm. There, it was as if a blazing sun was partially visible.

"Great Solar Palm!"

A deep voice sounded off suddenly in Mu Chen's heart. The huge hand that seemed to contain a sun slapped out abruptly. It directly penetrated across space, before it collided fearlessly with the ball that contained all of the blood from Cao Feng.

Bang!

The two hit, brightness enveloping the place. Everyone widened their eyes at that moment.

Both had risked their lives in the fight. So, who exactly was stronger?

Chapter 692: Easy Victory

Bang!

A terrifying collision suddenly burst out in the sky. The endless brightness and the scarlet-colored light each occupied half of the sky. The two fierce spiritual energies charged at each other wildly in an attempt to eliminate the other.

At the place of impact, the space kept cracking apart to form many fissures. Such a collision caused everyone to watch with a solemn look. Even the expressions of some of the powerful leaders from the other forces under the Daluo Territory changed.

Everyone gazed at the point of collision. They all knew that the collision should be enough to conclude the battle.

At the Nine Nether Palace zone, Tang Bing and Tang Rou widened their charming eyes in anxiousness. They also clenched their fists so hard that their hands turned somewhat pale. Mu Chen had already reached this point and was just one step away from victory. If he were to fail at this point, it would be extremely unfortunate.

Tang Rou kept praying quietly. Tang Bing also bit her lips gently and stared at the battle without blinking.

Under the countless stares, the terrifying collision still seemed to be in a stalemate in the sky. Seeing this, Cao Feng's face darkened.

He had already gone all out and actually still could not defeat Mu Chen easily.

"This b*st*rd!"

Cao Feng's eyes reddened. He was like a gambler who had lost everything. Staring at Mu Chen with a vicious look, he stomped his foot hard again, and all the spiritual energy in his body poured out completely, along with his remaining blood.

If one could see his body, which was hidden in the Sovereign Celestial Body at the moment, one would realize that Cao Feng looked absolutely horrible like a dry corpse.

Bang!

After Cao Feng risked his life for such a counterattack, the blood-red light strengthened instantly. For a moment, it actually seemed to suppress the endless brightness.

Exclamations filled the sky.

Behind the endless brightness, the Great Solar Undying Body that Mu Chen had turned into looked at Cao Feng's desperate attack emotionlessly. Then, his hands started to form a seal.

Bang!

In the bright palm print, it was as if a sun were expanding. Waves of dazzling light spread out, and the eye-catching flames of brightness soared up from the bright palm print.

"Great Solar Demon-Destroyer!"

Mu Chen's low voice sounded off in the sky. The palm print, which contained the giant sun, whizzed down and the flames of brightness spread. The monstrous blood rays that were originally increasing were now completely incinerated by the great solar flames in an instant.

The great solar palm print dropped down without obstruction. In the end, the palm directly grabbed the blood ball, which contained the blood from Cao Feng, and clenched hard!

Crack!

A cracking sound was heard, and the blood ball was crushed by Mu Chen's palm. Before its violent power could burst out, the flames of brightness swept out and burned it completely.

In the sky, the blood rays were immediately eliminated.

Horror gushed out from Cao Feng's eyes. The rapidly dimming

Blood Shadow Celestial Body turned around and dashed off. He knew that he could no longer defeat Mu Chen.

Mu Chen stared emotionlessly at Cao Feng, who had turned to run away. Waving his sleeves, the bright palm print permeated through space and landed on the Blood Shadow Celestial Body.

Dong!

A frightening sound was heard. The Blood Shadow Celestial Body that Cao Feng had turned into actually exploded and turned into viscous blood that rained down from the sky, instantly turning the ground blood-red.

As the bloody rain fell, a somewhat dim blood ray crazily rushed out.

Coldness flashed in Mu Chen's eyes. The bright palm slapped out fiercely and grabbed towards the dim blood ray. Clearly, he did not plan to let Cao Feng off that easily.

The blood ray Cao Feng had turned into tried to escape, but his speed was far slower than Mu Chen's due to his severe injury. Thus, in the blink of an eye, the bright palm appeared in the sky above him and slapped down mercilessly.

Intense horror immediately surged in Cao Feng's eyes.

Everyone watched the scene, and their hearts trembled slightly. The new Commander from the Nine Nether Palace was young but rather cruel. From the look of it, he was obviously going to beat a drowning dog.

However, just as Mu Chen's bright palm was about to hit Cao Feng, Lord Blood Hawk, who had been watching the battle at the Blood Hawk Palace zone and therefore had a gloomy face, suddenly roared in anger.

"Stop!"

Hearing his shout, Mu Chen totally ignored him. Instead, his

attack became quicker and more violent.

"How dare you!"

Lord Blood Hawk's face finally turned completely dark. Although Cao Feng caused him to be extremely disappointed, he was a member of the Blood Hawk Palace, after all. If he was killed by Mu Chen before Lord Blood Hawk, that would be equivalent to slapping the faces of everyone in the Blood Hawk Palace. This was something that he definitely could not tolerate. In particular, when he saw that Mu Chen actually completely ignored his warning, he became noticeably furious.

"Supercilious kid! Let me teach you what humility is!"

Lord Blood Hawk smacked the armrest with his palm, and the whole throne turned into powder. Moving his body, he appeared in the sky directly. He pointed into the air, and a blood-red feather emerged from thin air. It passed through space and flew towards Mu Chen's Sovereign Celestial Body like a bolt of lightning.

Vroom!

The blood-red feather penetrated through space and instantly caused Mu Chen to feel coldness in his heart. The feather did not look powerful, but the terrifying spiritual energy fluctuation that it contained far exceeded his.

Even though Mu Chen had the Great Solar Undying Body, he could not fight against a Grade Five Sovereign.

Mu Chen's look sparkled slightly. Then, he did an astonishing act again. He actually ignored Lord Blood Hawk's attempt to save Cao Feng by attacking him. The bright palm still slapped forcefully towards Cao Feng.

Seeing that, coldness appeared in Lord Blood Hawk's eyes. Since this is the case, you will die with Cao Feng.

Buzz!

The blood feather permeated through space and appeared directly behind Mu Chen. However, at the instant when it was going to hit, a feather burning with a purple flame also tore through space and appeared suddenly, colliding with it.

Pop!

The two feathers collided but there were no violent spiritual energy explosions. They just corroded each other and quickly dimmed, eventually turning into nothingness.

"It's not your Blood Hawk Palace's turn to teach someone from my Nine Nether Palace!"

As the two attacks annihilated each other, a cold, clear voice also spread in the sky. Everyone turned their heads and looked over to see Nine Nether standing alone in front of her throne. Her icy appearance, swaying hair, and the purple flames that surrounded her all made her look stunningly beautiful and dignified.

Lord Blood Hawk stood in midair and stared at Nine Nether with a freezing look. He was so angry that he smiled instead and said, "What high-sounding sentiments. After disappearing for a few years, your temper has changed for the worse."

"If you are not willing to let this go, we can fight. I have disliked you for a very long time as well. If I can defeat you, I can take this opportunity to annex your Blood Hawk Palace into my Nine Nether Palace," Nine Nether said as the corners of her lips curled up slightly.

"Annex my Blood Hawk Palace? Alright, show me what you've got. I'll see how much you have to actually dare to say such things!" Lord Blood Hawk gave an angry laugh.

"Ah!"

However, just as Lord Blood Hawk finished speaking, a miserable shriek suddenly sounded off. Mu Chen's palm had already smacked hard onto Cao Feng's body without hesitation. Cao Feng's chest

caved in directly as he spat volumes of blood and fell vertically like a bird whose wings had been broken.

Dash, dash!

As he was falling, two gusts of strong wind passed by. Then, Cao Feng's arms were cut off. He immediately gave out a sharp, miserable scream again.

Thud!

Cao Feng landed hard on the ground which sank underneath him. Lying on the ground, blood flowed out from his body, and his breath was weak. Nobody knew if he was still alive.

Hiss.

Everyone gasped quietly and stared at Mu Chen who was in the sky with a frightening look. The cruelty that Mu Chen had displayed caused them to feel somewhat scared even though they had experienced hundreds of battles.

This man was young but his means were high-handed.

In the sky, the Great Solar Undying Body that Mu Chen had turned into also dissipated. His own body appeared, and he stared coldly at Cao Feng. He said tonelessly, "This is what you owe the Nine Nether Palace. In the future, you will not have any relations with the Nine Nether Palace."

Spit.

Cao Feng, who was already extremely weak, spat out a mouthful of blood after hearing this. His eyes dulled, and he finally lost consciousness.

The entire place fell into silence.

Just then, deafening cheers suddenly spread from the Nine Nether Palace zone. Everyone from the Nine Nether Troop looked excited, and their eyes were completely red. Over these years, Cao Feng's betrayal had been a pain in their hearts. In the Daluo

Territory, many people mocked them because of it, but they could only tolerate it. However, at the moment the issue had been completely resolved because of the arrival of their new Commander, Mu Chen.

They finally had a heartfelt admiration towards Mu Chen. The new Commander that master Nine Nether had brought back was indeed far stronger and more convincing than Cao Feng.

"Sister, Mu Chen won!" Tang Rou grabbed Tang Bing's arm and cheered joyfully.

A smile could also be seen on Tang Bing's mouth, and joy filled her pretty eyes. She stared at the slender young man in the sky, and her lips curled up slightly. Luckily, you did not disappoint me. Otherwise, I would not let you off easily.

While the Nine Nether Palace was cheering loudly in the sky, however, Lord Blood Hawk's face was so dark, it seemed to be raining. He stared at Mu Chen with a frightening look and said, "Such a cruel kid!"

A horrific killing intent gushed out from his body and towards Mu Chen like a mountain. Clearly, he really wanted to kill Mu Chen.

Feeling the overwhelming killing intent that was rushing over, Mu Chen's expression also changed slightly. A Grade Five Sovereign was indeed very powerful.

Vroom.

As the killing intent gushed over, a fragrant wind also came. Nine Nether's slim body appeared before Mu Chen. As her hair swayed, she helped Mu Chen to completely block the killing intent.

Nine Nether's face was cold. Clenching her fist gently, a purple flame surged in her palm like a snake. She slowly lifted her long, narrow eyes and stared at Lord Blood Hawk with a freezing look. An icy voice spread in the sky.

"If you are still unwilling to give up, let me fight you."

Chapter 693: To the Summit

In the area, everyone lifted their heads and stared at the sky. There, a rich murderous aura was spreading. Under the influence of the murderous aura, the temperature in the sky also dropped significantly. That was the murderous aura from the two lords.

In the sky, Nine Nether and Lord Blood Hawk stood opposite each other, and the looks from both were particularly freezing. The resentment between them had been long-standing, as both disliked the other. If they were not both lords in the Daluo Territory, they would probably not restrain themselves, and would have fought each other a long time ago. However, by the looks of it now, the two both seemed to be unable to tolerate the killing intents in their hearts any longer.

"I have been wanting to know how strong the Nine Netherbird clan is all along. Today, I really want to see it for myself," Lord Blood Hawk said gloomily. In his scarlet pupils, some fierceness appeared.

As he spoke, a blood-red storm swept out around him. The storm was filled with violent and vast spiritual energy fluctuations, which raged in the sky like blades.

"Then you can come and try," Nine Nether also replied with a sneer. The purple flames that were circling her expanded suddenly. Her hair danced, as the purple flames swept out and a terrifying temperature spread.

Seeing the appearances of the two, everyone's expressions changed uncontrollably. If Nine Nether and Lord Blood Hawk really started to fight, the influence would be far greater than the battles between the commanders.

In the Daluo Territory, commanders still could not be considered as the cornerstones. However, people as strong as Lord Blood Hawk and Nine Nether were really considered as the backbones of

the territory.

"Enough!"

Precisely because of this, when the two were standing against each other, a roar sounded off and a wind-like fluctuation swept across the place. Where the fluctuation passed, the extremely violent spiritual energy fluctuation around Nine Nether and Lord Blood Hawk was actually suppressed back into the bodies of the two.

Everyone looked toward the source of the voice. The Condor King was staring at the two, frowning, as he said in a deep tone, "Is it that you have forgotten the rules of the Daluo Territory?"

In the Daluo Territory, lords could not be directly involved in the conflicts between the different forces. They could only let their subordinates fight. In this way, competition could be maintained, while the greatest number of lords could also be kept intact and stable.

Seeing that the Condor King had acted, Lord Blood Hawk knew that he would no longer be able to deal with Nine Nether on that day. He glanced at Cao Feng, who had become handicapped, but could not let it go. Immediately, he stared at Mu Chen with a gloomy look and said, "Cao feng had already been defeated, but Mu Chen was still so cruel. I think we should take his eligibility away."

Hearing this, Mu Chen's look also turned cold.

"Don't you even think about it!" Nine Nether sneered and said. "Lord Blood Hawk, are you too old, that you can't think properly? In this kind of battle, as long as no one admits defeat, the battle will continue. Even if Cao Feng is killed, instead of just being severely injured, he deserves it. There is no one else to blame!"

"You want my Blood Hawk Palace to tolerate this, and let this go? Impossible!" Lord Blood Hawk was unwilling to compromise at all, as he stood in sharp opposition.

Seeing the two arguing, the Condor King also frowned. At the side, the Spiritual Pupil King smiled briefly and said, "In my opinion, we should swap Mu Chen down for the moment to pacify Lord Blood Hawk's anger. After the event, we will find another chance to compensate him."

Mu Chen's expression changed slightly. His goal was the Daluo Golden Pool. At the moment, he had made it here after many challenges, and so he would not give up easily. Furthermore, the so-called compensation in the future did not sound convincing, and he did not believe in that.

However, although Mu Chen was somewhat angry, he did not say anything recklessly. At the moment, his status in the Daluo Territory was too low. He did not want to cause any unnecessary trouble for Nine Nether, just so that he could look cool for a moment.

The Condor King frowned and said, "If we do this, who will dare to participate in the Daluo Golden Pool contest in the future?"

"Ha, do you think there are too few people, who want to enter the Daluo Golden Pool?" the Spiritual Pupil King smiled and said.

Hearing the dispute between the two, the Sleeping King, who had always been reticent, suddenly smiled and said, "Old rules, we shall still continue them all."

Both the Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King were stunned for a moment. After all, over these years, the Sleeping King would very rarely participate in their disputes. It was rather uncommon for him to say something actively like this. Moreover, the words from the Sleeping Kings were clearly trying to help Mu Chen.

Some darkness flashed across the depth of the eyes of the Spiritual Pupil King. However, although he was also one of the three kings, he knew that the Sleeping King was unfathomable. In addition, and also most importantly, the Sleeping King had always been the person that the Dominator trusted the most.

Hence, since the Sleeping King had spoken, he could not oppose. Immediately, he smiled and said, "Since Brother Meng has said so, we will continue, according to the rules."

Lord Blood Hawk's face darkened, but he did not dare say anything. He could just give a gloomy humph towards Mu Chen. Then, waving his sleeves, he turned around and descended from the sky.

Nine Nether also looked at the Sleeping King with some surprise, after which, she nodded at him with some gratitude. Then, she looked at Mu Chen and said, "Your performance is not bad. Later, whatever opportunities you can get in the Daluo Golden Pool all depends on yourself."

Mu Chen smiled and nodded. Seeing this, Nine Nether did not add anything and turned around to descend.

Mu Chen stared at Nine Nether, who had turned around and left. Then, he turned his head and folded his hands at the Condor King and the Sleeping King respectfully. Finally, he moved and landed directly towards the Daluo Golden Platform.

On the Daluo Golden Platform, a few people stared firmly at Mu Chen, who was now landing. Xu Qing and Zhou Yue's looks were filled with surprise. Clearly, the powers that Mu Chen had displayed earlier caused them to be somewhat shocked. Although they were stronger than Cao Feng, if the latter was to risk his life to fight, it would cause them a lot of trouble.

However, Mu Chen could endure the attack. Just this alone was sufficient reason for Xu Qing and the rest to take Mu Chen as someone who was as strong as them. When Mu Chen landed on the Daluo Golden Platform, a wild spiritual energy fluctuation also burst out in the distance. Just then, a person flew backwards, looking discomposed. His feet rubbed against the ground as he backed away hurriedly.

Mu Chen appeared behind the figure. He put his hands on the

shoulders of the person and helped him to take the force away. The person, who was Fang Lei, turned his head around.

Seeing Mu Chen, he smiled bitterly, his face pale. When Mu Chen was battling fiercely with Cao Feng previously, he was also fighting with Wu Tian, but clearly, he had lost in the end.

Before them, some light condensed, and Wu Tian also appeared. He stared at Mu Chen with a somewhat gloomy look, but this time, some fear could also be seen in the depths of his eyes.

Although Wu Tian was fighting with Fang Lei just now, he was also obviously paying attention to the battle of Cao Feng. The amazing combat force, which Mu Chen had displayed, was sufficient to cause him to be alarmed.

Wu Tian was not stupid. Otherwise, he would not have become a commander, who was so valued by Lord Blood Hawk. Therefore, at the moment, he had taken back all the underestimations that he had towards Mu Chen, as now, he really viewed Mu Chen as one who could compete with him.

"I lost. Brother Mu Chen, I hope that you can gain something in the Daluo Golden Pool." Fang Lei was quite straightforward. He smiled towards Mu Chen, then left the Daluo Golden Platform.

Although he disliked Wu Tian, he understood that he had lost because he was the weaker of the pair. Thus, he did not recklessly ask Mu Chen to help.

Mu Chen watched him leave. Then, he walked back calmly to where he had stood. Even though he also disliked Wu Tian, he knew that now was not a good time to continue fighting.

Previously, he had already spent much of his spiritual energy during the battle with Cao Feng. At the moment, he was not in his best condition, so he did not need to take the risk. After all, the four quotas had already appeared.

Wu Tian similarly did not say anything to mock Mu Chen again,

as he walked back with a gloomy look. Originally, he wanted to take this opportunity to challenge Zhou Yue, so that his ranking would become higher. However, he did not expect Mu Chen to emerge all of the sudden. Therefore, he did not dare fight again, in case Mu Chen would benefit at the end of their battles.

The four people stood quietly at the four corners of the Daluo Golden Platform. All of them remained silent and did not interfere with each other. Everyone looked at the four figures on the Daluo Golden Platform, feeling somewhat emotional. They knew that these four were the four great commanders in the Daluo Territory. Apart from Mu Chen, who was a new dark horse, the other three were all previous title holders.

As the atmosphere on the Daluo Golden Platform quietened, in the sky, the three kings glanced at each other. Then, the Condor King's old and low voice spread in the sky.

"The final four quotas for the Daluo Golden Pool have emerged. Now, take your golden talisman."

"Asura Palace, Xu Qing!"

Hearing the roar of the Condor King, Xu Qing stepped forward calmly. Then, a golden beam fell from the sky and turned into a golden talisman, landing in the hands of Xu Qing.

"Cracking Mountain Palace, Zhou Yue!"

"Blood Hawk Palace, Wu Tian!"

The two also stepped forward. As they did so, golden light covered them, and golden talismans fell down.

The Condor King looked at Mu Chen who was the last one. His old face seemed to smile, as he said, "Nine Nether Palace, Mu Chen."

Mu Chen walked forward. A golden beam converged, and eventually, also turned into a golden talisman in his palm. There seemed to be a strange fluctuation being emitted from the golden

talisman, and the source of the fluctuation seemed to be the summit. This made sense, as that was where the Daluo Golden Pool was.

"From now on, these four people will be the new four great commanders of the Daluo Territory!"

When the Condor King finished speaking, an overwhelming amount of cheers burst out from the crowd. In any case, the four people before them were indeed considered as the top among the young generation in the Daluo Territory. Their powers had earned everyone's recognition.

Hearing the cheers, the Condor King also smiled gently. Then, he looked at the very top of the peak of the Golden Pool. There, waves of golden light were still pouring down continuously, but this time, all the golden light torrents had bypassed the four people, who were now holding the golden talismans.

"Now, climb to the summit."

As the Condor King waved his hand, the looks from the four people were instantly filled with anticipation. Then, they stomped their feet and ascended quickly into the air. Under the countless envious stares, they dashed directly past the golden light torrents and turned into rays of light, charging towards the magnificent peak of the Golden Pool!

The Daluo Golden Pool was finally open for them!

Chapter 694: Entering the Daluo Golden Pool

At the summit of the Golden Pool.

Golden light filled the place. When one stared at it, it was as if even one's eyes were colored gold. Golden torrents that seemed to be blotting out the sky poured out, emitting an extremely terrifying pressure.

Mu Chen dropped down from the summit. The place where he landed felt exceptionally hard, as if he were stepping on diamond. He looked ahead with a surprised expression. At the central region, the brilliant golden light seemed to be so strong that it even caused his eyes to hurt.

The golden torrents that filled the entire peak of the Golden Pool were spreading out from there.

As the golden torrents rushed past, they bypassed Mu Chen's body. His toes pushed against the ground, and his body flew out for 10,000 feet. Next, a remarkably extensive golden pool appeared before him.

It was as if the golden pool were filled with golden liquid, and the viscous liquid was sloshing around. Occasionally, a golden bubble would slowly rise and then explode. When it burst apart, a golden torrent would immediately sweep out.

Is this the Daluo Golden Pool?

Mu Chen stared at the golden pool, somewhat astonished. Although the pool looked rather calm, for some reason Mu Chen felt an intense danger, as if the golden pool were a peerless beast.

Since the Daluo Golden Pool had the power to strengthen the Sovereign Celestial Body, it was definitely extraordinary.

Vroom.

The sound of objects whizzing through the air could be heard. Xu Qing, Zhou Yue, and Wu Tian also landed around the area, staring with much anticipation at the pool emitting golden light.

The Sovereign Celestial Body was a very important means for a sovereign master. The Daluo Golden Pool before them could strengthen the Sovereign Celestial Body and make it stronger and more refined. This was undoubtedly strikingly attractive to people like them who had just entered the Sovereign-level.

When the four people, including Mu Chen, appeared beside the Daluo Golden Pool, the virile and low voice of the Condor King spread from the sky like thunder. "The Daluo Golden Pool has already opened. You can enter it individually. In the Daluo Golden Pool, the water has millions of pounds of pressure. The lower you go, the more pressure you will experience, so you cannot rush down recklessly. Otherwise, you will cause yourself suffering.

"As for whether you can cultivate the legendary Daluo Golden Body successfully, it all depends on your own fortune. Remember not to force it."

Hearing so, all four nodded in acknowledgement.

"Haha, you three, let's see who will be luckier this time." Xu Qing smiled gently at the rest. Then, without further hesitation, his toes kicked off the ground, and his body turned into a streamer which flew into the Daluo Golden Pool.

His body charged in, but did not actually cause any waves to be formed on the surface of the pool. It seemed as if he had sunk into a bottomless mire, and it looked somewhat frightening.

Zhou Yue and Wu Tian also followed immediately without any hesitation.

Seeing that the three had vanished into the Daluo Golden Pool, Mu Chen also took a deep breath, and the spiritual energy in his body quietly surged. He turned into a beam of light and dashed

into the Daluo Golden Pool directly.

Plop.

When he dashed into the Daluo Golden Pool, a soft plop sounded off near his ears. Then, golden color filled his eyes. Immediately, a terrifying power gushed towards him from all directions as if it were trying to crush him into pieces.

Rumble!

On the surface of Mu Chen's body, lightning bloomed out instantly, and his whole body was electrified. Obviously, he had activated the Thunder God Physique to its extreme. Then, his feet kicked in the liquid, and his body swam swiftly down the Daluo Golden Pool like a fish.

In the Daluo Golden Pool, it was clear that the deeper he went, the more benefits he would receive. Of course, the pressure below was also much stronger. If a person did not have the sufficient abilities, going down recklessly would be like committing suicide.

Splash.

Mu Chen's body swam across the viscous golden liquid rapidly and brought about the soft sound of water. His body continued to descend.

Golden light filled the surroundings. In the Daluo Golden Pool, it was as if even the senses were suppressed to their minimum range. Outside the pool, Mu Chen could easily sense objects within over 100,000 feet. However, in this place, it was not even 100 feet.

Rumble.

Lightning circled around the surface of Mu Chen's body, but his diving speed was gradually becoming slower because the pressure in the surroundings was increasing. Even though he had activated the Thunder God Physique to its extreme, he still felt waves of pain on his skin.

While the pressure was gushing towards Mu Chen, he noticed that thin rays of golden light were also rushing continuously into his body. That was a very special power: where the golden light passed, Mu Chen could feel his muscles, bones, and even blood gradually becoming hotter, as if they were being strengthened in a stove.

Such a magical and formidable Daluo Golden Pool, Mu Chen praised in his heart. Relying on the Thunder God Physique alone, he could actually dive to only about 2,000 feet. The pressure there was really terrifying.

I can summon my Sovereign Celestial Body.

Mu Chen's hands formed a seal, and a spiritual energy storm immediately burst out from his body. The golden liquid around him was pushed aside. A huge figure appeared outside Mu Chen and shrouded him.

As the Great Solar Undying Body appeared, the pressure enveloping Mu Chen was instantly gone. He smiled and moving his mind, the Great Solar Undying Body continued to dive quickly again.

After summoning the Great Solar Undying Body, Mu Chen's diving speed increased right away. As he dove deeper, he could feel the golden energy that was gushing towards him also became richer.

When the golden energy came into contact with his Sovereign Celestial Body, Mu Chen immediately discovered in surprise that the Sovereign Celestial Body actually produced a buzzing, trembling sound. It looked like a starving person who saw a lot of food and started to wildly absorb the golden energy at a greedy pace.

As the Sovereign Celestial Body crazily devoured the energy, traces of golden light began to drift on the surface of the giant Sovereign Celestial Body.

Mu Chen still continued to dive.

The dive finally slowly stopped when Mu Chen reached about 8,000 feet deep because even with the power of the Great Solar Undying Body, he still vaguely felt some pressure there.

Mu Chen scanned around, and golden light still flooded his view. Moving his mind, the Great Solar Undying Body sat cross-legged. The golden energy there was already extremely rich and was sufficient for his cultivation.

He remembered the Condor King's earlier reminder. The Daluo Golden Pool was clearly extraordinary, and it would probably be unwise to dive deeper just for the sake of it.

I'll cultivate here.

The giant hands of the Great Solar Undying Body slowly formed a seal. When he breathed in and out, it was as if the sound of thunder could be heard. As Mu Chen entered the cultivation state, the Sun of Brightness behind the head of the Great Solar Undying Body also started to quietly turn.

Boom!

When the sun started turning, the golden water in the area seemed to begin boiling. Golden light turned into torrents and converged towards him continuously. Eventually, the torrents were refined by the great solar flames and absorbed by the Great Solar Undying Body directly.

The water in the Daluo Golden Pool was as heavy as mountains. Although the energy contained in it was magical, it was not easy to separate the energy out. Many people who had entered the pool could only refine the liquid slowly using their own spiritual energy. On the other hand, Mu Chen was absorbing the energy like a whale, and it was so fast that if people were to see it, they would probably have been dumbstruck.

With such speed, the surface of Mu Chen's huge Sovereign

Celestial Body also seemed to be covered in a thin layer of golden light. On its body, the drifting traces of golden light began to expand slowly as well.

...

Outside the peak of the Golden Pool, everyone raised their heads to look at the summit which was filled with golden light. Intense envy could be seen in the eyes of many. After all, the power of the Daluo Golden Pool was very attractive to most sovereigns.

In the sky, the three kings stood in midair. Four golden talismans floated before them. These four golden talismans were connected to the ones held by Mu Chen and the rest, and could sense each other.

All four golden talismans were emitting golden light, and the golden light was gradually growing brighter.

The three kings all stared at the four golden talismans. Generally speaking, the deeper a person dove in the Daluo Golden Pool and the stronger the power he had absorbed from the Golden Pool, the brighter the golden light given off by his talisman would be. Obviously, if he were to go deeper, he would obtain more benefits.

"Seems that the four great commanders this time are stronger than the previous batches. Their locations now should be between 5,000 to 10,000 feet deep." Looking at the light from the four golden talismans, the Condor King smiled uncontrollably.

The Sleeping King also opened his eyes slightly, after which he closed them again and muttered, "Seems that no one could obtain the Golden Body again."

The Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King both smiled resignedly. It was too demanding. From their estimation over the years, if a person wanted to cultivate the Daluo Golden Body in the Daluo Golden Pool, he had to dive to at least 20,000 feet deep. Only with the help of the pressure there and the extremely pure power

of the Golden Pool could he cultivate the Daluo Golden Body.

Unfortunately, over the years there had been very few commanders who could dive to that kind of depth.

"Let's wait and see. It's not over yet, after all," the Condor King said.

The Sleeping King nodded but was non-committal.

The Spiritual Pupil King looked at the Sleeping King suddenly and asked, "Brother Meng, may I ask if there is any news about the Dominator recently? The Great Hunt is approaching..."

The Sleeping King smiled and shook his head, after which he replied, "Brother Spiritual Pupil, don't worry. When it's time, the Dominator will appear naturally."

Hearing so, the Spiritual Pupil King could only smile.

The three kings fell into silence. They stared at the four golden talismans before them, but clearly they were somewhat downhearted. It seemed that nothing surprising would happen.

Among the four great commanders in this batch, is there nobody who can reach that level?

Chapter 695: Twenty Thousand Feet

Splash.

In the depths of the Daluo Golden Pool, a giant sat cross-legged quietly. Around him, the pool water that was as viscous as a golden slurry was flowing slowly. Eventually, it began gushing into the figure steadily.

Behind the head of the giant, a huge sun was turning, emitting waves of flaming brightness, refining the golden slurry that was gushing over everything completely. Then, it was turned into beams of golden light that would eventually be absorbed by the giant.

As more and more golden slurry was refined, the slowly drifting golden rays on the body of the giant were also gradually becoming thicker. Faintly, the golden rays looked like small snakes that were climbing on the body of the giant.

Where the golden snakes swam past, a vague golden trace would be left behind, and a divine power would be given off, as if they were causing the sovereign celestial body to become more condensed. This sovereign celestial body was clearly Mu Chen's Great Solar Undying Body.

At the moment, Mu Chen was sitting cross-legged inside the Great Solar Undying Body. His originally closed eyes now opened slowly, and he looked at the sovereign celestial body that was enveloping him, eventually staring at the area where the golden snakes were swimming.

From what he sensed, the power that he had absorbed from the Golden Pool had turned into eight golden snakes. The eight golden snakes were circling around the sovereign celestial body and, whenever they started to swim, it would bring about a scorching feeling. The spiritual energy then would seem to be particularly brisk, or even boiling.

Mu Chen knew that, by the time he refined the eight golden snakes, his Great Solar Undying Body would become stronger, but... Mu Chen frowned slightly, thinking on this... The increase in power was below his expectation, as he was still far away from the so-called Daluo Golden Body...

"The power of the Golden Pool that I absorb here is far from sufficient."

Mu Chen seemed to still be pondering. Although the power of the Golden Pool contained at this depth was already very abundant, it was clearly impossible to cultivate the Daluo Golden Body at this place.

Mu Chen's eyes sparkled slightly. Then, he looked downwards to stare at the deeper parts of the Daluo Golden Pool, where it was still filled with brilliant golden color. It looked endless, and its depth was somewhat frightening.

After entering the Daluo Golden Pool, Mu Chen knew well how strong the pressure here was. If he did not rely on the Great Solar Undying Body, he would not be able to reach his current position, at least not just by relying upon his own power, which was grade one sovereign.

However, at the moment, even this position could not satisfy Mu Chen, because he knew that he entered the Daluo Golden Pool not just to simply strengthen his sovereign celestial body. He was more ambitious than others, because he needed power.

Mu Chen's eyes sparkled. Then, he took a deep breath, and his look gradually turned cold. He firmly believed that, in the world, he could not obtain any power without working hard. Since he wanted to get that kind of power, he had to pay the corresponding price.

If he was helpless, just because of the Daluo Golden Body at the moment, what could he do when he was faced with more dangerous challenges in the future? Could he keep retreating? In

that way of thinking, maybe he would never be able to fulfill the promise that he made to that girl.

Mu Chen, hesitant no more, moved his hands to form a seal abruptly, and the sovereign celestial body trembled, after which, it actually started to quickly descend towards the deeper parts of the Daluo Golden Pool again.

Splash.

The huge sovereign celestial body tore the viscous golden liquid apart brutally. A strong spiritual energy rippled out, guarding against the terrifying pressure that was gushing towards him, like the tides, from all directions.

One thousand feet... Two thousand feet...

In just about ten breaths' time, Mu Chen had already dove for about four thousand feet again. At the moment, he was about twelve thousand feet deep into the Daluo Golden Pool.

As Mu Chen dove continuously, he could also feel that the pressure gushing towards him was quickly multiplying. The pressure increased rapidly, like many mountains stacked together. However, facing such pressure, Mu Chen still showed no signs of hesitation, but continued to dive!

The spiritual light around the sovereign celestial body was already totally suppressed back into its body, because of the terrible pressure. The pressure was so strong that, even though Mu Chen was protected inside the sovereign celestial body, he still faintly felt some pain.

"It's fifteen thousand feet..."

Mu Chen gritted his teeth lightly and his skin was gradually turning red, but his black eyes showed no signs of retreat. Instead, they were filled with increasing passion and perseverance, because he could feel that, in the deeper parts of the Daluo Golden Pool, the power of the Golden Pool contained in the liquid was strikingly

rich. Hence, only in the deepest parts would it be possible to cultivate the Daluo Golden Body.

It's still not enough!

Mu Chen's eyes were slightly red. Again, he controlled the Great Solar Undying Body to continue diving. At such a depth, every time he went down for a hundred feet, the pressure would multiply wildly.

Even though Mu Chen had the Great Solar Undying Body, his diving speed still became slower and slower, as if he had sunk into the mud. This time, half an hour passed, but Mu Chen actually did not even dive for a thousand feet.

Furthermore, the horrible pressure brought about by the thousand feet of depth actually caused the Great Solar Undying Body to decrease significantly in size. Even the originally bright spiritual light became somewhat dim.

However, Mu Chen still did not give up. His black eyes stared at the deeper parts, and he ignored the drops of blood that were seeping out from his red skin.

The viscous golden pool water was torn apart forcefully and the sovereign celestial body continued its dive. Another one thousand feet... one thousand and five hundred feet... two thousand feet...

...

Outside the peak of the Golden Pool.

In the place, everyone stared at the four golden talismans, but the three kings all looked emotionless. Over the years, the Daluo Golden Pool had been opened many times, and they had seen such calm situations many times. Therefore, they would show much emotion.

After all, in their eyes, as long as a person did not cultivate the Daluo Golden Body in the Daluo Golden Pool, the other levels of achievements were all the same and did not differ much. It was, at

most, like the difference between a person, who had walked fifty steps, and another, who had walked a hundred.

Buzz.

While the three kings were looking casual, suddenly, one out of the four golden talisman grew brighter. Golden light spread out and actually outshone the light from the other three golden talismans.

Even though the light from the other three golden talismans was also becoming stronger, it was insignificant when compared to the speed at which the brightness of the fourth golden talisman was increasing.

Because of the scene, everyone was somewhat surprised, after which, some exclaims could be heard. Clearly, they knew what the brightness of the four golden talismans represented.

Judging from the brightness, there was obviously someone who was trying to break into the deeper parts of the Daluo Golden Pool. The golden light surged into the eyes of the three kings, whose looks also suddenly turned serious. Even the Sleeping King squinted and stared at the dazzling golden talisman.

"Someone is charging towards the deeper parts of the Daluo Golden Pool," the Condor King said in surprise.

"From this brightness, he should be close to reaching twenty thousand feet deep." The Spiritual Pupil king was also somewhat amused. He knew well the dynamics of the pressure that was present at twenty thousand feet deep into the Daluo Golden Pool.

There, even grade three sovereigns could not tolerate the pressure. At the moment, the four, who had entered the pool, were clearly not that strong.

"Who exactly is it?" Their faces were filled with surprise. Because of the interference from the Daluo Golden Pool, even with their powers, they could not detect the person, who bold enough to

actually dare to try reaching twenty thousand feet deep.

"Seems like this person is really ambitious." The Sleeping King finally smiled with some interest. From the looks of it, this person was definitely going for the Daluo Golden Body. Over many years, there were only a few people in the Daluo Territory who could reach such an extent.

"I just fear that he is too ambitious," the Spiritual Pupil King said, after being silent for a while.

The Condor King also frowned. While it was good to be ambitious, sometimes a person had to act according to his own abilities. The danger contained in the Daluo Golden Pool was sufficient to destroy any among the four. If the person was being too stubborn, it would probably cause him to be trapped inside.

"It has been a long time since such things last happened. Let's see if there will be anything surprising this time." The Sleeping King smiled gently and stared at the golden talisman that was becoming increasingly bright.

Below them, Tang Bing and Tang Rou also stared at the dazzling golden talisman nervously. Then, they whispered to Nine Nether, "Sister Nine Nether, that isn't from Mu Chen, right?"

Although Mu Chen was only a grade one sovereign, who, from the looks of it, could not have dived so deep, they still felt that Mu Chen was probably the one based on the girls' instinct.

Nine Nether stared at the golden talisman and a charming smile appeared on her icy face. Nodding gently, she replied, "It should be him." Her voice was soft but extremely confident.

Among the four, Xu Qing and the other two were strong, but not enough for them to go twenty thousand feet deep. On the other hand, Mu Chen had many hidden skills, and ways and means. Therefore, only he could do such an unexpected thing.

"Let me see what level you can reach this time..." Nine Nether's

rosy lips curled up slightly, as she muttered to herself.

Under countless stares, the light from the particular golden talisman became brighter and brighter. After about half an hour, it was so bright that it already seemed to be a golden sun.

The light completely outshone the other three golden talismans, causing everyone's look to be filled with some astonishment at the moment. The looks from the three kings also gradually turned from being originally unconcerned to being solemn and surprised.

Buzz!

A sudden buzzing spread from the golden talisman. Then, it was as if the golden talisman could no longer tolerate it, and actually burst out an endless amount of golden light that enveloped the region within a hundred thousand feet radius.

The bodies of the three kings trembled, and their pupils contracted uncontrollably. That person actually really dived to twenty thousand feet deep!

While everyone was astonished by the dazzling golden light, in the deepest part of the Daluo Golden Pool, a strange fluctuation also seemed to be emitting...

Chapter 696: Person at the Bottom of the Pool

Daluo Golden Pool, 20,000 feet deep.

Howl.

At such a depth in the Daluo Golden Pool, it was supposed to be extremely quiet. However, it was as if waves were violently rolling. The viscous golden pool water whizzed around wildly and seemed to have formed a huge golden whirlpool.

At the center of the whirlpool, there was actually a giant figure sitting cross-legged.

The giant was Mu Chen's Great Solar Undying Body. However, the Sovereign Celestial Body, which was originally thousands of feet in size, was now actually only hundreds of feet in size.

This was all caused by the terrifying pressure from the Daluo Golden Pool.

Inside the Sovereign Celestial Body, Mu Chen sat quietly. His body was trembling gently, and the surface of his body was covered by a thin scab. At the depth of 20,000 feet in the Daluo Golden Pool, the pressure was able to seep through the Sovereign Celestial Body and eventually act on his own body.

If he did not have those notable achievements in his physical body, he would probably have been crushed into pieces by the pressure penetrating through the Sovereign Celestial Body.

Even so, the intense pain that filled his body still caused him to tremble uncontrollably. Nevertheless, he eventually managed to just grit his teeth and tolerate the pain.

Puff.

Below the scab, Mu Chen seemed to have taken in a soft breath, and then his hands slowly formed a seal.

Boom!

When he finished forming the seal, an endless amount of light suddenly burst out from the Great Solar Undying Body. The flames of brightness spread and absorbed all the magical and vast power of the Golden Pool, and were eventually devoured by the Great Solar Undying Body.

Mu Chen had activated the Great Solar Undying Body to its extreme. Therefore, at the bottom of the Daluo Golden Pool, golden energy whizzed over steadily and continuously gushed into the gigantic figure.

The concentration of the golden energy was undoubtedly a hundred times greater than before!

Under the injection of such an astonishing amount of energy, the surface of Mu Chen's huge Great Solar Undying Body was also rapidly filled with golden light. The eight golden snakes swam around swiftly and greedily consumed the waves of golden energy that were gushing over.

The eight golden snakes were growing bigger at a noticeable pace.

A burning sensation filled every corner of the Sovereign Celestial Body, and Mu Chen felt as if he were on a stove. However, as the burning sensation became stronger, he could feel that the terrifying external pressure was gradually weakening. Obviously, the Sovereign Celestial Body was slowly becoming stronger as it absorbed the power of the Golden Pool. Therefore, the resistance against the pressure was also progressively increasing.

Time passed slowly at the bottom of the Golden Pool.

As time passed, the golden light enveloping the Great Solar Undying Body also grew more intense. From afar, it seemed as though the surface of the Sovereign Celestial Body was covered with a gold film.

Inside the Sovereign Celestial Body, Mu Chen's closed eyes opened suddenly, and he stared at the outside of the Sovereign Celestial Body. On its gigantic body, a huge golden snake quickly swam past. As the golden snake wriggled, golden claws suddenly emerged below its body. Golden lumps also rose slowly on the snake's head.

This signaled that the snake was evolving.

Seeing the scene, some thoughts seemed to flash across Mu Chen's eyes. He looked at the other seven golden snakes and discovered that they were evolving slowly as well. As they evolved, Mu Chen could feel that a magical power seemed to be subtly gushing out from their bodies.

The fluctuation caused the Great Solar Undying Body to tremble slightly, as if it could no longer wait.

This Daluo Golden Body actually needs me to turn the snakes into dragons...

Mu Chen's eyes sparkled. It seemed that in order to cultivate the Daluo Golden Body, he had to make the eight golden snakes evolve into dragons. However, this clearly required a very large power from the Golden Pool, and one could only get the sufficient amount of power at the very deepest parts of the pool.

I will let you absorb as much as you want!

Mu Chen grinned. As he changed his seals, a strong attractive force gushed out from the Great Solar Undying Body again and devoured all the power of the Golden Pool, which was continuously rushing over.

As the Sovereign Celestial Body absorbed the power of the Golden Pool at full force, the eight golden snakes also swallowed the power greedily, and the rate of evolution increased once more.

Time passed in the depths of the Golden Pool. In the blink of an eye, three days had passed.

In the Sovereign Celestial Body, when Mu Chen opened his eyes again, he could hear a sudden howl spreading. Raising his head, he noticed that on the surface of the Sovereign Celestial Body, the eight giant golden snakes were struggling continuously. As they struggled, golden scales constantly fell off of their bodies. They wriggled and dragon claws started to slowly emerge.

When dragon horns also grew on the heads of the golden snakes, the howls from the eight golden snakes suddenly became low and actually turned into real dragon howls. The mighty dragon howls spread and caused golden waves to form at the depths of the Golden Pool.

I did it!

Mu Chen watched the scene in surprise. He had finally fed the eight golden snakes sufficiently.

Roar!

However, just as the eight golden snakes successfully evolved into golden dragons, they did not merge with the Sovereign Celestial Body directly. Instead, they wound around the Great Solar Undying Body and gave out a low roar towards the bottom of the Golden Pool.

The roar seemed to be pressing.

The eight golden dragons opened their huge mouths. A violent gust of wind whizzed out and swept towards the deepest part of the Daluo Golden Pool like a tornado. The deepest part was filled with golden light and looked like particles of endless silt.

The silt was golden in color and looked like molten gold, dazzling and eye-catching.

Splash.

The golden silt was swept off bit by bit and continuously flew towards the Sovereign Celestial Body.

Sizzle!

As the golden silt covered and stuck onto the Sovereign Celestial Body, white mist burst out immediately. The golden silt actually had an extremely high temperature.

At this instant, Mu Chen's expression turned worrisome.

That was because he realized that as the golden silt adhered to the Great Solar Undying Body, it actually started to slowly melt. The seemingly harmless golden silt was in fact the most terrifying object in the Daluo Golden Pool.

Damn it!

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and cursed. The golden dragons had caused him a lot of trouble. But from the look of it, this seemed to be the last step in the cultivation of the Daluo Golden Body.

Thus, regardless of how shocked Mu Chen was, he had to persist no matter what.

Splash.

The golden dragons drew so much golden silt over that it seemed to be blotting out the sky and the earth. Eventually, it poured down like a rainstorm. Covered in the silt rainstorm, the Great Solar Undying Body was also soon engulfed by it along with the eight golden dragons.

Sizzle.

The white mist still continued to rise. Mu Chen, who was sitting cross-legged inside the Sovereign Celestial Body, also started to tremble wildly. His entire body was red and blood continuously seeped out from his pores. However, he gritted his teeth hard and did not make any sound at all.

The terrifying temperature was not only burning the Sovereign Celestial Body but was also transmitted onto his body. He felt as if he had been thrown into a pool of underground magma and would

be burned into ashes at any moment.

Mu Chen knelt down with his hands supporting himself in front. Sweat was mixed with blood and rolled down from his body. As he gritted his teeth firmly, there was similarly blood seeping out from the crevices between his teeth. His black eyes were filled with streaks of blood and looked particularly ferocious.

Sizzle.

The golden silt continuously flew over and almost covered the Sovereign Celestial Body completely in the end. Under the burn from the golden silt, the Great Solar Undying Body was also gradually shrinking.

It was as if the Celestial Body was being melted.

Sharp pain crazily charged into Mu Chen's mind. Soon, he could no long tolerate it even with his strong perseverance. As blood flew out from his body, his consciousness began to slowly weaken.

He could feel that under the covering of the golden silt, the eight golden dragons were gradually being merged into the Great Solar Undying Body. As long as he could persist until the end, he would be able to cultivate the Daluo Golden Body successfully.

Hence, at this moment, he must persist!

Splash.

While Mu Chen was trying to hold on at the bottom of the Golden Pool, the golden silt was still being swept away continuously. Layers of silt lifted...

As the layers of golden silt were removed, at some point, Mu Chen seemed to feel something. Enduring the sharp pain, he strained to open his eyes and look below.

Then, his eyes narrowed immediately and were filled with horror.

In the deepest part of the Daluo Golden Pool, the golden silt was

dancing around, slowly revealing a golden stone platform. The golden platform was only about ten feet long. At the moment, there seemed to be a tiny figure lying calmly on the golden platform.

There is actually a person at the bottom of the Daluo Golden Pool?

The abrupt discovery caused Mu Chen to feel uncontrollably shocked. For a moment, he could even endure the intense pain from his body. He looked over hurriedly and realized that the figure on the golden stone platform seemed to be a naked girl. The girl looked like she was 11 or 12 and had black hair down to her knees. Even though her appearance could not be seen clearly, her petite look was extremely adorable.

Who is she? Why is she here?

However, at the moment, Mu Chen did not feel that she was cute at all, because it was glaringly obvious that the weird little girl was not simple. Mu Chen got an incredibly dangerous feeling from her.

Just as Mu Chen was somewhat shocked by the strange little girl who had appeared at the bottom of the Daluo Golden Pool, the little girl's long eyelashes suddenly moved slightly. Then, to Mu Chen's astonishment, she slowly opened her eyes.

She had a pair of golden pupils. However, the apathy within them caused Mu Chen to feel so frightened, it was as if his head had exploded.

Chapter 697: Mandela

Deep within the Daluo Golden Pool, when the strange girl with golden eyes opened her eyes, a chill struck Mu Chen. Without hesitation, he bore the pain within and activated The Great Solar Undying Body. He wanted to leave the place quickly.

Just as he was about to move, the girl with golden eyes looked indifferently at him. She stood up and stepped forth.

Swoosh.

Mu Chen suddenly froze. He looked shocked and dared not move. The little girl had appeared before him. She then passed through the defense of the Sovereign Celestial Body and came before Mu Chen's actual body.

Mu Chen broke out in a cold sweat. He could sense death knocking at his door from the girl's eyes. He believed that the mysterious little girl could easily take his life. There were no feelings in her eyes.

Mu Chen lifted up his head, with much difficulty, and managed to take a good look at the girl. She was fair and expressionless. She looked delicate and had a small build, with long black hair down to her knees.

If Mu Chen had met such a cute girl any other day, he would have been attracted to her. However, he could only feel chilled at this moment. He dared not look at her naked body.

The little girl quietly watched Mu Chen. Her long eyelashes moved, and she stretched out her small hand toward Mu Chen's head.

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen turned pale. He wanted to back away, but the surrounding space had frozen. His connection with The Great Solar Undying Body had been cut off. This girl was extremely powerful.

Mu Chen's body froze, and he could only watch the little girl placing her hand on his forehead. She said softly, "You are feeling pain..."

Red lights suddenly surged in her hand. The red lights then covered Mu Chen's body, causing him to shiver. He then felt the pain in his body going away. Within a few split seconds, the pain in his body was completely gone.

Mu Chen was shocked, and lifted up his head. He saw that the red lights had retracted from between his eyebrows, back to the little girl's hand.

As the red lights retracted to the girl's hand, her hand shook. Her expressionless face moved slightly, and she seemed to be in pain.

When Mu Chen saw this, he could not believe his eyes. The little girl was able to take away the pain from a person's body! However, when she did it, her body would...

That was to say, she had borne the excruciating pain that Mu Chen had experienced earlier. However, she had only reacted slightly, even while bearing such pain.

Is this little girl a strange creature?

After the little girl had drawn away the pain from Mu Chen's body, she no longer bothered herself with him. Instead, she lifted up her face and scrutinized The Great Solar Undying Body. The golden lights in her eyes seemed to be checking on the Sovereign Celestial Body.

After scrutinizing it for a while, her golden eyes turned grave, and she shivered. She bit her lips, then muttered in a shaky voice, "Is this...The Great Solar Undying Body?"

She spoke softly, but Mu Chen had heard her. He was dumbfounded, as he stared at the mysterious little girl. After so many years, this was the first time that someone had recognized The Great Solar Undying Body...

"You...you know about The Great Solar Undying Body?" Mu Chen asked.

The little girl paid no attention to him, but knit her brows together. She suddenly turned to look at Mu Chen, before laying her hand on Mu Chen's chest.

Mu Chen then became nervous, as he could feel the Sovereign Sea in his body surging. He suddenly sensed the Immortal Page shaking continuously. It seemed as though an invisible force was trying to grab it away.

When Mu Chen realized this, he was enraged. This little girl was too outrageous.

The Immortal Page was Mu Chen's deepest secret. This was the clue to The Primordial Immortal Body. He would never let anyone snatch it away.

Mu Chen stomped his feet, and The Great Solar Undying Body shone forth numerous colorful rays. The power that had restrained Mu Chen had been released, and he moved back vigorously.

Swoosh!

However, as he dashed out, the rays of light gathered before him. The little girl followed closely behind, with her hand placed on Mu Chen's chest.

Mu Chen's eyes were glittering fiercely. He gritted his teeth and changed the seal. The Immortal Page in his Sovereign Sea exuded a mysterious purple light.

The purple light runes from the Immortal Page spread out, before dashing out of the Sovereign Sea to the top of Mu Chen's head. They then turned into a huge purple mandala flower.

Then, the mandala flower started to bloom. Under the purple light, it was like a vine, as it speedily twined itself around the little

girl.

The little girl stopped moving, and Mu Chen used the chance to escape. He was cautious and filled with fear.

The little girl did not struggle. She lifted up her face to look at the mandala flower. Her expressionless face had now turned into a sweet smile. In fact, she looked as though she had seen something that she adored.

As the purple light from the mandala flower shone on the little girl, it entered into her body. Her face livened up, and she no longer looked indifferent.

Mu Chen was shocked when he saw this. He looked at The Great Solar Undying Body, realizing that the golden silt that had been surrounding the Sovereign Celestial Body had fallen off in pieces. The slits fell off at an increasing speed, shooting forth dazzling golden lights.

Mu Chen stared hard at The Great Solar Undying Body. He wanted to find out if he had successfully cultivated the Daluo Golden Body.

The golden silt had fallen off completely, and dazzling golden lights had swirled out. The Great Solar Undying Body sat cross-legged within the golden lights. Its huge body was dazzling, as though it was made of a gold that could not be destroyed.

There were pictures of eight golden dragons on its body. They seemed to be embedded in the Sovereign Celestial Body, and they looked real. They were majestic and seemed to be protecting the Sovereign Celestial Body.

The Great Solar Undying Body sat at the bottom of the Daluo Golden Pool, like a golden Buddha. It looked invincible, as though no other power could penetrate its Sovereign Celestial Body.

After The Great Solar Undying Body possessed the Daluo Golden Body, it had become more valiant. Mu Chen reckoned that, even if

it had been attacked by a Grade Three Sovereign, it would be able to withstand the blow.

He was pleased as he watched The Great Solar Undying Body. It had indeed been worth his pain and effort in cultivating the Daluo Golden Body.

After a while, he recollected himself, as there was a terrifying little girl before his eyes...

Mu Chen turned to look at the little girl, who was under the purple light of the mandala flower. He looked fearful, for he knew that, even though he had successfully cultivated the Daluo Golden Body, it was nothing in the eyes of the powerful little girl.

Mu Chen's eyes glittered, and he changed the seal. The mandala flower shot backward. It then turned into purple light and entered into his body.

The purple light that was covering the little girl had dissipated. The little girl raised her brows and looked angrily at Mu Chen. Her golden eyes were surging with golden lights.

"This thing belongs to me...I need to make a move." Mu Chen smiled wryly.

The little girl knit her brows and thought for a while, her head tilted. She stepped forth and pounced toward Mu Chen. When Mu Chen saw this, he reflexively caught her in his arms.

Mu Chen went blank, as he touched the little girl's body. It was smooth and tender. When he recollected himself, he felt like throwing her away, for he knew that this little girl was not as cute as she looked...

However, he did not do it. He looked down at her and saw that she was lying still in his arms, her face stuck to his chest. Mu Chen could feel purple lights exuding from the Immortal Page, entering into the little girl's body.

Her exquisite porcelain doll-liked face was expressionless. Mu

Chen felt less fearful of her, now that she had shut her eyes. This little girl seemed to adore the Immortal Page in his body.

Mu Chen smiled wryly, as he took out a black top to cover her naked body. After hesitating for a while, he cautiously asked, "Who are you? What is your name?"

The little girl had her eyes shut, and after some time, she said in a low voice, "Mandela."

Chapter 698: The Golden Pool was Sealed

"Mandela?"

When Mu Chen heard this strange name, he was stunned. He got a close look at the girl, but she continued to shut her eyes and could not be bothered with him. Mu Chen could only smile wryly.

He did not know anything about the little girl, and he was curious about her. She was extremely powerful and had surpassed the three kings of Daluo Territory.

She seemed familiar with the Immortal Page. Otherwise, she would not have known that Mu Chen had cultivated the Great Solar Undying Body. This was a rare Sovereign Celestial Body which was not recorded in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Body rankings.

Mu Chen was wary and fearful of her. However, it seemed like she had no intention of leaving and wanted to stick with him. Mu Chen dared not oppose her, for he was afraid that she might kill him if she was enraged.

He would not want to die in that manner.

Moreover, she had stayed because of the Immortal Page.

Sigh...

Mu Chen carried Mandela and sighed helplessly. He formed a seal, and the Great Solar Undying Body shot up, splitting the thick golden lake water apart.

Since Mu Chen had successfully cultivated the Daluo Golden Body, he found it pointless to stay. He could also feel that the Daluo Golden Pool would be sealed up soon.

...

Outside the Golden Pool.

The temperature had been high for the past few days. It came

from the golden talisman that had been shining like a scorching sun.

Throughout the years that the Daluo Golden Pool had been open, this was the first time that the rays were so strong.

Anyone would have guessed that someone was cultivating the Daluo Golden Body, and the person had been successful in doing so.

Many people were taken aback and at the same time, curious. They were dying to find out who the genius was among the four great commanders.

After all, many geniuses had failed to cultivate the Daluo Golden Body all these years.

The three kings stood quietly in the air and stared at the golden talisman. They looked increasingly shocked.

The light from the talisman had shone for four days without dimming. That was to say, the person who had gone deep down in the Golden Pool had persevered.

"This is interesting," Sleeping King said in amusement. He had been indifferent, but this had aroused his interest.

Condor King and Spiritual Pupil King were shocked as well. Their eyes were shimmering, and they were keen to find out who it was that had such a great achievement. This was the first time throughout the years that someone had successfully cultivated the Daluo Golden Body. Who is this person?

Nine Nether and the other eight Lords looked shocked as well. Lord Asura, Lord Mountain Cracker, and Lord Blood Hawk were tense. If their commanders were the ones who had made it in the Daluo Golden Pool Contest, that would make them famous.

Sleeping King squinted and said suddenly, "It is almost time. The Daluo Golden Pool is about to seal up."

Boom!

Golden lights shot up from the towering hilltop. Everyone hastily looked up and saw three huge shadows tearing the golden light apart before appearing in the sky.

All eyes were fixed on the sky.

The three huge shadows were Sovereign Celestial Bodies. Golden lights were dazzling around them, making them look invulnerable and valiant. A strong wind whizzed past them.

When the people saw the three Sovereign Celestial Bodies, they were disappointed. Although the three Sovereign Celestial Bodies were valiant, they were far from achieving the Daluo Golden Body.

Dong!

At the peak of the Golden Pool, a huge golden light beam shot up to the sky, and a huge golden figure stepped forth.

The huge shadow was as bright as gold, with a huge sun hanging behind his head. Eight dragon symbols seemed to be moving on its body, and cries of a dragon could indistinctly be heard.

As the golden light burst forth, an unknown oppression spread out and outshone the three Sovereign Celestial Bodies.

Everyone looked at it and gasped in shock.

"Eight dragon symbols... It is indeed the Daluo Golden Body..."

As the light died down and the Sovereign Celestial Bodies disappeared, the people saw the actual bodies of Xu Qing, Zhou Yue, and Wu Tian.

The three of them were looking at the golden Sovereign Celestial Body as well. Xu Qing and Zhou Yue looked confused, whereas Wu Tian found it unbelievable. He was filled with envy and unhappiness.

No one had expected Mu Chen to have successfully cultivated the Daluo Golden Body!

They had gone deep into the Daluo Golden Pool and knew how horrifying the pressure was. It was not within their ability to go down beyond 2,000 feet to absorb the power of the Golden Pool.

However, Mu Chen had managed to do it, and he only had the strength of a Grade One Sovereign!

Xu Qing and Zhou Yue looked at Mu Chen and turned grave. They suddenly became fearful of him. This mild-looking youth seemed to have kept many things within himself.

Wu Tian looked grim, and a murderous intent flashed in his eyes. His desire to kill Mu Chen grew stronger as Mu Chen became more powerful.

"It is Mu Chen!"

Tang Bing and Tang Rou were elated. Many people from the Nine Nether Troop were excited as well. They started to look at Mu Chen with admiration. After all these years, Mu Chen was the only commander who had managed to cultivate the Daluo Golden Body in the Daluo Golden Pool.

Nine Nether had looked indifferent but now smiled. Mu Chen's achievement had made Nine Nether Palace famous. No one in the Daluo Territory would ever dare to look down on Nine Nether Palace again.

The eight Lords were shocked with the outcome. Most of them shook their heads in disbelief.

Lord Blood Hawk was the only one who sat on the stone platform looking grimly at the bright golden body.

Sleeping King laughed and said, "Hahaha, it is truly him."

Condor King looked pleased and said, "It seems like Nine Nether has brought back a guy with great potential." Nine Nether had good foresight. Mu Chen was way better than Cao Feng in terms of his personality and potential.

Spiritual Pupil King smiled and looked unfathomable.

The Sovereign Celestial Body that seemed to be made of gold gradually disappeared, and Mu Chen appeared before the people.

There was an uproar. Although they knew that it was Mu Chen when they saw the Sovereign Celestial Body, now that it had been confirmed, they could not help feeling emotional.

No one had expected such an outcome.

This was the first time in Daluo Territory's history that a Grade One Sovereign had successfully cultivated the Daluo Golden Body. Mu Chen was the only one.

Mu Chen felt at a loss in the sky. He was certain that the little girl, Mandela, was in his arms earlier, but there was no one in his arms now...

"She must have hidden herself."

Mu Chen smiled wryly. This little girl was extremely powerful. If she had wanted to hide herself, even the three kings would not have found her. Mu Chen could not tell if it was a misfortune to have met her.

"Hahaha, congratulations, Mu Chen. You are the first one at Grade One Sovereign to cultivate the Daluo Golden Body. You have broken the record." As Mu Chen was feeling lost, he heard the Condor King laughing loudly.

"Thank you, masters."

Mu Chen looked at the three kings and cupped his fist.

"You are capable." Sleeping King, who was reserved, smiled. He suddenly frowned and looked baffled. After a while, he shook his head and ignored the illusion that he had.

Condor King looked at the crowd and said, "The Daluo Golden Pool Contest ends here." He suddenly lowered his voice and said, "The Great Hunting Battle is around the corner. I hope everyone

will hone their skills."

At the mention of the Great Hunting Battle, the noise suddenly died down, and there was a great silence. Indistinctly, a cold, bloody chill filled the air.

"Yes!" the nine Lords replied in a deep voice.

When the three kings heard their response, they did not say another word. They waved their sleeves, and the golden light on the peak of the Golden Pool disappeared. The current had been blocked, and the peak of the Golden Pool sealed up.

Mu Chen landed toward the direction of Nine Nether Palace. Everyone gathered together with joy.

"Let's go."

Nine Nether smiled at Mu Chen and led the people out. She had no intention of staying.

As they were walking down the stone platform, they came face to face with Lord Blood Hawk, who was leading his group of mighty men out. As Nine Nether brushed past Lord Blood Hawk, the killing intent in their eyes was so immense that it sent a cold chill down everyone's spines.

Lord Blood Hawk stopped beside Mu Chen and looked at him with his red eyes. He said flatly, "There are too many geniuses in this world. Be careful. Don't die too early..."

Mu Chen squinted and smiled coldly.

Chapter 699: The Great Hunting Battle

In Nine Nether Palace.

When the Daluo Golden Pool Contest had ended, Nine Nether Palace was filled with joy. Everyone was excited. For the past few years, when Nine Nether went missing, Nine Nether Palace's position in Daluo Territory had been on the decline. Other sects had been suppressing them, but they could only swallow the insult.

Fortunately, they had not waited in vain, as Nine Nether had returned strong. The newly appointed commander had displayed great strength and was driven. He had not only defeated Cao Feng and got a place in the Golden Pool Contest, he had successfully cultivated the Daluo Golden Body, which no one had done before.

All the masters in the Daluo Territory were shocked. No one in the Daluo Territory would ever dare look down on Nine Nether Palace from now on.

...

Nine Nether leaned against a pillar in the main hall, smiling gently as she looked at Nine Nether Palace, which was a place now filled with joy.

"It is all thanks to you," Nine Nether tilted her head and said to Mu Chen with a smile.

Although Nine Nether's return had brought back some life to Nine Nether Palace, she could not interfere in the matters, due to the rules of the Daluo Territory. Mu Chen's achievement had brought back vitality to Nine Nether Palace and increased their confidence.

"It is my honor to serve the princess," Mu Chen said jokingly.

Nine Nether pouted her lips and looked extremely gentle. Her beautiful eyes seemed to be filled with halos, making her look

captivating.

"You are in the limelight now, so you have to be careful. Lord Blood Hawk is narrow-minded, and he will seek revenge for the smallest grievance. I am not afraid of him, but I am worried that he might use covert means," Nine Nether squinted her eyes and said.

Mu Chen nodded. He then asked, "What is the Great Hunting Battle that the Condor King was talking about?"

At the mention of the Great Hunting Battle, Nine Nether looked grave and became serious. After a while, she said, "This is a cruel battle that involves all the forces of the North Territory in the Tianluo Continent."

Mu Chen was a bit shocked. He knew that the Tianluo Continent made up of four territories in the north, south, east and west. The Daluo Territory was located in the North Territory.

North Territory consisted of many forces, be it great or small. There were many strong forces like it around, and it was flooded with top powers. The Great Hunting Battle must be a great event, since it involved all these forces. Hence, the scale must be very big.

"After every Hunting Battle, many forces will disappear. Even those top powers will be seriously injured. For thousands of years, many top powers have been defeated in the Hunting Battle. They were then encroached by the strong groups, only to become history themselves," Nine Nether said softly.

Mu Chen's face changed, as he asked, "Why?"

He was wondering why there was such a horrifying and cruel battle.

"This is all over territory, resources, and ambition," Nine Nether said flatly. "For thousands of years, there were many outstanding people in the North Territory, but no one has successfully become the North Territory Overlord. However, this has been the

ambition of everyone. The Great Hunting Battle came about because of this."

"During the previous Great Hunting Battle, there were 10 top forces. After it ended, four top forces had been defeated and annexed by the remaining six forces."

Mu Chen was stunned. Four top forces had been defeated...He could feel the cruelty and smelled the blood simply from hearing these few words. Many Sovereign Masters must have been killed in this battle.

Although Mu Chen did not know how powerful the four top forces were, judging from the power of the Daluo Territory, they must have been very powerful. Otherwise, they would not have been known as the top forces.

If they had been placed in the Northern Heavens Continent, they would have ruled over it. However, in the North Territory of the Tianluo Continent, they were in danger of being destroyed. Thus, the competition in the North Territory must have been extremely brutal.

"The forces in North Territory will change after every Great Hunting Battle. The winner will become more powerful, whereas the loser will lose everything. No forces can be independent, according to the rules of the North Territory. Unless...the North Territory Overlord appears."

Mu Chen slowly let out the chilled air within him. This was the first time he felt the cruelty in The Great Thousand World, based on what Nine Nether had said. This was not the Northern Spiritual Academy. One could clearly see the concept of survival of the fittest being applied in this place, where even such a top force like the Daluo Territory faced many threats. If there was any slight decline in its power, many people would be eyeing it, and they would not hesitate to encroach upon it.

The Great Hunting Battle was a cruel elimination, using the

natural selection method. Moreover, the Hunting Battle would continue till the Overlord appeared in this Continent.

"To survive in the Tianluo Continent, one needs to have the backing of one of the top forces. If not, he will be easily destroyed," Nine Nether said.

Mu Chen nodded his head. In such a place, where there are no rules and regulations, one would have great difficulty in progressing, unless he had someone to back him up. Mu Chen was fortunate to have the backing of the Daluo Territory. As long as the Daluo Territory remained, he would have it as a backing. He would have to pray hard that the Daluo Territory would not be destroyed in the Great Hunting Battle...

"You don't have to worry about this. We still have some time before the Great Hunting Battle starts. Anyway, there is no point worrying over such things," Nine Nether said with a smile.

Mu Chen smiled wryly. This level of cross swords was beyond his current ability. He could only look up to it. To be in power, one has to be in the top level, like the mysterious Dominator of the Daluo Territory.

"Now, we just have to focus on what is before us." Nine Nether smiled, but her eyes looked cold. "Lord Blood Hawk has lost, and he will not leave the matter at that. Nine Nether Palace should also start to take back what belongs to us. We will participate in the Great Hunting Battle, so we must increase our strength. If not, we will be taken over by the others."

"I also wish to see the capability of Blood Hawk Palace," Mu Chen nodded and said. After Nine Nether left, the territory that had belonged to Nine Nether Palace had been snatched over by the Blood Hawk Palace. This had made them the laughing stock of the Daluo Territory. It was a shame for a Lord not to be able to protect his own territory.

However, Mu Chen would make sure that no one would laugh at

them anymore. He would get back all the things that used to belong to Nine Nether Palace!

Nine Nether nodded lightly and as she was about to continue talking, she suddenly focused her attention behind Mu Chen, as she asked, "Who is she?"

Mu Chen was shocked when he heard it, and slowly turned around. A little girl in black was sitting quietly on the railing, gently shaking her legs. She looked calmly at Mu Chen with her big golden eyes.

It was Mandela, whom Mu Chen had met at the Daluo Golden Pool. However, she had disappeared after that, and now, re-appeared out of nowhere...

Nine Nether looked at Mu Chen's ghastly face. She squinted her eyes and realized that something was amiss. The little girl had appeared out of nowhere, and even Nine Nether had not realized it.

The spiritual energy in Nine Nether's body surged, and a purple flame appeared in her hand. Mandela looked flatly at Nine Nether.

Mu Chen hastily stood before Nine Nether and deterred her. He knew that Mandela was extremely powerful and that Nine Nether was no match for her.

"She is Mandela," Mu Chen said.

"Do you know her?" Nine Nether was a little taken aback and asked.

After hesitating for a while, Mu Chen told Nine Nether about Mandela. Nine Nether widened her eyes and looked at Mandela. She was shocked that Mandela had slept in the Daluo Golden Pool for so many years, and especially that the three kings and Dominator did not know of her existence.

Is she a strange creature?

Nine Nether raised her eyebrows, wary and fearful of the little girl. She was thinking about whether she should tell the Condor King about this.

"Don't tell anyone about me. Because then, even the three fellas will not be able to protect you." As she was having this thought, Mandela spoke. Her voice was clear and soft, but it still made one nervous.

Nine Nether turned pale and stared at Mandela. She asked, "Who are you?"

Mandela stood on the railing. Her long black hair flew in the wind, as she lifted up her face and said, "Don't worry. If I wanted to do anything to you, you will not be able to stop me."

Mu Chen shrugged helplessly. She was right. Given her strength, even if she had wanted to kill them, no one would be able to stop her.

Nine Nether looked at Mandela and asked, "Why are you following Mu Chen?"

Mandela tilted her head and looked at Mu Chen. She stamped her feet and pounced toward him. When Mu Chen saw it, he smiled wryly and extended his arms to catch hold of her.

Mandela laid comfortably in Mu Chen's arms, pressing her face against his chest. She shut her intimidating golden eyes and her voice became soft.

"I want him to carry me to sleep," Mandela pouted her lips and said, before closing her eyes. When Nine Nether heard this, she could not help raising her brows.

Chapter 700: Use the Fists

Nine Nether left. However, before she left, she gave Mu Chen a weird look that caused him to twitch. She looked as though she were looking at a little girl who had been bullied...

He could not explain to her what Mandela had said and could only sigh. He then carried Mandela to his room.

Mu Chen laid her on the bed and asked after a while, "Have you come to me because of the Immortal Page?"

Mandela opened her eyes slightly and looked lazily at Mu Chen and said, "Are you thinking that I am doing this because of you?"

"Do you know about the Immortal Divine Law?" Mu Chen asked, with his eyes shimmering.

Mandela squinted like a cat, but she did not say a word. Mu Chen knew the answer and his heart pounded quickly.

She knew about the Immortal Divine Law, so she must have known about the Primordial Immortal Body!

Who is this little girl, and where is she from?

"It is better not to ask. It will not do you any good." As Mu Chen was about to ask, Mandela turned aside. Although she sounded soft, she also sounded authoritative.

Mu Chen smiled and asked, "Can you tell me, what benefit do you get from the Immortal Page in my body?"

Mandela was silent for a while before saying, "The Immortal Page contains the divine runes of Ancient Mandala Flower. This is a divine flower that has the power to seal everything. I need it to suppress the curse in my body."

"Curse?" Mu Chen was shocked.

"It is a curse that makes one feel like a living hell." Mandela sounded extraordinarily calm and said, "It continually causes one

to be in excruciating pain that even a Grade Nine Sovereign could not take."

Mu Chen was stunned. Even a Grade Nine Sovereign would not be able to take the pain?

"Would you like to try?" Mandela looked at Mu Chen and smiled. She extended her hand, and red light shot out like lightning onto Mu Chen's body.

Mu Chen froze and suddenly shook violently. His eyes turned red, and his face twitched. He let out a groan.

Mu Chen felt excruciating pain in every part of his body.

It made him lose his mind. However, the pain came quickly and went quickly as well. In a split second, the pain was gone.

Mu Chen sat on a chair and broke out in a cold sweat. He looked angrily at Mandela and said, "What have you done?"

Mandela curled up her lips and said, "It is just a short while and you can't take it? I have been bearing that pain all this time."

Mu Chen was stunned. He looked at Mandela, who was sitting on the bed, cuddling her knees. He suddenly felt sorry for her. The pain that he had experienced was only for a split second, but Mandela had been bearing it all the while. Under the torment, she was still able to remain calm. Her ability to endure could be due to her strength, but it also showed her amazing willpower.

"Can the divine runes of the mandala flower in the Immortal Page help you to remove the curse?" Mu Chen asked.

"Remove? It is not possible." Mandala laughed mockingly and said, "It can only suppress it. Only the real Ancient Mandala Flower can remove the curse."

Mu Chen was silent. He had not heard of the Ancient Mandala Flower. It must be more uncommon than the three items that he needed to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body.

"Don't worry, I will not snatch away your Immortal Page. It has gradually merged with you. If I snatch it away from you, the divine runes might be destroyed," Mandela said as she looked at Mu Chen. She thought that Mu Chen was worried she would snatch the Immortal Page away from him.

Mu Chen heaved a sigh of relief. He looked at Mandela and asked, "Am I right to say that your name is not Mandela?"

Mandela did not deny it. "It is just a name."

"One more thing..." Mu Chen sized Mandela up and said, "Is this how you actually look? I do not believe that a little girl can be so powerful."

The little girl must be a monster. As Mu Chen thought of himself carrying a monster, he shivered. He found it hard to accept.

When Mandela saw his look, she snorted and said, "Don't use the age of a human being to guess the age of others. In terms of age, the Nine Netherworld Bird is much older than you."

"Are you not a human being?" Mu Chen asked in shock.

Mandela glanced at Mu Chen and did not reply. She tucked herself into bed and said lazily, "You can continue to cultivate. As long as I am near you, I can tap on the divine runes of the Ancient Mandala Flower to suppress the curse."

"How does it benefit me?" Mu Chen asked with smile.

Mandela stuck her little head out of the blanket. She looked weirdly at Mu Chen and said, "I did not kill you. Is this not good enough for you?"

Mu Chen twitched his mouth. He gritted his teeth and said, "You win!"

Mu Chen sat cross-legged beside the bed and did not bother about her. He closed his eyes and made a seal. He gradually went into the mode of cultivation.

Mandela got out of the blanket and looked at Mu Chen. Lights flashed across her big golden eyes and she muttered, "The Great Solar Undying Body has re-appeared..."

...

In the next few days, Nine Nether allowed Mu Chen to rest after the battle at Daluo Golden Pool. While he was resting, Nine Nether Palace was bustling with activity.

After the battle at Daluo Golden Pool, Mu Chen had helped Nine Nether Palace earn back some dignity. Nine Nether wanted to use the opportunity to restore the reputation of Nine Nether Palace. Among the nine Lords, Nine Nether Palace had the weakest foundation. To increase its strength, they had to at the least get back the territories that had once belonged to Nine Nether Palace.

Every year, these territories would hand over large amounts of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, which Nine Nether Palace was short of. This was especially the case after Mu Chen had given his promise to the Nine Nether Troop.

Without sufficient Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, it would be difficult for Nine Nether Palace to survive, let alone grow. Now, the sects in the entire Daluo Territory were watching Nine Nether Palace. They were waiting to see if Nine Nether Palace, which had created such great momentum, would become a laughing stock.

On the same day, Nine Nether sent men to those cities that had once belonged to Nine Nether Palace. The message was simple: Submit themselves to Nine Nether Palace once again.

Many people were shocked with what Nine Nether was doing, and some were laughing at her. Nine Nether, after all, is a woman. She is incompetent in handling things. She thinks that the dukes who have submitted to Blood Hawk Palace will change their minds simply at her words?

The outcome was as expected. More than 50 cities had been

notified, but only a handful of dukes who had been exploited by Blood Hawk Palace had agreed to submit to Nine Nether Palace. The rest of the dukes did not reply. A few dukes who were on close terms with Blood Hawk Palace had not only refused to submit to Nine Nether Palace, they even chased the messengers out. They were extremely haughty since they had the backing of Blood Hawk Palace.

They had no regard for Nine Nether Palace as its power was weak in Daluo Territory.

The top guy in Nine Nether Palace seemed to be in a sorry state. Many people in Daluo Territory shook their heads. Those in Blood Hawk Palace mocked Nine Nether Palace, and vented their anger over the suppression from Mu Chen at Daluo Golden Pool.

As the entire Daluo Territory was watching what Nine Nether Palace was doing, it was peaceful within the palace.

In the main hall of Nine Nether Palace.

The black-armored Nine Nether Troop stood upright, and the atmosphere was filled with fighting spirit that made one shudder.

Nine Nether stood in front of the main hall with her black armor on. She looked at the scrolls in her hands with the recorded responses of the cities.

She looked calm and was not angry at all. She smiled and lifted her head to look at Mu Chen, who was below. With a flick of her fingers, the scroll landed in Mu Chen's hand.

"Here is the list. The ball is now in your court."

Mu Chen held the scroll and smiled. He turned around and looked at the army in black and said flatly, "You must have heard the news in Daluo Territory for the past few days. When some people serve a new master, they forget about the respect that they ought to have for the old. What shall we do with such people?"

"Kill them!" everyone shouted out in unison. The Nine Nether

Troop was burning with killing intent. After bearing suppression for so many years, they could no longer take it lying down.

"Others are thinking that our reasoning is all talk..."

Mu Chen looked coldly around, and his body slowly rose up. In the next instant, a majestic spiritual energy swirled out like a windstorm. "Today, we shall let them know that we use our fists to reason!

"Let's go!" Mu Chen shouted. He turned into a streamer and shot out. When Tang Bing saw it, she waved her hand, and the Nine Nether Troop flew up like dark clouds.

The ominous aura that shot up to the sky caused the sects in all of Daluotian to shiver. Nine Nether Palace was about to start using the harsh way...

Table of Contents

- The Great Ruler
  - Synopsis
  - Acknowledgement
  - Chapter 601 - The Best 3
  - Chapter 602 - The Finals
  - Chapter 603 - Battle of the Best 8
  - Chapter 604 - Fighting Liu Qingyun
  - Chapter 605 - Divine Wind Image
  - Chapter 606 - Battle of the Captains
  - Chapter 607 - Black Pagoda Refines Spiritual Image
  - Chapter 608 - Untitled
  - Chapter 609 - Emergence of the Best 3
  - Chapter 610 – Demonic Blood Beast VS Divine War Ape
  - Chapter 611 – The Mirror of Judgement
  - Chapter 612 – Sea of Judgement
  - Chapter 613 – Miserable Loss
  - Chapter 614 – Super Vortex
  - Chapter 615 – Best 4
  - Chapter 616 – Battle of the Best 4
  - Chapter 617 – Luo Li battles Xue Tianhe
  - Chapter 618 – Wen Qingxuan’s Trump Card
  - Chapter 619: Luo Shen Sword’s True Form
  - Chapter 620: Unforeseen Circumstances
  - Chapter 621: Silver Hair Darkened to Black
  - Chapter 622: The Spirit of the Luo River
  - Chapter 623: The True Ace Cards
  - Chapter 624: Sovereign Sea
  - Chapter 625: Mu Chen Appears
  - Chapter 626: Mu Chen’s Sovereign Sea
  - Chapter 627: The Blow of a Sovereign
  - Chapter 628: Ji Xuan’s trump Card
  - Chapter 629: Re-appearance of Nine Nether
  - Chapter 630: The Power of Nine Nether
  - Chapter 631: Nine Netherworld Bird
  - Chapter 632: Mandela

Chapter 633: Eradication
Chapter 634: Champion
Chapter 635: End of the Competition
Chapter 636: Before Separation
Chapter 637: Luo Tianshen
Chapter 638: Conversation
Chapter 639: Separation
Chapter 640: Primitive Celestial Body
Chapter 641: Advancement to Sovereign
Chapter 642: Loaning of the Mirror
Chapter 643: Dispute
Chapter 644: Search for the Immortal Catalog
Chapter 645: Ancient Celestial Palace
Chapter 646: Leaving
Chapter 647: The Sagacity of Spiritual Energy
Chapter 648: An Arduous Journey
Chapter 649: Integrating the Unperishable Flame
Chapter 650: The Continent of Trade
Chapter 651: The City of Trade
Chapter 652: Lin Jing
Chapter 653: Auction
Chapter 654: Void Great Solar Fruit
Chapter 655: Head-to-head
Chapter 656: Undying Divine Leaf
Chapter 657: Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art
Chapter 658: Interception
Chapter 659: First Battle in the Great Thousand World
Chapter 660: The Battle against Liu Ming
Chapter 661: The Form of Three Lotuses
Chapter 662: Unforeseen Events
Chapter 663: The Mysterious Lady in White
Chapter 664: Queen of the Martial Border, Ling Qingzhu
Chapter 665: Liu Tiandao
Chapter 666: Daluotian
Chapter 667: Nine Nether Palace
Chapter 668: The Four Great Commanders
Chapter 669: The Various Lords
Chapter 670: Meeting of the Nine Lords
Chapter 671: Qualification

Chapter 672: Shocking Everyone
Chapter 673: Beat to Death
Chapter 674: Cultivating the Great Solar Undying Body
Chapter 675: Nine Suns as it's Form, the Envelopment of One's Form with the Great Solar Energy
Chapter 676: Successful Cultivation of the Celestial Body!
Chapter 677: Nine Nether Troop
Chapter 678: Commanding the Nine Nether Troop
Chapter 679: Willing Submission
Chapter 680: The Strange Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art
Chapter 681: Peak of the Golden Pool
Chapter 682: The Battle of Daluo Golden Pool
Chapter 683: The Battle of Reaching the Peak
Chapter 684: Battling the Four Sovereigns
Chapter 685: Brutal Thunderbolt Means
Chapter 686: Daluo Golden Platform
Chapter 687: Courageous Spirit
Chapter 688: Challenging Cao Feng
Chapter 689: The Duel Between the Old and New Commander
Chapter 690: Blood Shadow Celestial Body
Chapter 691: The Power of the Great Solar Undying Body
Chapter 692: Easy Victory
Chapter 693: To the Summit
Chapter 694: Entering the Daluo Golden Pool
Chapter 695: Twenty Thousand Feet
Chapter 696: Person at the Bottom of the Pool
Chapter 697: Mandela
Chapter 698: The Golden Pool was Sealed
Chapter 699: The Great Hunting Battle
Chapter 700: Use the Fists